

THE GROWTH OF
INDIAN CONSTITUTION
AND
ADMINISTRATION

BY

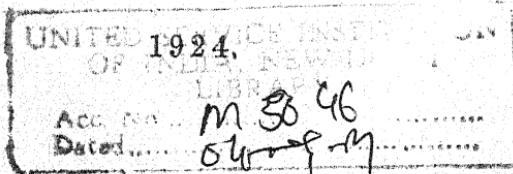
B. G. SAPRE M.A.,

LIFE MEMBER, D. E. SOCIETY, POONA,

PROFESSOR OF HISTORY, WILLINGDON COLLEGE, SANGLI,

Author of "*The Reformed Constitution of British India*"

All Rights Reserved by the Author



10,822

Printed by K. R. Gondhalekar at the Jagadhitechu Press,
507, Shanwar, Poona.
Published by B. G. Sapre, at Willingdon College, Sangli.

B. E. Sapre

P R E F A C E .

Three years ago I wrote a book named "*The Reformed Constitution of British India*" giving a full account of the main changes brought about by the Government of India Act of 1919 in the Indian Constitution. I did not dwell in that book upon the *growth* of the Indian Constitution. While I was gathering material for such a historical treatment of the subject, the course of study in Indian History and Administration prescribed for the Intermediate Examination of the Bombay University was changed, greater emphasis being laid upon Constitution and Administration than upon History. The present book is an attempt to compress within reasonable limits History, Constitution, and Administration which every College-student ought to possess. The College-student of to-day is the citizen of to-morrow and I can conceive of no greater obligation upon him than an endeavour to understand the Indian Constitution. That Constitution is undergoing a silent change almost every moment. He ought to understand how the Constitution was shaped by the British Parliament from time to time in the past, for Parliament alone can change it in the future. Parliament will no doubt be guided in that task by the use we make of the opportunities afforded by the existing Constitution. I shall feel myself amply rewarded if the present book, by contributing, in its humble way, to the education of the people brings about their speedy progress towards full Responsible Government,

PREFACE

I am aware of the many things I have omitted in this book. I can best compare it to a railway-track linking one station after another in a vast country. On either side of that track lie regions of unexplored or controversial history. I have studiously kept myself from being drawn into those regions.

Further, a writer on Indian Constitution who has had no opportunities of *direct* experience of administration, must necessarily depend upon Official Reports, and the writings of those who had such experience. I have, therefore, supported my remarks by quotations from such authorities.

I have bestowed special pains upon the preparation of the Table of Contents and the Index, a diligent use of which is recommended to the students. I have also compiled "Notes on Books" for their further guidance in the subject.

I am obliged to my Colleague Prof. P. M. LIMAYE, M.A., for having read the first five Chapters and suggested valuable criticisms.

I must, in conclusion, thank Mr. K. R. GONDHLEKAR, the Proprietor of the *Jagadhitechu Press*, and Mr. C. R. NAIDU, the Monotype expert, for the care and expedition with which they saw the book through the press.

I shall be glad to receive such suggestions and criticisms as will enhance the value of the book, in its revised edition, to those for whom it is meant.

WILLINGDON COLLEGE,

SANGLI,

15th June, 1924.

B. G. S.

NOTES ON BOOKS.

Books dealing with Indian History and Politics are legion. Such only as are more important or within the easier reach of students are mentioned here. The list is indicative, not exhaustive.

A—*Indian History*—

1. Prof. P. E. Roberts—Historical Geography of India
(Oxford University).
2. Sir Alfred Lyall—Expansion of British Dominions
in India, Murray 1902.
E. I. Co.
(Standard book on the territorial expansion of the)
3. J. Talbot Wheeler—India Under British Rule.
MacMillan 1886.
4. W. H. Woodward—Short History of the Expansion of
the British Empire.
(Cambridge University Press).
5. Sir V. Lovett—India—
contains a readable account of the British Period
up to 1923).
Hodder & Stoughton 1923.
6. L. J. Trotter—History of India. S. P. C. K. 1917.
7. R. C. Dutt—England and India.
Chatto and Windus 1897.
Traces the influence of British Politics upon
India up to 1897.)

B—Double Government—

1. John William Kaye—Administration of the E. I. Co.
Richard Bentley, London 1858.
(A Standard book).
2. R. C. Dutt—Economic History of British India up to
1835). Kegan Paul, London 1902.
(Authority from the Indian point of view).
3. Lt. General John Briggs—India and Europe Compared
Allen & Co., 1857.

C—Bureaucratic Government—

- (i) Generally official, descriptive or appreciative in tone.
1. Sir John Strachey—India—Its Administration and Progress. (MacMillan), 1903.
 2. Sir George Chesney—The Indian Polity. (Longmans 1894).
 3. Sir Bamfylde-Fuller—Studies of Indian Life and Sentiment. Murray 1910.
 4. Sir J. D. Rees—The Real India. Methuen 1908.
 5. Lord Curzon—Speeches 1898-1905 (edited by Sir Thomas Raleigh), MacMillan 1906.
 6. Lord Minto
 7. Lord Hardinge } Speeches. Natesan. Madras.
- (ii) The *evil* effects of Bureaucracy have been pointed out by—
1. Bernard Houghton—Bureaucratic Government.
 2. William Digby—Prosperous India.
 3. Dadabhoy Nowroji—Poverty and UnBritish Rule in India.
- T. Fisher Unwin, 1901.

4. R. C. Dutt— i. Famines in India.

2. India in Victorian Age. Kegan Paul 1906.

The last four deal with the *economic* aspects of British Rule.

iii) *The National Awakening in India* has been treated by—

i. Annie Besant—How India Wrought for Freedom.
Theosophical Publishing House, Madras, 1915:

2. Sir V. Lovett—History of the Indian National Movement.

3. Ramsay MacDonald—The Awakening of India,
Hodder and Stoughton 1910;

See also the writings of Babu Ambika Charan Mujumdar, Keir Hardie, Nevinson, Sir Valentine Chirol and the publications of Natesan on Indian National Congress.

(iv) *More or less critical*—

i. Sir O'Moore Creagh—Indian Studies.

2. Joseph Chailley—Administrative Problems of British India. MacMillan, 1910;

3. Ramsay MacDonald—The Government of India.

The Swarthmore Press,

4. H. H. the Aga Khan—India in Transition.

Times of India, 1918.

Excellent criticisms of Indian Administration are contained in the *speeches* of Gokhale, Morley, Montagu, Sinha, &c., and also other books and pamphlets published by Natesan & Co., of Madras.

D—*Responsible Government*—

Official :—

i. Montagu and Chelmsford—Report on Indian Constitutional Reforms.

- .. 2. Reports of the Franchise and Functions Committees of Lord Southborough.
- 3. Fourth and Fifth Despatches of the Government of India.
- 4. Lord Crewe's Committee on Home Administration.
- 5. Lord Meston's Committee on Financial Relations.
- 6. Reports of the Joint Committee of Parliament on the Government of India Bill.
- 7. Devolution Rules.
- 8. Standing Orders and Manuals of Indian and Provincial Legislatures.
- 9. Government of India Act (Consolidated).

(ii) *Commentaries on the Act of 1919.*

- 1. P. Mukerji—The Indian Constitution.
Thacker, Calcutta).
- 2. S. M. Bose—The Working Constitution in India.
(Oxford 1921).
- 3. Shah—The Governance of India Bombay 1924.

(iii) *Other Books—critical and explanatory.*

- 1. Lionel Curtis—Dyarchy (Oxford University).
- 2. Ilbert—Historical Survey, 1922. (Oxford).
- 3. Horne: (Oxford 1922).
- 4. Ilbert and Meston—The New Constitution of India.
University of London 1923.
Six popular and excellent lectures).
- 5. B. G. Sapre—The Reformed Constitution of British
India, 1921.
Contains a full description of the new Constitution.

(E)—*Books dealing with the Indian Constitution—*

1. Sir L. C. Ilbert—The Government of India
(Oxford) 1917.
(A masterly Historical Introduction, and a digest
of Laws on the Indian Constitution up to 1916)
2. A. Rangaswamy Iyengar—The Indian Constitution
Madras, 1915.
3. Ramachandra Rao—The Development of Indian
Polity, Madras, 1917.
4. B. K. Acharya—Codification in India,
Calcutta, S. K. Bannerji, 1914.
5. N. Ghose—Comparative Administrative Law
(Tagore Law Lecture, 1918).
Butterworth, Calcutta, 1919.
6. P. K. Wattal—Financial Administration in British
India. Times Press, 1923.

(F)—*Text books on Indian Administration—*

1. Prof. V. G. Kale—Indian Administration
Aryabhushan, 1923.
2. Sir G. Anderson—British Administration in India,
MacMillan, 1923.
3. Prof. B. K. Thakore—Indian Administration to the
Dawn of Responsible Government, Poona, 1922.

(G)—*Books suggesting problems of Reconstruction—*

1. Sir M. Vishvaishwarayya—Reconstructing India,
P. S. King & Son.
2. Arnold Lupton—Happy India,
Allen and Unwin, 1922.
(Shows what science may do for India).

(H)—*Original Sources*—

1. Prof. Ramsay Muir—The Making of British India (1765-1857),
(Contains excellent introductions.)
Manchester University, 1915.
2. Firminger—Fifth Report of the E. I. Co., 3 volumes,
(1812), Cambrai & Co., Calcutta.
(A Scholarly introduction to the E. I. Co., and its Indian Administration).
3. Anderson and Subhedar—The Development of European Policy, 2 Vols., 1818-1858
George Bell and Sons London, 1921.
4. Prof. Mukerji—Indian Constitutional Documents.
Thacker Spink & Co., Calcutta, 1916.
5. Prof. Berridale Keith—Speeches on Indian Policy,
2 Vols., (1750-1920), Oxford University, 1922.
(Speeches in Parliament ; a useful collection).

(I)—*Official Literature*—

1. Reports of Committees and Commissions on every aspect and problem of India Administration to some of which reference has been made in the book.
2. Imperial Gazetteer of India—3 & 4th Volumes.
3. Annual Reports on the Moral and Material progress of India, particularly the series beginning from 1917 under the able authorship of Prof. Rushbrooke Williams. The latest volume should be always at hand. It contains an exhaustive list of official publications.
4. Proceedings of Provincial and Indian Legislatures.
5. Gazettes of the Local and Central Governments.

(J)—*Indian year Book—Times of India*

Annual issue. Excellent up-to-date notes on Indian Administration.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

THE BEGINNINGS.

CHAPTER I.

THE EAST INDIA COMPANY (UP TO 1772.)

(1) I—First Settlements and Early Policy in India	1
Introduction	1
First Settlements in India	1
Departure from a strictly commercial policy	3
(2) II—The Anglo-French Struggle—	
The Karnatic Wars	5
Causes of the French Failure	6
(3) III—Life in an English Factory	7
(4) IV—Revolution in Bengal	8
Condition of Bengal after the departure of Clive	9
Reforms of Clive	10
(5) V—Work of Warren Hastings	14
Foreign policy	11
Land Revenue Policy	1
Civil Administration under the Moghuls	1
Revenue collection up to the time W. Hastings	16
Work of Warren Hastings	18
Judicial Reforms	21

TABLE OF CONTENTS

(6) VI—The East India Company in England	23
The Company under the Stuarts	25
" " after the Revolution	26
Charters under the First two Georges	27

CHAPTER II.

FIRST ATTEMPTS AT PARLIAMENTARY CONTROL (1774-1784)

(7) I—The Regulating Act	29
Misgovernment in Bengal	"
Parliamentary Inquiry	30
Evils in England	32
Evils in India	33
A new Government for Bengal	"
Relations with other Presidencies	34
Purification of the Services	"
The Supreme Court	"
Criticism of the Act	35
Constitution of the Council	36
Conclusion	41
(8) II—Pitt's India Act of 1784—	
Pitt's India Act of 1784	42

PART II.

DOUBLE GOVERNMENT.

CHAPTER III.

HOME ADMINISTRATION (1785-1858).

(9) I—The Board of Control	
Introductory	45
Supremacy of the Board of Control	"
The Position of the President	47

CHAPTER IV.

HALF-A-CENTURY OF TERRITORIAL EXPANSION.

(10) I—Lord Cornwallis	53
(11) II—Marquis of Wellesley	
Wellesley's Policy	54
His Subsidiary Alliances	55
Relative strength of English & Marathas..	58
Wellesley and the Peshwa	63
Wellesley and Other Native Powers ..	65
(12) III—End of the Non-Intervention Policy—	
Non-Intervention Policy	67
Its results	"
Review of Hasting's Policy	72
Extension of the Frontier	"
(13) IV—Lord William Bentinck and the Native States	73

CHAPTER V.

SECOND PERIOD OF TERRITORIAL EXPANSION (1835-57).

(14) I—Foreign Relations and the First Afghan War—	
Lord Minto's Missions	75
Policy of Lord Auckland	76
Annexation of Sind	78
(15) II—The Sikh Wars and Annexation of the Punjab—	79
Policy of Lord Dalhousie	80
(16) III—Other Annexations of Lord Dalhousie—	
Doctrine of Lapse	82
(17) IV—Relations with Native States under the Crown—	84
Constitutional position of the States ..	87
Lord Curzon's Views..	88
Chamber of Princes	89

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER VI.

✓ PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT, FINANCE, PUBLIC WORKS.

(18) I—Plan of the Chapters	92
(19) II—The System of Administration	93
(20) III—Indian Finance under the Company	95
Financial Position in 1851-52	97
(21) IV—Public Works	99

CHAPTER VII.

HISTORY OF THE LAND REVENUE SETTLEMENTS.

✓ (22) I—The Permanent Settlement of Bengal	102
Criticism	104
(23) II—Land Settlement in Madras	106
Condition of the Karnatic	"
Northern Sarcars	"
Munro's Work	107
(24) III—Rayatwari Settlement in Bombay—	
Elphinstone's Proposals	110
Settlement Operations	112
(25) IV—The Land Settlement in N.-W. Provinces	113
Mahalwari Settlement	115
(26) V—Lieut.-Genl. John Briggs	117
His " Land Tax in British India "	"
(27) VI—Lord William Bentinck's Policy	118
Principles of the Mahalwari Settlement	"
✓ (28) VII—Village Settlement in the Punjab	120
Mill's Description of the Settlement	"
(29) VIII—Malguzari Settlement in Central Provinces ..	121
(30) IX—Summary and Conclusion	122

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xv

CHAPTER VIII.

JUDICIAL REFORMS OF CORNWALLIS AND BENTINCK AND THE CHARTER ACT OF 1833.

(31)	I—Introductory .. . . .	..	124
(32)	II—Judicial Reforms of Cornwallis ..	..	"
	Review and Criticism— .. . . .	..	"
(33)	III—The Reforms of Lord William Bentinck ..	..	127
	Criticism .. . . .	..	129
✓ (34)	IV—The Charter Act of 1833. ..	..	130
	Reform in Indian Legislation ..	..	131
(35)	V—Other Provisions of the Charter Act ..	..	136
(36)	VI—Education .. . . .	..	"
(37)	VII—Employment of Indians in the Public Service	140	

CHAPTER IX.

SOME GREAT ADMINISTRATORS.

(38)	I—Introductory .. . . .	..	143
(39)	II—The Reforming Movement ..	..	"
	Elphinstone on Village Communities ..	..	144
	Sir Charles Metcalfe on .. ..	..	145
(40)	III—Reforms of Bentinck ..	..	146
(41)	IV—Work of Sir Thomas Munro ..	..	147
	On the Employment of Indians in the Ad- ministration .. . . . .	..	"
	On the Advantages and Disadvantages of		
	British Rule .. . . .	..	148
	On the Future of India .. . . .	..	"
(42)	V—Work of Elphinstone ..	..	149
(43)	VI—Other Administrators ..	..	"

TABLE OF CONTENTS

(44) VII—Lord Dalhousie as an Administrator..	153
Minute of Lord Dalhousie	151
General Principles of his Policy	153
(45) VIII—Retrospect	154

PART III.

BUREAUCRATIC GOVERNMENT.

CHAPTER X.

PARLIAMENTARY SUPREMACY IN THEORY AND PRACTICE.—

(46) V—Introductory	155
(47) II—History of the Government of India Act 1858	156
(48) III—The Case for the <i>status quo</i>	157
(49) IV—Defects of the Old System	158
(50) V—The Secretary of State and his Council ..	160
(51) VI—The Secretary of State—	
Nature of Parliamentary Control	163
Subordination of the Council to S. of S. ..	165
Control over the Government of India ..	166
(52) VII—Review, Criticism, and Reform of the Home Administration	169

CHAPTER XI.

ADMINISTRATIVE CENTRALIZATION IN INDIA.

(53) I—Introductory	172
(54) II—The Governor-General in Council in Relation to the Secretary of State in Council	"
In legislation	173
In Finance and Administration	174

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xvii

(55) III—The Viceroy and Governor-General	175
(56) IV—His Executive Council	176
Its Constitutional Position	176
Character of the Council up to 1861	"
Change in its Character	177
Reorganization by Lord Canning	178
Strength of the Council before the Reforms	"
(57) V—Working of the Council—	
Councillors become Departmental Heads	181
(58) VI—Position of the Governor General	182
(59) VII—Is the Governor-General's Council a Cabinet	187

CHAPTER XII.

ADMINISTRATIVE CENTRALIZATION (ctd).

(60) VIII—Formation of the Provinces	190
Partition of Bengal	192
Transfer of Capital	"
(61) IX—Varying Status of the Local Governments	
The Three Presidencies	195
The Four Lieut.-Governorships	"
Central Provinces and Assam	196
British Baluchistan and N.-W. Fr. Prov.	,
Minor administrations	197
(62) X—Administration in a Province	"
(63) XI—Functions of the Government in India	198
(64) XII—On the Relation of the Central Government	
With Local Governments	200
The Sphere of the Government of India	201
Distribution of Functions between Central and Provincial Governments	201

TABLE OF CONTENTS

(65) XIII—Centralisation	203
In Finance	"
In Legislation	206
In administration	205
Effects of Centralization	207
(66) XIV—Bureaucratic Government	208

CHAPTER XIII.

DECENTRALIZATION.

(67) I—Failure of Bureaucracy	215
Gokhale's Verdict	216
(68) II—Dawn of a New Era	217
Remedial measures (a) Decentralization	
(b) Association	"
(69) III—Decentralization	218
(70) IV—History of Financial Settlements	"
(71) V—Local Self-Government	222
Lord Mayo's Contribution	223
Advance under Lord Ripon	"
Review of Progress during 1882-1912	225
Presy. Towns Municipal & Rural Boards	"
Their Functions	228
Summary and Criticism	"

CHAPTER XIV.

ASSOCIATION.

(72) I—Introductory	230
(73) II—Employment of Indians in the Public Services	"

(74) III—Growth of Leg. Councils (up to 1909)	233
Defects of the early System	234
The Indian Councils' Act of 1861	234
The Act proves inadequate	235
The Indian Councils Act of 1892	236
(75) IV—Morley-Minto Reforms	238
Constitution of the Councils	238
1 Numbers	"
2 Proportion of Officials Non-officials	240
Lord Elgin's view on the Subject	"
3 methods of appointment or election	242
Changes in the Functions of the Council	242
Criticism	246
(76) V—Appointment of Indians to Executive Councils	247

PART IV.

RESPONSIBLE GOVERNMENT.

CHAPTER XV.

PROVINCIAL DEVOLUTION.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER XVI.

REFORMED PROVINCIAL COUNCILS

(86) I—Introductory	.. .. .. ..	271
(87) II—Constitution of the Councils	.. .. .. ..	"
1. Numbers	.. .. .. ..	272
2. Proportion of officials and Non-officials	.. .. .. ..	276
3. Method of appointment or election	.. .. .. ..	277
Disputable matters of Representation	.. .. .. ..	279
Communal Representation	.. .. .. ..	"
Reservation of Seats	.. .. .. ..	282
Representation of Special Interests	.. .. .. ..	283
Nomination	.. .. .. ..	"
Proportional Representation	.. .. .. ..	284
(88) III—Scheme of Franchise for Bombay Presidency	.. .. .. ..	288
Explanatory Remarks	.. .. .. ..	"
Qualifications for candidates	.. .. .. ..	290

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xxi

Corrupt Practices	290
Other Electoral Rules	291
(89) IV—Sessions and Duration of the Councils	297
Presidency of the Council	292
(90) V—General View of Business and Procedure in the Council	294
(91) VI—Functions of the Council	296
Interpellations	"
Deliberative Functions—Resolutions	297
Motion to adjourn	298
Legislative Procedure	"
Financial Procedure	299

CHAPTER XVII.

DYARCHY.

(92) I—Meaning of Dyarchy	300
Provinces the Domain of Responsibility	300
Meaning of Dyarchy	301
Division of Provincial Subjects into "Reserved" and "Transferred"	302
(93) II—Structure of the Provincial Executive—	
The Ministers	303
(94) III—Dyarchy in Operation	
Relations of the two Halves of Government	304
Governor to define Spheres of Jurisdiction	306
(95) IV—Allocation of funds between the two Halves	307
Joint vs. Separate Purse	"
Dictum of the Joint Committee	310
Devolution Rules about Allocation	311
Advantages of the Joint Purse	312
(96) V—Budget in the Council	314
Special Precautions	"

CHAPTER XVIII.

RESPONSIBILITY TO PARLIAMENT.

(103) I—Introductory .. . . .	.. . . . .	332
(104) II—The Executive Council .. . . .	.. . . . .	333
Leave of Absence .. . . .	.. . . . .	335
(105) III—The Indian Legislature .. . . .	.. . . . .	336
Why made bicameral .. . . .	.. . . . .	"
Position of the Council of State .. . .	.. . . . .	337
Composition of the Council of State ..	.. . . . .	339
Composition of the Assembly .. . . .	.. . . . .	339
(106) IV—Constituencies and Franchise of the ..	.. . . . .	342
Legislative Assembly .. . . .	.. . . . .	343
the Council of State .. . . .	.. . . . .	"
(107) V—Points of Difference between the Council of ..	.. . . . .
State and the Assembly .. . . .	.. . . . .	345
Duration .. . . . .	.. . . . .	"
Presidency .. . . . .	.. . . . .	"
Powers .. . . . .	.. . . . .	346

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xxi

(108) VI—Functions of the Indian Legislature	346
Legislation—in the two Chambers..	
Budget Procedure	349
Voting of the Budget..	
Non-votable items in the Budget	350
The Finance Bill	
Powers of the two Chambers	351
With regard to the Budget	
Enforcing of Accountability	352
(109) Special Powers regarding Legislation and Finance	
Legislation	353
Finance	356
Criticism	
(109 A) Tendencies in the Indian Legislature	360
(110) VIII—Closer Links between the Executive and the Legislature	361
Council Secretaries	362
Standing Committees	
(111) IX—Home Administration	
Principles of relaxation of Parliamentary Control	363
Devolution	
Delegation	364
Convention	
Separation of the Agency and Political Func- tions of the Secretary of State	365
High Commissioner for India— Council of the Secretary of State	366
Position of the Secretary of State	368
(112) X—Responsibility of Parliament	370
Amendment of the Constitution	372

PART V.

SOME RESULTS AND PROBLEMS OF INDIAN
ADMINISTRATION.

CHAPTER XIX.

CENTRAL.

(II3) I—Introductory	378
(II4) II—Foreign Relations and Frontier Policy	379
Foreign Relations	" "
Lord Curzon's Views.. . . .	380
Frontier Policy	" "
N.-W. Frontier Policy	382
Lord Curzon's Policy	385
Third Afghan War	386
(II5) III—The Indian Army	387
Reorganization	" "
The Problem of Indianization	389
Indian Territorial Force	390
(II6) IV—Finance—	
Growth in Expenditure	" "
Inchcape Committee.. . . .	391
Military Expenditure	" "
Customs	392
Income-tax	393
Committee on Taxation	394
Railways	396
Ackworth Committee on Indian Railways	397
Inchcape Committee on Railway Policy	398

TABLE OF CONTENTS

xxv

(ii7) V—Fiscal Policy—		399
Advent of Protection .. .. ..	.. .. ..	" "
Joint Committee on Fiscal Policy ..	..	400
Resolution in the Assembly.. .. ..	.. .. ..	402
(ii8) VI—The Services .. .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. .. ..	403
As means to Self-Government .. .. ..	.. .. ..	" "
Resolution of December of 1920 ..	..	405
Position of Europeans .. .. ..	.. .. ..	406
Government on a Dilemma .. .. ..	.. .. ..	" "
The Lee Commission.. .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. .. ..	407
Genesis of the Commission .. .. ..	.. .. ..	408
The Lee Commission .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	407
Genesis of the Commission .. .. ..	.. .. ..	408
The Medical Service .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	410
Indianization .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	412
Pay and Allowances .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	414
Exchange .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	415
Passage .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	416
Pensions .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	417
Security to Services .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	418
Home Rent.. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	420
Summary and Criticism .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	420

CHAPTER XX.

PROVINCIAL.

(ii9) VII—Local Self-Government .. .. ..	.. .. ..	421
Resolution of Lord Chelmsford .. .. ..	.. .. ..	" "
Recent Developments .. .. ..	.. .. ..	422
In Bombay .. .. .. ..	.. .. .. ..	423
The Local Boards Act 1923.. .. ..	.. .. ..	" "
Revival of Village Panchayats .. .. ..	.. .. ..	425

TABLE OF CONTENTS

(120) VIII—Education	426
Introduction	"
History of the Education Policy	427
Analysis of the Despatch of 1854	428
Education Commission of 1882	429
Lord Curzon's Policy..	"
University Reform of 1904	431
Criticism	433
Calcutta University Commission	434
Secondary Education	439
Primary Education	441
Summary and criticism	442
(121) IX—Land Revenue Policy under the Reforms	"
General Principles	442
Period of Settlement..	443
Land Revenue under the Reforms..	444
(122) X—Law and Justice	446
Codification in India..	"
Separation of Executive and Judicial Functions	447
Racial Discrimination	450

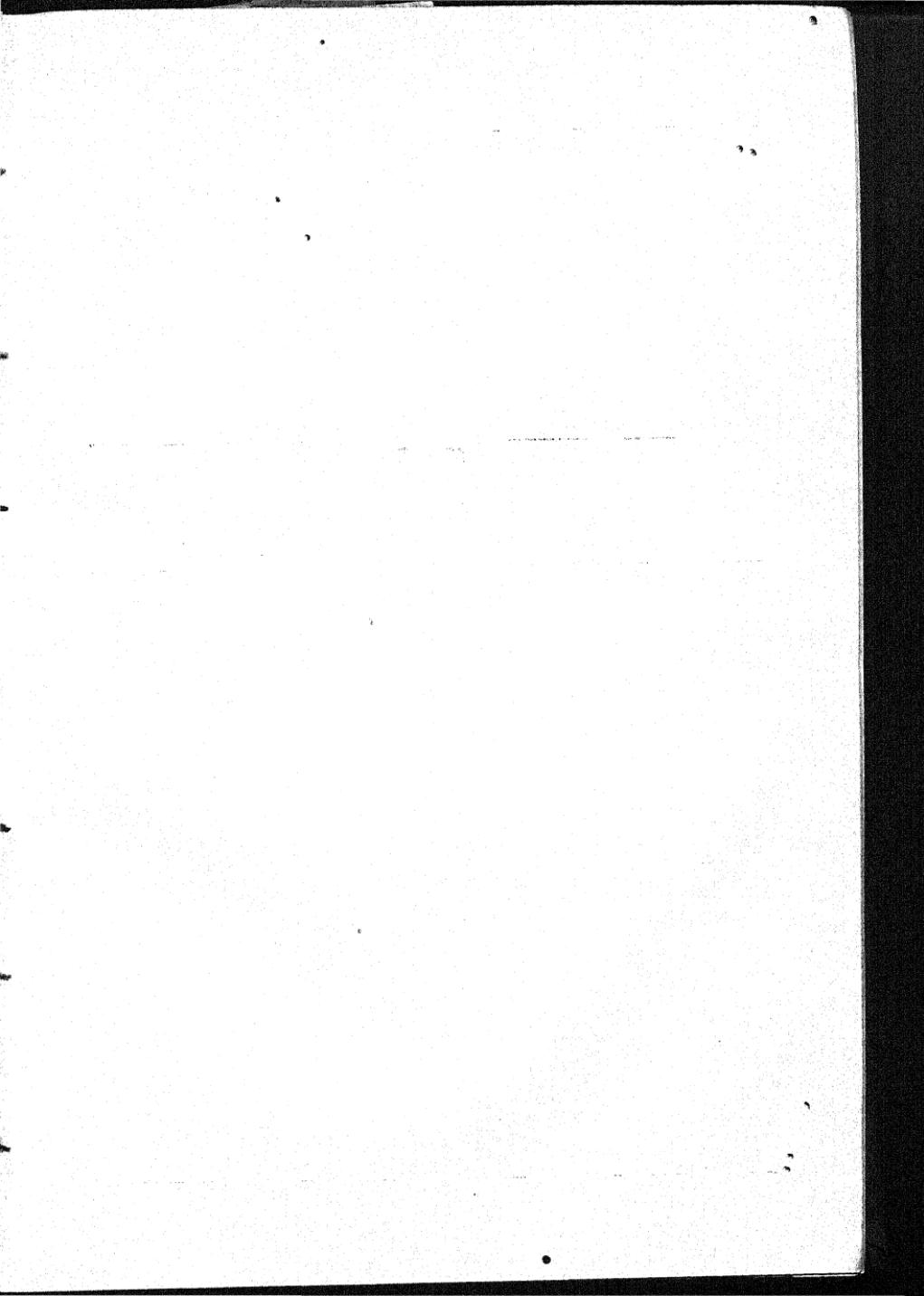
APPENDIX.

The Government of India Act	"
--	---

INDEX.

ERRATUM.

Page 261 For Sir Basil Scott Read Sir Basil Blackett.



an
:c
-I
he
ni
ld

PART I

THE BEGINNINGS

CHAPTER I

THE EAST INDIA COMPANY (UPTO 1772)

(1) I—FIRST SETTLEMENTS AND EARLY POLICY IN INDIA.

Introduction.—The period from 1600 in which year the East India Company was incorporated in England by a Charter from Queen Elizabeth to 1858 in which year the Government of India passed from the Company to the Crown, is full of interest to the student of Indian history and administration. He must carefully study the following points in this period : (1) How the Company got its commercial and political privileges through Charters from the Rulers of England ; (2) how it established and extended its possessions in India ; (3) how, as the result of this territorial expansion, it increasingly came under the control of Parliament ; and (4) finally how, under the guidance of the Home authorities it evolved a system of administration in India.

First Settlements in India.—I shall first of all describe how the Company established its settlements in India which in course of time expanded into territorial possessions. As a result of the great naval activity in the days of Queen Elizabeth, Englishmen went out to trade with distant parts of the world and they tried different forms of settlements in

different places. They established 'plantations' and 'colonies' in America, for they had gone there with a view to stay permanently; in India and the far East, however, they put up "factories" only, which were well suited for trade and commerce. Such factories were early established at Surat, Madras, Masalipatam and Hooghly and were for years confined to the coast-line of India. But the merchant-adventurers of the East India Company soon came in conflict with other European merchants who were earlier in the field e.g., the Portuguese and the Dutch. The former were very strong in the Persian Gulf and on the West Coast of India, and the latter had established prosperous trading centres in Java, Sumatra and the "Spice Islands" generally. Here the Dutch were so strong and the rivalry between them and the English so keen that it culminated in the Massacre of Ambyona (1623) when most of the English merchants were put to death. From that time the Company fixed their attention more and more upon India. For two hundred years the Dutch were the acknowledged masters of the 'Spice Islands' and it was in 1811 that Lord Minto personally led an expedition to Java and conquered that Island. But this diversion of the attention of the Company from the Far East to India was important in this sense that it thereby opened to them 'a wider and more Imperial destiny' * in the Indian Continent itself.

In those days commerce with the interior was difficult or impossible for foreigners unless they obtained some sort of 'Firman' or 'Patent' recognising their status and granting them protection and privileges. It was always the ambition of the pioneers of European trade to secure such Firmans from the Emperors at Delhi. In 1615 the British 'Ambas-

* Roberts : 34.

sador' Sir Thomas Roe led an embassy to the Court of Jehangir and obtained from him such a Fiman. But, though the English necessarily came in contact with the power of the Emperor or the local Raja, for many years they confined themselves strictly to commercial pursuits. They had taken a lesson from the fate of the Portuguese and the Dutch merchants who followed a more aggressive policy, came in frequent collision with native powers, and as a result had to maintain large and costly establishments for their protection, to the detriment of profitable commerce. Sir Thomas Roe warned his countrymen against such a policy. He asked them to confine themselves to commerce. "Let this be received as a rule that if you will profit, seek it at sea, and in quiet trade; for without controversy, it is an error to affect garrisons and land-wars in India."*

Departure from a strictly commercial policy.—In the year 1686, largely under the influence of the two brothers Sir Joshua Child and Sir John Child whose voice was decisive in the affairs of the Company, a departure was made from the policy of non-interference with internal affairs. In that year an expedition was led against Chittagong. It failed ludicrously and only served to rouse the wrath of the Emperor Aurangzib who ordered the wholesale expulsion of the English from their factories at Patna, Kasimbazar and Masulipatam and Vizagapatam, and they were only saved by timely submission and by a display of superior naval strength. In 1690 a treaty was made with the Emperor, by which the old privileges were confirmed. Not only were the deserted factories reoccupied, but Job Charnock established a new factory at Calcutta. "The same year, therefore, which

* Quoted in Roberts; page 37.

witnessed the abasement of the Company before Aurangzib also witnessed the humble foundation of the future capital of India.”*

But, in spite of this check which the English received events were happening both in Europe and India at this time, which forced the Company to take an active interest in the affairs of India. It is true that the Portuguese and the Dutch had ceased to cause anxiety to the English; but a more powerful rival appeared in the French East India Company which, under the fostering care of Colbert, soon established factories in India. The ultimate success of the English over the Dutch and the French merchants was due, to no small extent, to the European policy of the French King Louis XIV. He was bent upon destroying the independence of the Dutch Republic. For, though England sympathised with the Republic and Protestant Holland on political and religious grounds in Europe, she was her commercial rival in the East, and she fought with her as many as three naval wars during this period (1650-1700). She, therefore, watched with delight the enfeeblement both of France and Holland, caused by the wars of Louis XIV. As Sir Alfred Lyall points out, this gave great advantage to the naval operations of the English “who thenceforward, begin to draw slowly but continuously to the foremost place in Asiatic conquest and commerce.” †

Thus it happened that about the very time that the contest for commercial and colonial supremacy between the French and the English was raging in the West events were happening in India which rendered adherence to the policy

* Roberts : p. 46.

† Lyall ; page 28.

of indifference to local affairs any longer impossible. Auranzib died in 1707; the Subhadars of the distant Provinces of Bengal and Hyderabad virtually became independent; and above all, there was, in the Deccan, a vigorous rebirth of the Maratha power under the Peshwas.

(2) II—THE ANGLO-FRENCH STRUGGLE.

The Indian counterpart of the Anglo-French struggle in Europe is comprised in the three Karnatic Wars (1744-1763):

The Karnatic Wars.—It is not proposed to go into the details of these wars. Dupleix arrived in India in 1741, and took up the cause of a claimant to the throne of Arcot; the French took Madras from the English who had espoused the claim of the rival Nabab. The treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle (1748) put an end to this war (the First Karnatic War) in which, on the whole, the French had triumphed over the English. During this war Dupleix is said to have made the 'discovery' that the irregular hordes maintained by the Indian Princes could be turned into an excellent army if they were drilled and disciplined and led by European Officers. In the Second Karnatic War (1750-54) the succession dispute at Arcot between two Nababs was complicated by another at Hyderabad between two Nizams. Dupleix succeeded in establishing his own candidates, one as the Nizam of the Deccan, and the other as the Nabab of Karnatic. But his progress was checked by the dramatic emergence of Robert Clive who turned the tide of war in favour of the English. Dupleix was recalled and peace was made with the English in 1754. Thus, though England and France were at peace in Europe, their Companies were fighting in India and the war is therefore called an "unofficial" War. Both sides were

equally exhausted and if Mahamad Ally (the English candidate) remained Nabab of the Karnatic, Salabat Jung (the French Protégé) was the Nizam at Hyderabad, and thus there was a balance of power between the two European Companies in Southern India. The struggle was resumed at the outbreak of the Seven Years' War in Europe. Lally was severely defeated at Wandewash (1760) and Pondicherry was forced to surrender in 1761. The Peace of Paris (1763) though it restored Pondicherry to the French, gave a death-blow to the dreams of the French to establish an Empire in India.

Causes of the French Failure.—It is beyond the scope of this book either to examine the career of Dupleix or to discuss the causes of the final failure of the French in India. Sir Alfred Lyall has done a great deal to elucidate this subject. He distinguishes between the immediate local causes and the essential underlying causes of this failure. The leadership of men like Clive and Lawrence, and the conquest of Bengal which placed at the disposal of the English the vast resources of that Province belong to the former group. The financially rotten condition of the French East India Company; its close connection with and helpless dependence upon the State and the consequent mal-administration of its affairs belong to the latter group. Thus even supposing that Dupleix, Bussy and Lally were free from those shortcomings of temperament or character which all acknowledge, and supposing further that they had not committed the tactical blunders attributed to them, it is doubtful if they would have succeeded as against the English. The ultimate cause of the French failure is to be found, to use the words of Lyall, "in the continual sacrifice of colonial and mercantile interests to a disastrous war-policy (of Louis XIV & XV) on

the Continent, and above all to the exhaustion of their naval strength which left all transmarine possessions of France defenceless against the overwhelming superiority of England."*

(3) III—LIFE IN AN ENGLISH FACTORY.

Before proceeding to review the course of events in Bengal, it will be useful to sketch here the kind of life that the English merchants lived in India about this time. Valuable light has been thrown upon it by the publication of the early records of the East India Company, and it is admirably described in Chapter IX of Robert's book.

The life of the merchant community was centred in the 'Factory'. A Factory was a self-centred Society administered as a detached portion of the British territory. "The President, as the chief Merchant or Agent was called, and the whole staff were lodged, at the expense of the Company in the Factory itself which was built round a square court, the ground floor being used as warehouse and offices. The President was assisted by a Council of four Senior Merchants who formed the highest grade of officers, below them ranking the Factors, Writers, and Apprentices." †

The instructions which the Directors now and again sent to the Presidents and Councils of Bombay and Madras show what were the special evils against which they wished to guard their young servants. There are frequent exhortations against the evils of duelling, against intemperance, extravagance and gambling. They also condemned private trade on the part of their servants. Nor did the Directors forget to send out suitable books for the benefit of the young.

* Lyall; page 95.

† Woodward; page 82.

Thus though they cared first for profits, they were not unmindful of the larger interests of their servants or factors.

It should also be noted that in course of time the factories attracted a large heterogeneous population from the surrounding country. Fortifications were built for protection, money began to be coined, justice was administered, and a native militia entertained. As Lyall points out, in the system thus introduced was contained the germ out of which these scattered trading settlements eventually expanded into territorial dominion. *

(4)

IV—REVOLUTION IN BENGAL.

It has been pointed out by Lyall that after 1763 the contest for ascendancy in India is not between rival European Companies but between the English Company and the Native Powers. The first half of the struggle was decided on the coast line of Madras in the short period of 20 years (1745-63); the second half began in the interior of Bengal in 1756, extended over the whole of India and occupied a whole century. And curiously enough, Clive is the connecting link between these two periods and theatres of the struggle. As a reward for his services in the Karnatic Wars he was appointed in 1756 the Governor of Madras; but the condition of Bengal became so serious that he had to go to Calcutta. Ali Vardikhan the strong Nabab of Bengal died in 1756 and was succeeded by his son Suraj-Udawala a youth of barely 20 years of age. He was bent upon driving the English—who, against his orders were fortifying Calcutta—out of Bengal and therefore, took Kasimbazar, marched upon Calcutta and the “Black Hole” tragedy took place on 23rd June. It was for the recovery of Calcutta that Clive and Admiral Watson were sent

* Lyall; page 29.

from Madras. The position of the Company in Bengal was rendered more precarious by the negotiations of Suraj Udawala with the French, between whom and the English War had broken out in Europe. But Clive, by allying himself with Mirjafar who was plotting the overthrow of the Nabab, routed his army in the battle of Plassey, and Mirjafar was made the Nawab. In recognition of these services Clive was made the President of the Council and Governor of Bengal. He was thus enabled to utilise the resources of Bengal against the French in Madras. He sent Col. Forde to Northern Circars to divert the attention of the French, and Forde took Masulipatam in 1759 April. Col. Forde also defeated the Dutch—the only other European rival of the English in Bengal; Clive after thus establishing securely the power of the Company in Bengal, returned to England in 1760. (A comparison of the position of the Company in 1756 with that in 1760 shows the magnitude of the achievement of Clive. He had raised the status of the English from a commercial Company to the supreme power in Bengal, and the accession of the wealth of Bengal also altered the position of the Company in Madras as against the French. The English got a firm footing inland from which it became easy for them to defeat their European rivals and develop their resources for the fight with the Native Princes) It gave them a position in upper or Continental India as distinguished from lower or Peninsular India. The English secured the richest Province in upper India in point of fertility and manufacture. It was a province eminently suited for maritime people. It was free from such powerful rivals as the Peshwas and Hyder in Western and Southern India.

Condition of Bengal after the departure of Clive.—On the departure of Clive there ensued, in the words of Sir Alfred

Lyall, "the only period of Anglo-Indian History which throws grave and unpardonable discredit on the English name." Government fell in the hands of Holwell and Vansittart and as Mirjafar was not able to pay his stipulated amounts, they entered into a secret treaty with Mir Kasim, who, as the price of his elevation to the throne, presented to the Committee £200,000 out of which Vansittart got £28,000. But Mir Kasim proved a more capable and independent Ruler than was expected by the Company and protested against the abuse by the servants of the Company, of the trading privileges. The whole internal trade was in the hands of these servants. They claimed exemption from the payment of all the internal duties, and under this unfair competition the Indian merchants suffered. Mir Kasim protested but as his complaints proved of no avail, he abolished duties in the case of both English and Indian merchants. As this concession was opposed by Mr. Ellis of Patna, Mir Kasim attacked Patna and imprisoned Ellis. There was now an open rupture between Mir Kasim and the Council and the latter again made Mirjafar the Nabab. Mir Kasim was defeated and he ordered the massacre of the prisoners at Patna and was finally defeated in the battle of Buxar, October 1764. As Mirjafar had died in February of the same year, the Council raised his grandson—a minor—to the throne and appointed a Deputy Nabab to carry on the civil administration. The Company was to be paid £50,000 per month for the maintenance of the army in Bengal.

Reforms of Clive.—Such was the condition which Clive was called upon to improve during his third visit to India.

In a letter (30th September 1765) to the Court of Directors that he wrote soon after his arrival in Bengal, Clive refers to the corruption, extravagance and luxury of the servants of

the Company as the besetting sins of Government in Bengal. His labours, therefore, to remove them have been rightly characterised as the cleansing of the Augean Stables. We may, following Roberts, classify Clive's Reforms under three heads—reform of the Company's Civil and Military service; the acquisition of the Diwani, and his external policy.

With regard to the army he found that the army had encroached upon the civil administration and was in a state of insubordination. He succeeded in bringing it under control, and in removing the long-standing scandal about the Bhatta allowance. An extra allowance was allowed to the soldiers when they were on active service; but since the days of Plassey the allowance had been continued to the army though it had returned to garrison duty. The army had come to regard the allowance as a permanent addition to the salary. They protested violently against the reduction. But Clive carried out the orders of the Court of Directors to forthwith stop the allowance.

He tried to reform the civil service by prohibiting the servants from receiving bribes and presents and from taking part in private trade. As a compensation for their loss he reserved to them the profits upon salt, betel and tobacco in which the Company had a monopoly of internal trade. The remedial measure of Clive only served to inflict great hardships upon the people of Bengal and ruin Indian merchants. As the root-cause of the evil *i.e.*, inadequacy of the official salary was not touched, the reform of Clive was of no use.

Clive next proceeded to the reform of the Calcutta Council—which consisted of the President and sixteen members scattered over a wide area. In the place of this unwieldy body he substituted, with the sanction of the Directors, a Select Committee of four for purposes of consultation.

Clive had also to reorganize the administration of the minor Nabab of Bengal. He therefore appointed Mahamad Reza Khan as the Naib Diwan and restricted his powers by associating with him two Hindu grandees.

Turning his attention beyond the Provinces acquired by the Company Clive next entered into a treaty with the Vazier of Oudh and the Emperor Shah Alum. In return for the districts of Allahabad and Korah which the English had conquered from the Vazier, and the annual tribute of 26 lacs from the revenues of Bengal, the Emperor was to grant to the Company the *Diwani* of Bengal, Bihar and Orissa. The functions of the Diwan were of two kinds—collection of revenue, and, closely bound with it, the administration of civil justice. By the arrangements of 1765 the Nabab was not relieved of his responsibility for the peace of the three Provinces and the sum of 53 lacs was to be paid to him for that purpose. The Company retained for itself whatever surplus revenue remained after paying the tribute of 26 lacs to the Emperor and 53 lacs to be paid to the Nabab of Bengal. The Company, however, did not at first take up the actual work of revenue collection or judicial administration. As the Directors wrote in their Despatch of May 17, 1766, "we conceive the office of the Diwan should be exercised only in *superintending* the collections and disposal of revenues, which though vested in the Company, should be officially executed at the Darbar, under the control of the Governor and the Select Committee. The administration of justice, the appointment of Officers, Jamindars etc. whatever comes under the denomination of civil administration, we understand to remain in the hands of the Nawab or Ministers."

The fundamental defect of this system of 'double government' was that though nominally the civil administration

was vested in the Nabab, all real power was in the hands of the Company, and when later on the powers of military protection and criminal jurisdiction (*i.e.* of the Nizamat) were taken away from the Nabab, he became a mere shadow with an annual pension of 53 lacs of rupees.

The foreign policy of Clive was as cautious as it was farsighted. After the decisive victory in the battle of Baxar, Clive might have annexed a portion of the territories of the Nabab—Vazier of Oudh. But he was opposed to any policy of extending the territories of the Company beyond Bengal, Bihar and Orissa.

As he wrote to the Court of Directors, this decision disappointed many, who thought of nothing but a march with the Emperor on Delhi. "My resolution, however, was, and my hopes will be to confine our assistance, our conquest, and our possessions to Bengal, Bihar and Orissa. To go further is, in my opinion, a scheme so extravagantly ambitious and absurd, that no Governor and Council, in their senses can adopt it, unless the whole system of the Company's interest be entirely new modelled."*

This policy of friendship with the Vazir of Oudh who was to be formed as a barrier between the English possessions in Bengal and other powers in North India remained the policy of the English up to the end of the century.^f

But though there is not the least doubt that the motives that actuated Clive in introducing his 'reforms' were far more creditable to him than his transactions after the battle of Plassey, his labours did not lead to any lasting results.

* Firminger : Introduction Chapter VIII.

^f Lyall : page 132.

(5)

V.—WORK OF WARREN HASTINGS.

After the departure of Clive things in Bengal went from bad to worse, and in 1772 Warren Hastings who was the most experienced and capable of the Servants of the Company was appointed the Governor of that Presidency. The two years of his Governorship are full of events and measures that are of interest to the student of Indian Administration. We shall consider his work under (a) foreign policy, (b) land revenue policy and (c) judicial reforms.

Foreign Policy.—In Northern India he generally adhered to the principles of Lord Clive. He accordingly lent to the Nabab-Vazir of Oudh the use of a British Army for the suppression of the Rohillas. The only annexation of territory during his regime was that of *Benares*, the Raja—Chait-singh of which principality had demurred to help the English with men and money and, therefore, had been deposed.

Warren Hastings was involved in the Maratha and Mysore Wars not on his own initiative, but on account of the policy of the Bombay and Madras Governments.

Land Revenue Policy of Warren Hastings.—To explain the land revenue policy of Warren Hastings a word has to be said about the system of civil administration that obtained under the Moghuls, and about the experiments tried by the President and Council at Calcutta with regard to revenue collection up to his time.

Civil Administration under the Moghuls.—Under the Moghuls the Governor of a Province was styled the *Subhadar*, who was both the *Diwan* and *Nazim* of the Province. But as the union of the two Offices in the same hands made him overpowerful, Aurangzeb appointed separate officers to discharge these functions. The *Nazim* was the Chief Officer

charged with the administration of the Criminal Law and the Police, just as the *Diwan* was charged with the administration of the Civil Law and the collection of revenue. The term Nizamat denoted the office and duties of the Nazim, the administration of police and criminal law, and *Diwani*, the functions of the Diwan.

Beneath the Subhadar (as the Nazim) were the Foujdars whose duty was to preserve peace in the District and overawe and restrain the Zamindars. Most of the Foujdars were Persian adventurers that had secured their appointments by speculative offers of lump sums of revenue that they undertook to pay. But as they were not always successful in the collection of revenue, the Nabab made use of local Hindu capitalists in the shape of Zamindars "The creation of the smaller type of Zamindars seems to have been due to the desire of the Moorshedabad power to have two strings to its revenue-bow—the Hindu who understood so intimately the habits of the people who paid the revenue, and the Foujdar who, although distrusted, could squeeze, when occasion required, the petty Zamindars."*

Turning next to the Zamindars, the first thing to note is that the term included persons of varying degree of importance, ranging from the representative of an ancient Hindu Royal Family to the revenue farmer who had raised himself to that status by securing a patent from the Emperor. Whatever his origin, every Zamindar was bound to pay to Government a certain share of the revenue, in return for which he enjoyed the right to retain for himself whatever he collected from the Rayats that cultivated the land, in excess of the Government assessment. Below the Zamindars were the *Rayats* who had to pay to the Zamindars certain dues (of the

* Firminger : Introduction.

nature of feudal exactions in Europe) called *Abreabs* in addition to the customary rents. The revenue interests of the Government were watched by the Officer called *Conungo* who authenticated leases and transfers of land, and checked the accounts of the Zamindar. On the other hand the interests of the village were watched by its Officer called the *Patwari*, who was maintained by allowances from the cultivators and the grants of village land. The *Kanungo*, representing the State and the *Patwari* representing the village would have been invaluable Officers had the whole system not been rotten on account of cesses. As it was the Rayats suffered from both.”*

But though, in practice, there were considerable departures from the theory, in Bengal the State was entitled to a *revenue* only, the Zamindars were entitled to *customary rents*, paying revenue to the State ; and the Rayats had a hereditary right to the holdings, subject to the payment of customary rents to the Landlords.”†

Revenue collections up to the time of Warren Hastings.—It is customary with writers to pass lightly over the initial mistakes of the revenue policy of the Governor and Council at Calcutta. But these early experiments clearly show how the way was prepared for the full utilization of the grant of *Diwani* in course of time. When Calcutta was established in 1696 the Company got the Zamindari of the surrounding tract for which it had to pay annual rent of Rs. 1500. It had to collect rents from the Rayats and administer justice in this tract in its capacity as the Zamindar and this novel work was entrusted to a Member of the Council. The next step was the acquisition of the 24 *Parganas* from Mirjafar as the price of the help he received from the Company for being

* Firminger : Introduction.

† Dutt : Early British Rule 56.

made the Nabob of Bengal. A report was made on the condition of land revenue in this extensive tract, and instead of collecting it directly from the Rayats, or from the Zamindars, the lands were let out in 1759 to highest bidders for three years. This experiment proved disastrous both to the Rayats and the Zamindars and also did not yield satisfactory revenue to the Company. When Mirjasar was set aside in favour of Mirkasim, the Company got from the latter the three districts of Burdwan, Midnapur and Chittagong. In each of these districts a 'Chief' was appointed as the servant of the Company, who was responsible for the collection of revenue and the administration of justice. The system of 'farming' revenue, which had been tried in the 24 *Parganas* was not extended to the 'Ceded' districts of Burdwan, Midnapur and Chittagong.

When, however, Clive obtained the grant of Diwani in 1765, the actual work of revenue collection was not undertaken by the Company, even though they had got experience of such work in the 'ceded districts.' The newly acquired country was so vast, revenue-collection so intricate a business and demand for money so pressing that the Governor and Council reverted to the simple but disastrous policy of farming out lands to highest bidders. Richard Becher who was Resident at Moorshedabad has vividly pointed out the evils of the farming system. As the Zamindars could not or would not pay the exorbitant demands made upon them, they were ousted from their lands, and *aumils* who had agreed to pay a fixed revenue were put in their place. As these adventurers had no interest in the land they tried to make as much out of it as possible during their uncertain period of holding, and whole districts were thus impoverished.

It was to check these evils of farming that in 1769, the Directors ordered the appointment of two controlling Councils of Revenue, one at Moorshedabad, and the other at Patna, and also of English gentlemen known as "Supervisors" to superintend the collection of land revenue. But the remedy proved worse than the disease, because these supervisors who were young servants of the Company and who, like their seniors, were not free from the taint of private trade, soon obtained an undue influence in the district on account of their official position which they did not fail to use for their own aggrandisement. During all this time the condition of the people was going from bad to worse, and the terrible famine which visited Bengal in 1770 and which is said to have carried away a third of the population, at the very time when the revenue collections were actually increasing under the methods adopted by the Council at Calcutta, showed that the whole administrative system as established by Clive had become rotten to the core and required drastic reform.

Work of Warren Hastings.—The choice of the Directors fell upon Warren Hastings who had risen from the lowest rank in the service of the Company to the position of a Resident at Moorshedabad and a Member of the Council at Calcutta. No other person in the service of the Company had better knowledge of the commercial and revenue affairs of that body. When he was appointed the Governor of Bengal in 1772, he and his Council adopted the following measures for the collection of land revenue in Bengal.

- (1) He appointed a Committee of Circuit consisting of himself and four Members to visit the districts and to investigate the conditions of revenue collection in each.

(2) As the Directors had declared their policy to 'stand forth as the Diwan' of Bengal, Bihar and Orissa, he suspended Mahamad Reza Khan (who as Naib Diwan since 1765 was responsible for the collection of revenue under the old system, and who was charged with embezzlement, though subsequently he was found to be innocent), and appointed 'Collectors' in the place of the 'Supervisors' appointed in 1769. This was not a mere change in the title; for the Collectors directly collected the revenue. The instructions that Warren Hastings issued to the newly appointed Collectors clearly show the multifarious duties which they were called upon to perform and the high moral standard that was expected of them by the Government. But the Collectors proved even more oppressive than the Supervisors and the Directors ordered them to be at once withdrawn, which was done in 1773. Provincial Councils were appointed in the place of the Collectors at Calcutta, Patna, Moorshedabad, Burdwan, Dacca, and Dinajpur. The Councils of Revenue at Moorshe-dabad and Patna were abolished, and final authority in revenue matters was vested in the Council itself at Calcutta, to which place the treasury was transferred from Moorshedabad. Thus if Job Charnock is to be considered as founder of Calcutta as a seat of trade, Hastings may be regarded as the founder of Calcutta as the political capital of India !*

Hastings did not like the arrangement of 'Provincial Councils' and would have preferred the appointment of Indian Diwans to assist the Collectors but he was not allowed to put his views in practice. The Provincial Councils did not last long. They were abolished in 1781 and a new Revenue authority called the Board of Revenue was established in their lieu at Calcutta.

* Firminger : Introduction page 230.

(3) A new assessment was made after a careful inquiry, which was to remain in force for five years ; the land was put to auction, highest bidders being preferred to the old Zamindars.

(4) Hastings also tried to safeguard the interests of the Rayats from the undue exactions of Zamindars by requiring the latter to give written 'Pattas' or 'agreements' to the Rayats.

Such was the work of Warren Hastings. It is clear that some of the worst abuses of the old system were removed. He was most anxious to raise the tone of the Collectors by depriving them of the opportunity of private trade. But though the machinery of collection was improved, the method of assessment continued as unsatisfactory as before.

When the 'five year' assessment (begun in 1772) was drawing to a close, Hasting proposed to make the settlement for life. His rival Philip Francis proposed to make it permanent. But neither proposal was accepted by the Court of Directors and for the next few years there were annual settlements. There is not the least doubt that the Rayats as well as the Zamindars of Bengal suffered the greatest hardships under the fluctuating and exorbitant demands of the State.

The ultimate cause of the failure of the revenue policy of Warren Hastings is to be found in his having never appreciated the position of the Zamindars. His first anxiety was to get as large a revenue as possible to finance the commercial dealings of the Company. "The good of the people was made subservient to this primary object of the Company's administration ; the rights of Princes and people, of Zamindars and Rayats were sacrificed to this dominant idea of the commercial rulers of India ; and from the point of view of its effects

upon the economic condition of the people the administration of Hastings was a failure.*”

Judicial Reforms of Warren Hastings.—A word must finally be said here concerning the judicial reforms of Warren Hastings. What distinguished him from most servants of the Company of his time was his insight into and appreciation of the legal codes and customary laws which the Hindus and Mahomedans had elaborated in the past, and of the system of the administration of justice.

The President and Council had come to exercise large judicial powers in virtue of various Charters. These powers were found inadequate and in 1726 the Court of Directors petitioned the King of England for the grant of more powers. A Charter of that year granted by George I accordingly authorised the establishment of the ‘ Mayor’s Courts ’ in Madras, Calcutta and Bombay. But as these Courts were composed of the mercantile servants of the Company “ men of the slenderest legal attainments and the slightest judicial training ”† as Kaye describes them, there was very little improvement. Nor were these Mayor’s Courts—which, moreover, administered the laws of England—in any way suitable to the Indian population under the Company which was steadily growing.

From 1765 the attention of the Company was increasingly directed to a study of the indigenous Courts and the Hindu and Mahomedan Laws as applied by them to the Indian population. But the direct administration of Civil justice was not undertaken until the year 1772 when the Company determined to stand forth in the character of Diwan. This duty devolved upon Warren Hastings, who after a survey of the indigenous system of judicial administration, explained the main reforms to be effected in his letter of August

M 5846
10933 * Dutt : Early British Rule Page 79-80. † Kaye : page 322.

15, 1772 to the Court of Directors. Commenting upon the state of judicial administration under the Native Government, Hastings, said that there were, in theory, three Courts for the decision of Civil causes (the Court of the *Diwan*, of the *Deputy* of the Diwan, and of the *Kazy*) and one for Police and Criminal matters (the Court of the *Fouzdar*) ; but, in fact, the Diwani Adalat was the only tribunal which exercised any real authority. (2) Under the old system, there were no Courts in the mofussil and all complainants had to go to Moorshedabad,—a procedure at once oppressive, expensive, and tedious. (3) Again the powers claimed by the Zamindars were a source of great oppression to the Rayats. The regular course of justice was everywhere suspended ; but every man exercised it who had the power of compelling others to submit to his decisions.

Hastings established in each District two Courts—one Civil (called Diwani Adalat) and the other Criminal (called the Fouzdari Adalat). Over the former the European Collector (who, as will be explained later on, was appointed for the collection of land revenue) was to preside ; but the Criminal Court was continued under the old Mahomedan Judges, a general supervision only over them being vested in the Collectors.

At the same time Hastings established two superior Courts at Calcutta : the Sadar Diwani Adalat for Civil matters and the Sadar Nizamat Adalat for Criminal matters. The former was to be presided over by the President and two Members of the Council, and the latter by a Mahomedan Judge, under the general supervision of the Council.

The fees and perquisites which had made the course of justice vexatious and costly under the old system were

abolished, and the Judges were given fixed salaries. The District Adalats brought justice within the easy reach of all.

The success of this great reform was jeopardized by the setting up of the Supreme Court under the Regulating Act in 1774. The conflict between this Court of the Crown and those established by the Company will be referred to in the next chapter.

After this conflict had abated, important steps were taken in 1780 and 1781 which differentiated between revenue administration and judicial administration. Thus instead of the Collectors, distinct Judicial Officers were appointed in 1780 under the title 'Superintendents of Diwani Adalat' for the trial of civil cases. And in 1781 the Judges of the Civil Courts were vested with the power, as Magistrates, of apprehending offenders, though they could not try them. The subsequent history of the judicial administration in Bengal will be resumed in connection with the Reforms of Cornwallis.

(6) VI THE EAST INDIA COMPANY IN ENGLAND.

Having described so far how the original factories of the East India Company expanded into territorial possessions and how some system of administration was established in them by Clive and Warren Hastings it is time now to turn to the history of that Company in England. The Company was formed by a Charter from Queen Elizabeth in 1600, which incorporated "George, Earl of Cumberland and 215 Knights, aldermen, and burgesses, by the name of the Governor and Company of merchants of London trading with the East Indies."

The points of permanent interest in this Charter are the following : (1) Constitution of the Company :—“ The original

Constitution was like that of a mediaeval guild. It was an organization of independent merchants for mutual protection and advantage. They undertook to obey certain 'regulations' as trade in those days with distant and unknown lands had its dangers ; each according to his choice invested his capital in such "voyages" as were duly approved and organised by the Company. This period of 'separate voyages' lasted till 1612. But many merchants began the practice of carrying over their profits from separate ventures and thus subscribed for a series of ventures. This system was called 'Investment in the Joint Stock.'* (2) Commercial privileges :—The Company enjoyed the monopoly of trade with the East Indies for the period of 15 years. The concession of such exclusive privileges was necessary at a time when trade with distant and unknown lands was full of risks and dangers. (3) Legislative powers :—The 'General Court' (which consisted of all those who had shares in the Company) was authorised to make laws and inflict punishments, for the good government of the Company and its servants, provided such laws and punishments were reasonable and not contrary to the laws of England.

Such was the type of private association of merchants, incorporated under a Royal Charter and enjoying commercial privileges and legislative powers, that was evolved for the extension of trade in the 17th Century. As Lyall points out, "the Charter expressed the delegation of certain Sovereign Powers for distinct purposes ; it amounted from one point of view to a license for private war ; and the system has since had a long and eventful and curious history which has as yet by no means ended." †

* Woodward. p. 84-85.

† Lyall p. 15.

The Company under the Stuarts.—James I on the whole was favourably disposed towards the Company; his Charter of 1609 made the Company perpetual and those of 1615 and 1623 authorised it to exercise martial law to maintain discipline among its servants. Charles I, by giving a patent to a rival Company encouraged the class of unauthorised traders with the Indies, known as ‘interlopers’. Cromwell, the father of the Navigation Acts and an enemy of the Dutch (who had given asylum to the fugitive Prince Charles), gladly took up the cause of the Company and exacted from the Dutch adequate compensation for the losses suffered by the Company in the Far East.

An important change was brought about in the constitution of the Company by the Charter of 1657. Reference has been made to the system known as “investment on the Joint Stock.” The next step was the adoption of the Joint Stock principle pure and simple. This was done in 1657. The entrance fee was £5, the minimum subscription for a shareholder £100; the holder of £500 Stock was to have a vote in the ‘General Court,’ and of £1,000 for the right of being elected as a “Committee” twenty-four of whom formed the ‘Court of Directors’. “Thus was the East India Company born again; transformed, says Hunter, from the feeble relic of the mediaeval trade-guild into the vigorous forerunner of the Modern Joint Stock Company.*

The transition of the Company from a purely commercial body to a political power is seen in the new powers—as those of erecting fortifications, coining money, making of peace and war—conferred by the Charters of Charles II, who also gave to the Company the island of Bombay which from that time became the most important possession of the Company

* Thakore page 10.

on the Western Coast of India. The transition is also marked by the following famous Resolution which the Company adopted in 1681.

"The increase of our revenues is the subject of our care as much as our trade ; it is that must maintain our force when twenty accidents may interrupt our trade ; it is that must make us a Nation in India ; without that we are but a great number of interlopers, united by His Majesty's Royal Charter, fit only to trade where nobody of power thinks it their interest to prevent us ; and upon this account it is that the wise Dutch, in all their general advices that we have seen, write ten paragraphs concerning their Government, their Civil and Military policy, warfare, and the increase of their revenue, for one paragraph they write concerning trade.*

The Company after the Revolution.—The Revolution marks an important step in the career of the East India Company. As Sir William Hunter says, it brought the Company face to face with Parliament.† The monopoly of the Company was opposed by various parties on different grounds. Some were hostile to it on the old mercantile ground that trade with the East involved a continuous drain of bullion out of the country, and bullion was regarded by this school as wealth *par excellence* ; others opposed not so much the trade as the monopoly of it enjoyed by the East India Company. Many enemies of the Company, therefore, formed a rival Company, and having secured the support of the powerful Whig party, petitioned the Crown to grant monopolies to private associations. But all authority had now passed from the Crown to Parliament and the House of Commons, therefore, in 1694, resolved "that *all* subjects of England have equal rights

* Quoted in Ilbert's Historical Introduction.

† Hunter : Vol. II, page 275.

to trade to the East Indies unless prohibited by Act of Parliament." Thus, as Ilbert says, the question whether the trading privileges of the East India Company should be continued was removed from the Council Chamber to Parliament, and the period of control by Act of Parliament over the affairs of the Company began. *

An unhealthy competition now arose between the old East India Company and a new Company that was started to take advantage of the new freedom of trade; and in 1708 the rival Companies were amalgamated under the new title "The United Company of Merchants of England trading to the East Indies."

Charters under the first two Georges.—The Company had now to be on good terms with the Ministers of the King, and to get extensions of their privileges by often bribing them. A Charter of 1726 empowered the Company to ordain bye-laws and rules, provided they were reasonable and not contrary to the laws and statutes of England and they were not to have any force or effect until they had been approved and confirmed by order in writing of the Court of Directors. This Charter also established or reconstituted the Mayor's Court in Calcutta, Bombay and Madras and expressly introduced the laws of England into the Presidency Towns. Such Charters show how the Company had become a partially sovereign body. As Macaulay says: "It is a mistake to suppose that the East India Company was merely a commercial body till the middle of the 18th Century. Commerce was its object but in order to enable it to pursue that object it had been invested from a very early period with political powers. Its political functions attracted little notice because they were merely auxiliary to commercial functions. Soon,

* Ilbert : Historical Introduction.

however, they became more important.... Long before 1765 the Company had the reality of political power. In fact it was considered by Lord Clive and Warren Hastings, as a point of policy to have the character of the Company undefined in order that they might treat the Princes in whose name they governed—as realities or non-entities as might be most convenient.” *

But it was impossible to conceal for any considerable time the transformation of the Company from a commercial body into a territorial power, and thus to evade two consequences which flowed from such a transformation:—*Viz.*, increased Parliamentary control in England, and secondly further territorial expansion in India. We shall consider the first result in the next Chapter.

* Speech 1833.

CHAPTER II

FIRST ATTEMPTS AT PARLIAMENTARY CONTROL (1774-1784).

(7) I—THE REGULATING ACT.

Misgovernment in Bengal.—Cornwall Lewis declared in the debate held in the House of Commons on the Bill that finally transferred the Government of India from the Company to the Crown, that no civilised Government existed on the face of this earth which was more corrupt, more perfidious and more rapacious than the Government of the East India Company from 1765 to 1784.

It is necessary to understand how it was possible for things to be as bad as they have been described above. The cause of the mischief has been traced to the system of 'Double Government' that was established in Bengal by Clive during his third visit to India. An account has already been given of the reforms of Clive and of the causes of their failure. He could not stop the oppression of the people by the servants of the Company or the corruption of the latter. Though the evil of private trade as carried on by the Company's servants was checked to some extent, the monopoly which was established in the production of salt proved most oppressive to the people. In fact, it was from now (1767) that the Company began to use the powerful lever of political authority to extend its commercial operations. The surplus revenue of a populous province was utilised for the purpose of making what

were called investments, or the buying of goods, raw produce and manufacture for exportation to Europe. It followed, as Burke said, that "whereas in other countries revenue arises out of commerce, in Bengal the whole foreign maritime trade, of which the Company had monopoly, was fed by the revenue."* The dangers of this 'economic drain' were aggravated by the circumstance that at no time was the system of revenue assessment and collection more harmful than it was now. The utmost was exacted from the revenue farmers who in their turn fleeced the rayats and the Zamindars. This impoverishment went on *pari pasu* with the systematic policy of killing indigenous industries of spinning and weaving which was followed by the Company.† No wonder then the famine of 1770 found the people absolutely wretched and helpless and carried away a third of their number. As Sir John Shore owned afterwards, nothing could obliterate from his mind the horrors of that dreadful time.

Dire scenes of horror, which no pen can trace
Nor rolling years from memory's page efface"‡

The two successors of Clive—Harry Verst and John Cartier did nothing to improve matters. And though Warren Hastings did a great deal to reform the judicial administration of the Province (as described in the last chapter) the condition of the people went from bad to worse. His participation in "the Rohilla War" showed that even the external relations of the Company were not free from the taint of corruption.

Parliamentary Inquiry.—If the *Diwani* produced in Bengal the result of intensifying the dangers of a situation in

* Lyall page 147. † See India under Early British Rule by Dutt.

‡ Torrens : 77-78.

which traders had become Rulers of territories, it made the Directors in England more greedy. They regarded the Diwani as marking the beginning of a golden millenium. They raised the rate of dividend to 10 and 12 p. c. when, as a matter of fact, their financial position was very critical. The stock of the East India Company was in universal demand, not only because the dividends were high but also because the political power they represented was great.

These evils were exposed by the Committees of Parliament that were appointed to inquire into the affairs of the Company.* Though Parliament limited, in 1769, the rate of dividend to 10 p. c. the embarrassment of the Company continued and it approached the Ministry of Lord North for a loan of one million pounds. "It was natural for the East India Company to account for the failure of its expectations by the misdoings of their far distant servants and to represent their punishment and reform as the most effective and remedial measures. It was natural for the Government to forward a scheme for the better administration of Indian affairs,—measures calculated to bring the Company's business at Leadenhall more within the control of Ministers at Westminster. The policy which brought into existence the Regulating Act of 1773 looked in these two directions—the removal of the evils which had their operation in the constitution of the Company and evils which had their operation

* NOTE :—To escape from the Parliamentary inquiries the Directors proposed to send out a Commission of supervisors to India over which Edmund Burke was asked to preside, but he refused. " How different might have been the subsequent course of events in India, had even a ground-plan whereon to build had been laid down by the noble, just, generous far-sighted intellect of him who has been truly designated by Lord Macaulay as beyond comparison the greatest man of his time." Torrens 77-78.

in India ”* and its provisions can be grouped as dealing with the one or the other set of evils.

Evils in England.—Reference has been made to the Court of Proprietors and the Court of Directors of the East India Company. The qualification for voting in the former was the possession of stock of the value of £500 and in the latter of £2000. The Directors were 24 in number and were annually elected. For the transaction of business they were divided into ‘Committees’ of which the following were important. (1) The Committee of Correspondence, which was the most important, and in charge of the correspondence to and from India. (2) The Committee of Law suits ; (3) of Treasury, to provide for the payment of dividends etc., negotiate loans &c., (4) of Warehouses, mostly dealing with the import of commodities made in India ; (5) of Accounts ; (6) of Buying, attending to the export of articles made in England ; (7) of the House, in charge of the repairs of the India House ; (8) of Shipping ; (9) of Account, of freight, demurrage etc. on private trade ; (10) and finally, one for preventing the growth of private trade of the servants of the Company.

It will be seen from this short account that a very elaborate system had been evolved in England for the management of the affairs of the Company in India. The chief defect arose from the ‘trafficking’ in votes. The ambition of the Servants of the Company, when they had made their fortune in India by fair or foul means and after their return to England where they were called ‘Nabobs’ in derision was either to manipulate votes in the India Office, or to enter Parliament. Parliamentary corruption and the consequent demand for Parliamentary reform which begin in the

* Firminger : Introduction page 255.

latter half of the Eighteenth century can be traced to the illgotten wealth of these " Indian Nabobs." The Regulating Act tried to mitigate this defect so far as the East India Company was concerned by raising the qualification for a Proprietor to £1000 and by prolonging the period for which the Directors were elected, a quarter, instead of the whole body, being renewed annually.

Turing next to the evils that had their operation in India, the chief remedies adopted by the Regulating Act were the following :

- (1) A new executive Government for Bengal.
- (2) Its control over the Presidencies of Madras and Bombay.
- (3) Purguing the Civil Service of abuses.
- (4) Setting up of a Supreme Court at Calcutta.
- (5) A new procedure for the making of Regulations.

*A new Government for Bengal :—*We have already referred to the defect of the system of a President and Council managing the affairs of the Company in each of the three Presidencies. The Members (generally senior merchants) were too numerous and were scattered over the whole Presidency and rarely attended the Council Meetings at Calcutta. We have also seen how Clive substituted ' a Select Committee ' for consultation in the place of this unwieldy body. But the greatest defect of the system was that all members (including the President) were servants of the same Company and thus there was no independent check over them.

By the Regulating Act, the Civil and Military Government of Bengal, Bihar and Orissa was vested in a Governor-General and four Councillors—all of whom were named in the Act—who were to hold office for five years and who were not removable in the meantime except by the King on the representation of the Court of Directors. It is important to understand the

exact meaning of this provision. Parliament sought to control the actions of the Governors by imposing upon them Councils consisting of men specially sent out from England, and such as were not servants of the Company. As Briggs says, for the first time, "the King's Government assumed the privilege of appointing Commissioners as members of the Councils abroad to watch the proceedings of the Company's Governors."*

Relations with other Presidencies :—Before the Act the three Presidencies were absolutely independent of each other, and responsible only to the Company in England. By the Act the supremacy of the Bengal Presidency over the other two was definitely declared, at any rate in the declaration of war and negotiations for peace.

Purification of the Services.—Before the Act, the pay of the Civil and Military Servants of the Company was almost nominal and few resisted the temptation of substantially increasing it (1) by extorting bribes, (2) by receiving presents, (3) by engaging in private trade and (4) by advancing money at usurious rates to Indian Princes. By the Act, liberal salaries were provided for the higher classes of servants and all were prohibited from practising the evil methods above mentioned, on pain of being fined, imprisoned and sent to England for trial.

The Supreme Court.—Reference has already been made to the judicial reforms of Warren Hastings and to the existence in Calcutta of the Mayor's Court which was established by the Charter of 1726.

An appeal against the Mayor's Court lay to the President and Council at Calcutta, and in the last resort to the King-in-Council in England. The fundamental defect of this system was that there was no separation between the executive and the

* Briggs : page 218.

judicial officers of the Company. The very merchants whose conduct was to be judicially examined by the President and Council, were members of the Council.

But the Supreme Court was not a Court of the Company at all, but one established by a Royal Charter and consisting of a Chief Judge and three Puisne Judges. It was to exercise Civil, Criminal, Admiralty and Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and its jurisdiction was to extend to all British subjects in Bengal, Bihar and Orissa, except the Governor-General and his Council who could not be arrested or imprisoned in any action or suit proceeding in the Supreme Court.

With regard to the native inhabitants of Bengal, Bihar and Orissa suits might be filed against them in the Supreme Court with their consent. An appeal against the Supreme Court was to lie to the King-in-Council in England.

We come now to the last provision made by the Act *i.e.*, for the making of *Regulations* :—The Governor-General and Council were to have power ' to make Regulations for the good order and Civil Government of the possessions of the Company. The Regulations so framed were required to be registered and published in the Supreme Court with the assent of the Court, and might be set aside by the King in Council.

Criticism of the Act.—Before proceeding to criticise the Act, it must be pointed out that it is the first instance of Parliament dealing with the affairs of India by means of an enactment. Parliament had no precedent to guide it, and as such, it has to be judged leniently. Lyall rightly says that the illconstructed Regulating Act, " stands towards our latest system in the same relation as does the earliest traction engine to the present locomotive " *. Further, it must be remembered that the

* Lyall, page 152.

Act was based upon the 'theory of separation of powers-legislative, judicial and executive' which was so popular in Europe at that time. Each was to be independent of and a check over the other two. Thus the 'Regulations' made by the Governor-General and Council were required to be registered in the independent Supreme Court, which in its turn was to be a check upon the servants of the Company. But this system of checks and balances was not suited to the position of the Company in Bengal, and thus during the whole period of the first Governor-General under the Act—Warren Hastings, he had to contend against difficulties caused by the operation of the Act.

Constitution of the Council.—Out of the four Members of the Council that were named in the Act, Francis, Clavering, Monson and Barwell, the Governor-General could depend upon the support of the last, whereas Francis had come out to India with an inveterate prejudice against Hastings and soon formed, with the help of Clavering and Monson, a standing opposition to him. And as the Governor-General was always bound by the vote of the majority, he was rendered absolutely powerless during the two years that the majority was against him i.e.. until the death of Monson turned the tables against Francis, The Council even proceeded to undo the work which Hastings had accomplished as the Governor of Bengal during the preceding two years. This seriously undermined the position of the Governor-General not only in Bengal, but with regard to the control he was called upon to exercise over the other two Presidencies.

In this respect also the provisions of the Act were defective, for the extent of control to be exercised over the subordinate Presidencies was at once small and undefined. How serious the situation was capable of becoming is well brought out by a review of the Wars of Warren Hastings. He waged the Rohilla

War before he became the Governor-General. There was no quarrel between the Rohillas and the English. But they had sought the help of the Nabab-Vazier of Oudh in warding off the encroachments of the Marathas (their inveterate enemies since the battle of Panipat) upon their country. Before the Nabab's help was forth-coming however, the Marathas withdrew (on account of the Revolution at Poona caused by the murder of the Peshwa Narayanrao 1772;) the Rohillas refused to pay the agreed price of Rs. forty lacs for the Wazier's promised intervention and the Vazier now sought the help of an English Army to invade and conquer Rohilkund. The power of the Rohillas was destroyed and their whole country annexed to Oudh. And as the latter was an ally of the English, their possessions in Bengal, Bihar and Orissa became doubly secure behind the possessions of Oudh. But if Hastings must bear the whole responsibility for the Rohilla War the other two Wars (with the Marathas, and Hyder) were not of his making. He protested against the Bombay Government interfering with the affairs of the Peshwa, and the Madras Government inviting the hostility of Hyder. The Marathas and Hyder, after each had proved superior over the English armies in the field of battle, now made a common cause and at no time were things as bad as they were in 1780. But Hastings rose to the occasion : an attack upon Cuttock, and the successful storming of the Fort of Gwalior induced Raghoji Bhosala and Mahadaji Scindia respectively to make separate treaties with Hastings and to offer their intervention to negotiate with Poona ; and the death of Hyder in 1782 removed the last obstacle to the making of a lasting peace with the Peshwa (the treaty of Salbye). Thus in 1785 when Hastings resigned his office, the English were at peace with the native powers of India. "With the termination of this War ended the only period, in the long con-

test between England and the native powers, during which the position of the English in India was for a time seriously jeopardized. That the English dominion emerged from this prolonged struggle uninjured though not unshaken, is the result due to the political intrepidity of Warren Hastings.”*

This defect of the Act was removed by the Amending Act of 1786 which authorized the Governor-General to override the majority of the Council, on his own individual responsibility.

But it was in the matter of the clauses dealing with the Supreme Court that the Regulating Act was most defective. We have already seen how Warren Hastings had established Judicial Courts in each District, and made the Governor-General in Council the Supreme Court both in Civil and Criminal matters. These Courts had been established to exercise the powers received by the Company under the Diwani. They had jurisdiction over all subjects of the Company-British and Indian,—and they mostly applied the written or customary law of the party that had sought their help.

The relations of the Supreme Court with these Courts of the Company were not precisely defined. The Supreme Court, on the ground that it was constituted by a Royal Charter, claimed the right of hearing appeals even against the highest Courts of the Company, i.e., the Governor-General in Council.

Further they claimed jurisdiction upon the entire native population and not merely upon 'British subjects' as mentioned in the Act. There was no proper definition of the expression 'British Subject'. The Supreme Court included in that term the British and Indian servants of the East India Company employ-

* Lyall, page 176.

ed in the administration of justice or the collection of revenue, and even the land holders and farmers of revenue.

It was thus inevitable that the Supreme Court should come in conflict with the Governor-General in Council, which was at once the supreme judicial and executive authority of the Company in Bengal.

The difficulty was partly owing to the failure to understand the intention of Parliament in setting up the Supreme Court. "The Judges in the Mayor's Courts of the Company were junior servants of the Company, and removable at the pleasure of the President and Council. They had to decide, without any professional knowledge of the law, cases affecting the property, the liberty, and the lives of British subjects and their native dependants. The process of an appeal from the Court to the King-in-Council was tedious. The institution of the Supreme Court was, therefore, an act of reformation rather than of innovation. It was not intended to supersede or trespass upon the judicatures deriving their authority from the Moghul Constitution. The Directors looked upon the Supreme Court as an instrument to terrorize the servants in Bengal. Its establishment enabled them to take the trial of alleged offences of its servants out of the hands of a complacent Council Board, and have such cases determined by the awe-inspiring Puisne Judges of the Crown."*

But, as already stated, the Supreme Court in exercising jurisdiction over the servants of the Company, particularly in the matter of revenue collection where there was the utmost scope for oppression and corruption—was bound to come in conflict with the Governor-General in Council. In 1781 a Parliamentary Committee was appointed to inquire into the

* Firminger : Introduction page 256-57.

serious situation that thus arose in Bengal, and the Amending Act of that year was passed. It laid down that the Governor-General and Council, jointly or severally, or other servants of the Company were not to be subject to the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court in their official capacity. Thus the position taken by Warren Hastings in his struggle against the Supreme Court was finally vindicated by Parliament.

As Firminger ably points out, (in his Introduction to the Fifth Report) "the Survey of the years 1774-80 shows the fact that the method of the authors of the Regulating Act had produced a most serious harvest of evils. That method was to impose a feeling of responsibility on the Company's servants by confronting persons accused of oppressive conduct with the displeasure of a Supreme Court composed of His Majesty's Puisne Judges. This procedure was calculated to intimidate the fearful as well as to restrain the overbold; it ruined the moral influence of the executive, and exposed the officers of Government to continuous persecution by litigious or irresponsible persons. That the Government of the Country was seriously disturbed by the intervention of the Court in matters belonging to the Diwani cannot be doubted, though the blame lies with the Act and not with the Judges."*

Nor was the Supreme Court popular with the Native population. As Mr. Cowell says "the English lawyers struck the greatest fear among the Native population;" and Macaulay described the rule of the Supreme Court as a Reign of Terror. The Court was charged with stopping the wheels of Government by technicalities of English law and of effecting a total dissolution of social order.

The conflict between the Supreme Court and the Sadar Diwani Adalat *i.e.*, the Governor-General in Council in their

* Firminger Page 257

judicial capacity was also decided in favour of the latter by the Amending Act of 1781 which confirmed the appellate jurisdiction of the Adalat. But Warren Hastings found that the Governor General and Council had not the proper machinery to receive appeals from the inferior Courts, to revise their decisions or to check them generally. He, therefore, induced his friend Sir Eliza Impey to become the Superintendent of the Sadar Diwani Adalat. "Among other things this would be a means of lessening the distance between the Board (*i.e.*, the Governor-General and Council) and the Supreme Court which has been the cause of their recent conflict." *Though this arrangement was discontinued the next year under instructions from the Court of Directors, the wisdom of Hastings was shown by the course followed in 1861 when the Supreme Court was united with the Sadr Diwani Adalat, in the High Court.

Conclusion.—It will thus be seen that the lessons taught by the Regulating Act were:—(a) that a majority of the Council cannot be, at any rate under the conditions of difficult communication with the Home Authorities which obtained at that time the ultimate authority in India, which must be the Governor General armed with the power (though the power may rarely be used) of over-riding the decision of that majority; (b) that the resort to the method of controlling the Indian executive by an independent Supreme Court was premature; and finally, (c) the disastrous working of the Act "ended with the conviction on the part of Parliament, that the endeavour to subject the Local Government (*i.e.*, the Governor-General and Council) to direct Parliamentary control was a complete failure." †

At the same time, the Regulating Act undoubtedly marks an important stage: "the administrative centre was now de-

* Firminger 287 † Cornwall Lewis : Speech 1853 in the H. of C.

finitely located at Calcutta, with the Governor-General as its acknowledged head, invested with the chief control of the foreign relations of the three Presidencies, and deriving his authority from a Statute of the British Parliament.”*

(8)

II—PITT'S INDIA ACT OF 1784.

Pitt's India Act 1784.—These lessons of the Regulating Act were not lost upon those Members of the House of Commons who were taking a keen interest in what was happening in India. Philip Francis after his return to England had formed a definite party in Parliament that was pledged to bring about the recall of Warren Hastings and to institute legal proceedings against him. The hands of this party were strengthened by the accession of Edmund Burke to it as its leader, and by the reports of the many questionable means adopted by Hastings to get money to carry on his wars. Parliament was thus compelled to appoint two Committees one under Burke and the other under Dundas—to conduct an inquiry into the doings of Hastings, and as their reports were unfavourable to the Governor-General and the Chief Justice (Sir E. Impey), it demanded their recall. But the Court of Proprietors (in which votes could be easily manipulated by any interested group) refused to recall Hastings. A grave constitutional crisis thus arose. The problem now was, not how to *regulate* the affairs of the Company *in Bengal*, but how to *control* the Company *in England*.

The first solution offered was that by Charles Fox, who at this time, was in power along with Lord North, in what is notorious as the “hated coalition.” Fox proposed to distinguish sharply between the commercial operations of the Company

* Lyall page 156.

from their political dealings ; he next proposed to abolish the Courts of Proprietors and Directors, and replace them by two bodies of ' Commissioners '. One (which was the less important of the two) was to deal with the commercial details of the Company. To the other, which was to consist of 7 Commissioners, *all named in the Act*, was to be entrusted the entire and absolute management of the political affairs of the country such as the appointment and dismissal of the servants of the Company, the administration of the territories and revenues of the Company etc. Vacancies during the first five years were to be filled by the King alone.

Herein lay the fatal weakness of the proposals of Fox. It was rightly contended by his enemies that the proposed plan would place the entire patronage of the East India Company in the hands of the Ministers of the Crown, and that this would seriously endanger the constitution of England. The Ministers would use the Indian patronage as an irresistible lever to control votes in Parliament and thus make themselves independent and despotic. It is to the alarm caused by this constitutional aspect of the Bill that its failure must finally be attributed, though the open hostility of King George III to Fox was the immediate cause of the Bill being thrown out in the House of Lords, and the Minister himself being forthwith dismissed.

The task of dealing with the Indian problem now devolved upon the younger Pitt, the successor of Fox. He carefully left untouched the patronage of the Court of Directors. Nor did he introduce such a radical change in the constitution of the Company as was proposed by Fox. He retained both the organs of the Company namely the Proprietors and the Directors. The latter were also allowed to manage their commerce as they liked. But their Political affairs were definitely brought

under the control of the Imperial Government. This was accomplished by the creation of a Board of six Commissioners known popularly as the Board of Control. It was to consist of the Chancellor of the Exchequer, one of the Secretaries of State for the time being, and of four other Privy Councillors appointed by the King and holding office during pleasure. To this Body was committed the "superintendence, direction and control of all acts, operations, and concerns which in anywise relate to the Civil or Military Government or revenues of the British territorial possessions in the East Indies." The Board was to have an effective control over the entire correspondence to and from India. A 'Committee of Secrecy' was formed consisting of the Chairman, the Deputy Chairman and the senior Director, and when the Board issued orders requiring secrecy, the Committee of Secrecy was bound to send the orders to India without informing the other Directors. Under the changes made by Pitt, the Court of Proprietors was reduced to a position of insignificance. Their activity was confined to the receipt of dividends and the election of the Directors. The latter retained their right of making appointments in India, though the Crown was vested with the power of recalling any of the servants of the Company.

The changes made by Pitt's Act in the system of Government *in India* were neither numerous nor important. The Councils of the Governor-General and of the Governors were to have three instead of four Members, one of them being the Commander in-Chief. The control of the Governor-General and Council over the subordinate Presidencies was extended to include the application of the revenues of the Presidencies.

But the Governor-General and Council were definitely precluded from making war or peace with the Indian Princes without the permission of the Court of Directors.

PART II

THE SYSTEM OF DOUBLE GOVERNMENT

CHAPTER III

HOME ADMINISTRATION (1785—1858)

(9) I—THE BOARD OF CONTROL.

Introductory :—In this chapter I shall trace the system of the ‘Home Administration’ of Indian affair as it came to be evolved after Pitt’s Act of 1784 until it was abolished, after the Mutiny, in 1858. The next two chapters will be devoted to a general review of the expansion of the British Dominions in India during the same period. The four succeeding chapters will contain an account of the administration of India during the regime of the East India Company.

Supremacy of the Board of Control.—The Regulating Act proceeded on the theory that Parliament could *directly* control the actions of the Governors of the East India Company in India by sending out Englishmen as members of their Councils or as Judges of the Supreme Court. But as this experiment led to disastrous consequences—particularly to the weakening of the Executive in India—Parliament adopted a different method—namely that of *controlling* the policy of the Court of Directors in England, so far, of course, as it related to the political affairs of the E. I. Company, leaving the Directors the entire management of their commercial

monopoly as well as their Patronage. This was the principle underlying Pitt's India Act, which introduced what is known as the Double Government *i.e.*, of the Court of Directors and the Board of Control. But, soon, on account of various causes, all political power gravitated into the hands of the President of the Board of Control and the Directors were reduced to mere figure-heads satisfied with the 'Patronage'. It is necessary to see how this was brought about.

One cause was the changes effected in the composition of the Board from time to time. Under the Act of 1784 it consisted of 6 Members three of whom were the two Secretaries of State and the Chancellor of the Exchequer. The remaining three were nominated members, and all might be Members of Parliament. The Board was vested with full power and authority to direct and control all affairs and concerns which in any wise related to the civil and military government and revenues of India. The inclusion of the two Secretaries and the Chancellor provided for the business of the Board being brought, when necessary, under the view and within the control of the Cabinet. But the active and practically the sole control of affairs rested with the nominated Commissioners whose salaries were chargeable to the revenues of India.

The constitution of the Board was modified by an Act of 1793 when the First Commissioner was called the President of the Board of Control; the two commissioners might be appointed from outside the Privy-Council, and the Secretary of the Board might be a Member of Parliament so that his office became a party appointment. Under this change the collective action of the Board became a mere fiction, and all power came to reside in the hands of the President who derived additional importance from his being a member of

the Cabinet. This process of concentration of power was completed when the number of commissioners came to be successively reduced by Acts of Parliament and after 1841 the Board consisted only of the President, the first to hold office under the new conditions being Ellenborough.

It is obvious that in the government of a distant Dependency, everything depended upon correspondence and a complicated arrangement for the receipt and sending out of despatches to and from India had been evolved. The Board was given full access to all the records and correspondence of the Company; the Court of Directors were required to supply copies of all orders and despatches sent to India within eight days of sending them and all despatches from India immediately on their receipt. No order could be sent to India without being first submitted to the Board for approval; full power was given to the Board to make alterations in the despatch, which the Court were bound to send in its altered form after, if they so desired, an exchange of opinion theron; and if the Court failed to frame despatches within fourteen days, the Board might itself frame despatches which the Court was bound to send on. Further, a Secret Committee (limited in practice to the Chairman and Deputy Chairman) was constituted and sworn to secrecy, through which Committee the Board might send secret orders to the Government of India, which the Secret Committee was bound to transmit as from themselves. Similarly, any despatches from India marked 'secret' were to be recorded at the India Office in the Secret Committee and delivered to the Board without being seen by the Directors.

The Position of the President.—The tendency of the President to domineer over his colleagues was emphasised by the

procedure followed by the Court of Directors for the transaction of business, and by the composition of that body. As already stated the Directors were twenty-four in number, the qualification for election being the possession of £s. 1000 of stock. But as one-fourth of the body went out of office every four years and remained out for one year, the permanent number was really thirty, twenty-four of whom formed at any time the Court, and 6 remained waiting until their turn of re-election came. For it should be noted that re-election was the general rule and most enjoyed a pretty long tenure of office. But as election was an expensive affair and entailed a deal of canvassing, and as the main attraction of the position of a Director was the exercise of patronage which is not always a congenial business, the best servants of the Company returning to England were prevented from becoming Directors. Very often, indeed, the scheming and the unscrupulous got themselves elected. The Court transacted business through Committees. In addition to the 'Secret Committee' consisting of the Chairman, Deputy Chairman and the Senior Director, (which, as a matter of fact, came to exercise what political power was left to the Court), this body had three other Committees. (1) for Political and Military matters, (2) for finance and home, and (3) for revenue, judicial and legislative matters.

As every detail of Indian Administration had to be referred home correspondence assumed stupendous proportions. It was physically impossible for the Directors or for the President of the Board to do justice to the 'shiploads' of drafts and despatches. The inevitable result was that most of the work was left to be done by the numerous army of clerks maintained at the India Office.

The method of carrying on business was this : every despatch that came from India went to the Examiner's Department, and the Chairman, his Deputy and the Senior Merchant, with the help of the Examiner formed the draft of the reply. It was then *privately* discussed between the Chairman of the Court and the President of the Board, any difference of opinion being removed at this stage, which was known as that of "previous communication." The draft—as now finally settled was sent to the Committee of the Court to which it belonged. The Committee suggested changes in the draft, but they were practically of no avail. The draft was then discussed in the whole Court, and then forwarded to the President as an official communication from the Court. It will be thus seen that the President settled the draft *before* availing himself of the knowledge and experience of the Directors. When it is further remembered that he, as well as the Secretary of the Board were members of a political party and came in and went out of office according to the fate of their party, and that both were generally ignorant about the conditions of India, one can realise how the administration of India became entirely irresponsible.

Nor could the Directors be an effective check over the President. As they received only £3000 as salary, their real remuneration consisted in the exercise of patronage which was distributed as follows : Every year the number of appointments to be made in India was first ascertained, and it was divided into twenty-eight equal parts. Two were assigned to the Chairman and Deputy Chairman of the Court, two to the President of the Board, and the remaining twenty-four to the 24 Directors. It has been calculated that the value of each share of patronage was about £15,000.

This patronage system produced two fatal results upon the position and tone of the Court of Directors. (1) It made them entirely subservient to the President, lest he should, by his Parliamentary influence, deprive them of their patronage, as Fox once threatened to do. (2) The system also made them grasping at every increase in the revenues, and at every extension in the territories, of India, for both increased their patronage and, therefore, power.

An interesting proof of the very real power that came to be exercised by the President is furnished by the practice of 'private' correspondence to which most of the Governors and the Governor-General were obliged to resort. It was essential for them to be on good terms with the President and the Ministry at Home to whom, indeed, they owed their appointment.

While thus the whole authority of superintendence, direction and control of Indian affairs was passing into the hands of the President (who, of course, was a member of the ministry), his irresponsibility to Parliament was being increased by a silent change in the attitude of the House of Commons towards Indian questions. Before Pitt's Act, the House of Commons, thanks to the frequent financial embarrassment of the Company, and to the interest of Members like Fox and Burke, was well-informed about the state of affairs in India. In fact, as the monopoly of trade enjoyed by the East India Company was galling to the interest of those who were excluded from that monopoly, no opportunity was lost of criticising the action of the Court of Directors or of their Servants in India. But after the Act of 1784 it became the constant anxiety of the Ministry of the day to keep the affairs of India

away from the gaze of the House of Commons. This was found to be the more easy, as the commercial monopoly of the E. I. Company was partially relaxed in 1813 and wholly abolished in 1833. No doubt at the time of each renewal of the Charter Committees were appointed, and very valuable evidence collected regarding administration in India; but the interest of Parliamentary debates was confined to the commercial monopoly of the Company. Little or no notice was taken of the great measures e.g. land-revenue settlements, public works, judicial administration, &c. that were being adopted in India by the Servants of the Company.

The controlling hand of the President was more heavily felt in foreign affairs than in affairs of internal administration. In fact it should never be forgotten "that the whole foreign policy of the E. I. Company was regulated by the Board of Control—that in the solution of the most vital questions—questions of peace and war—affecting the finances of the country, and therefore, the means of internal improvement, the Court of Directors had no more power than the Mayor and Aldermen of any Corporation Town. The happiness of the people of India was dependent less upon the will of a deliberative body of four and twenty English gentlemen, a large majority of whom had studied India under an Indian sky—who, as a body had no connection with Party, no dependence on the fate of ministries, whose official lives did not hang upon an adverse vote, and who could therefore pursue from year's end to year's end a consistent course of administrative conduct—than upon the caprice of a single man who may be gone to-morrow, who may preside over the India Board and govern India for a fortnight, and then be suddenly deposed by some gust of Parliamentary uncertainty, by the

mistaken tactics of an unexperienced Party leader, or the neglect of an inefficient whip.”*

That the autocracy of the President--though it involved India in costly, unfruitful, and aggressive wars on the frontier, and though it led to the adoption of measures of doubtful legality and justice for territorial expansion at the cost of the Native States, did not, in practice, lead to serious political trouble was due (1) to the efficiency of some of the earlier incumbents of this office; (2) to the moral support which the President was compelled to enlist, of the Cabinet as a whole for measures of importance; (3) to the vigilant check which many directors who were also Members of Parliament exercised upon him from their seats in the two Houses; (4) and above all to the diligence with which harmony of views and methods was maintained by means of ‘Private Correspondence’ between the President in England and the Governor-General in India.

CHAPTER IV.

HALF A CENTURY OF TERRITORIAL EXPANSION (1785—1835.)

(10)

I—LORD CORNWALLIS.

We saw in the second Chapter how the policy of ‘Non-intervention’ was imposed upon Lord Cornwallis by the Act of 1784. Conditions in Northern India were favourable for adhering to such a policy. The English possessions were safe behind the ‘buffer’ State of Oudh and the Nabab Vazier of that province depended entirely upon the Company for the defence of his territories. In the remaining portion of Northern India, the Marathas were everywhere in the ascendancy, and Mahadaji Scindia, particularly on account of his ‘understanding’ with Warren Hastings, had become the real authority behind the Imperial Throne at Delhi. Lord Cornwallis refused to disturb this ascendancy of the Scindia, and therefore did not help (1788) the son of Shaha Alam, who was a fugitive at Benares, to recover the Throne of Delhi from the Marathas.

But things in South India were shaping themselves differently. Here there was a balance of power between Tipoo (who was smarting under the treaty of Mangalore 1784, and was anxious to check the progress of the English); the Marathas who (now that their internal troubles were composed by the defeat of Raghunathrao, and that the power of Nana Farnavis was firmly established at Poona) wished to regain the territories they had lost during their domestic troubles, from both

Tipoo and the Nizam of Hyderabad ; and finally, the last Prince, who was the weakest of the three, and therefore, most anxious to get English support, against the Marathas and Tipoo.

Tipoo was a great believer in the value of French help in his struggle against the English. He sent out an embassy to the Court of Louis XVI. The immediate cause of the outbreak of war was Tipu's attack upon the Raja of Travancore, an ally of the English. Lord Cornwallis formed a Triple Alliance between the English, the Marathas and the Nizam, and personally directed the operations of this war as he combined in himself the offices of the Governor-General and Commander-in-Chief. Tipu was defeated and forced to part with half of his dominions and three crores of rupees. The acquired territory was equally distributed among the Allies, the English getting Malabar, Coorg, Dindigul, Baramahal, and the command of the passes through which Hyder used to descend upon Madras. Thus the Madras possessions were rendered quite immune from further trouble from Tipoo.

(11)

II—MARQUIS OF WELLESLEY.

Wellesley's Policy—If Lord Cornwallis had to engage himself in a single war against a single power in South India Wellesley made the whole of India the theatre of extensive wars and more extensive conquests.

Mention has been made of how the struggle between the English and the French in Europe only helped to extend British power in India. The same thing was now repeated. The whole of Europe was fighting against Revolutionary France in the person of Napoleon Bonaparte. As the latter could not, on account of the Naval supremacy of the English, make a direct invasion of England, he wished to strike at his enemy in India where he found a willing ally in Tipu Sultan. Wellesley was

thoroughly imbued with that anti-French spirit with which the younger Pitt was fighting Napoleon in Europe and he was determined to check French designs in India. Immediately on his arrival in India, therefore, he found himself involved in a war with Tipu in which Tipu was completely vanquished and killed. The Mahomedan kingdom of Hyder and Tipoo was altogether destroyed, and out of a portion of its still extensive dominions was recreated the Hindu Raj of Mysore which was restored to a representative of the ancient Hindu Royal Family.

But Wellesley was not to be satisfied with a local or temporary solution of the great question he had proposed to himself, what was to be the status of the English in India? Though they had come to hold a commanding position in Northern and Southern India their territorial possessions were confined to Bengal and small portions of Madras and Bombay. Wellesley was convinced that the condition for the English continuing in India was not that they were *one* among many Indian powers contending for supremacy, but that they were *the* paramount power in India. The result of the pursuit of this policy has been summed up in the statement: that under Wellesley's direction the British Empire *in* India was transformed into British Empire of India.

Wellesley's Subsidiary Alliances.—With this object in view he set about bringing all the remaining Indian powers in a relation of subordination to the British authority, by means of "subsidiary alliances." One of the first powers to be thus 'allied' with was the Nizam. He was indignant at the policy of neutrality adopted by Sir John Shore in his struggle against the Marathas who had defeated him crushingly in the battle of Kharda (1795), and who, out of resentment for his desertion, was reorganizing his army with the help of French Officers. But a fresh treaty with him (September 1798) was concluded

and the Nizam disbanded his new levies under French Officers, accepted an English subsidiary force to be stationed at Hyderabad and agreed to cede the territories that had fallen to his lot in the late partition of Mysore as the price of the force, and above all left his relations with the Peshwa to be shaped by the English.

As these alliances proved a powerful weapon of reducing the Indian powers to a position of subordination, a word must be said here about their general characteristics. The Prince (with whom such a treaty was concluded) had (*a*) to leave his disputes with and claims upon his neighbours to the arbitration of the English, (*b*) to discontinue all connection with foreign European powers, particularly the French, (*c*) to entertain within his territory a British Subsidiary Force for his own personal protection and for the security of his possessions, and finally, (*d*) to cede territory to the Company by way of payment for the subsidiary force.

Wellesley only developed a system that had been begun by Warren Hastings of placing English army at the disposal of a Prince for a monetary consideration, as in the Rohilla War, and of the treaty with the Nabab Vazier of Oudh made by Sir John Shore, by which, for the sum of 76 lacs of rupees the Company undertook to protect that Prince. Also before Wellesley, the British Contingent was stationed *outside* the territory of the Prince, was paid for by monthly or annual *cash* allowances, and helped and protected the Prince on the basis of *equality*.

But this arrangement was found to be unsatisfactory as the payment of the force often fell into arrears, and, as it was still possible for the Prince to carry on his foreign relations, he could have an army of his own trained and officered by the French.

Wellesley had seen how on the European Continent the younger Pitt was carrying on the struggle against Napoleon by giving subsidies to the Continental Powers. In adopting this policy of Pitt, Wellesley reversed it and in return for subsidies (converted into territorial cessions for regularity of payment) he placed contingents of his army at the disposal of Indian Princes. The Company was thus enabled to increase vastly its own army at the cost of the Princes, and also to have it stationed in the very heart of the territory of the Princes. At the same time the danger of French influence at the Courts of Indian Princes was removed altogether. And the Company could effectively check the foreign relations of the Prince, who was thus isolated from the rest of India, and at the same time made dependent upon English support.

But the effect of these alliances on the Princes was deplorable. Even Arthur Wellesley was apprehensive about dangers of such alliances. They led to the complete annihilation of the military power of the Native States with which they were contracted. They removed the incentive on the part of the Native Rulers to be great and warlike and sympathetic towards their subjects.

The demoralising tone of such alliances has been also forcibly pointed out by Torrens. "Lord Wellesley's purpose in persuading the Native Governments to maintain within their confines bodies of British troops, organised on our model, instead of Native troops officered by Frenchmen, was too obvious to be misconceived. It was a substantial pledge exacted from jealous neighbours, that they finally renounced the hope of any other European alliance, and all privity in designs which led that way. It was obviously meant and felt, if not in public words declared, to be a guarantee against the development of schemes hostile to English interests and the growth of English

ascendency. Under the direction of an intelligent Resident at the Native Court, a compact force, well armed, well paid and well in hand, would render sudden tumult abortive and to cause secret intrigue to waver continually and to look back ere committing itself too far; and in the last event of open secession (or, as it soon came to be termed, revolt) it would form a rallying point for any friends it had, and an outpost capable of defence till succour should arrive. It was the glove of mail courteously but undisguisedly laid upon the shoulder of the Native Ruler, with an irresistible but patronizing air, felt to be a little heavy and a little hard at first, but soon destined to become habitual. Slowly but steadily it begot that sense of security and irresponsibility in the Prince and his advisers which has ever proved to be the gangrene of authority, for which there is no cure."

Nor should a further disadvantage of such alliances be allowed to pass unnoticed; these alliances gave frequent opportunities of interfering in the internal affairs of the Ruler, and at the same time, the ever-recurring adjustment of payments served as the pretence for further annexation as in the case of Berar taken from the Nizam as late as 1903.

And Sir Thomas Munro (in a letter addressed to Lord Hastings) alluded "to the inevitable tendency of the subsidiary alliance to bring every Native State under the exclusive domination of the British Government. "I can have no doubt that the subsidiary system must everywhere run its course and destroy every Government which it undertakes to protect."

Relative strengths of the English and the Marathas.—From Nizam, Wellesley turned his attention to the Peshwa and the Maratha Confederacy of which he was the head. To appreciate the struggle between him and the Marathas we ought to understand the great change that had come about in the fighting

strength and resources of the English and the Native Princes since the days of Plassey and the battle of Panipat. The Indian powers against whom the English had to fight their first campaigns—the Nawabs of Karnatic and Bengal, were the weakest and the least warlike. It was only when the foreigners had thoroughly entrenched themselves in Bengal and the sea-coast of Madras that they were called upon to measure their strength against Hyder and Tipu and the Marathas. Both the Mahomedan Rulers had, with the help of French Officers reorganised their armies upon European models, and, in the case of the Marathas, the same system was first adopted by Mahadaji Scindia who had excellent opportunities of studying the organization and equipment of the armies of the English, in the First Maratha War. Having played a decisive part in that War, it was largely through him that the treaty of Salbye (1784) was concluded with the English. It was the ambition of Mahadaji to build up for himself a political power in North India and to use it afterwards in establishing his influence in the Court of Poona. His whole scheme depended upon a strong and well-organised military force and this work was entrusted to the French adventurer General De Boigne. Holkar—who was always a rival of Scindia—did not lag behind in having a similar military force, though on a smaller scale. But he depended more upon the leaders of the Pathan free-booters and did not quite give up the traditional methods of warfare as practised by the Marathas.

In any case it is obvious that while the Mahomedan and Maratha Princes were realising the necessity of a trained army, and naturally turned to the French Officers for help in this direction, their common antagonist the English had organised into a disciplined and well-appointed army the warlike material which they got in India itself. "The sepoy army of England was

recruited and gradually developed out of the immense floating mass of professional mercenaries who roamed about India in those days....With artillery served by men who stood fast to their guns, with a few red-coated English battalions with a strong contingent of well drilled native infantry and some excellent light cavalry, the Company's army presented a combination of war material that only wanted good handling to dispose of any opponent in Southern India."*

The last and greatest opponents of the English were the Marathas. They though severely defeated at Paniput (1761) had built up an extensive Empire, thanks to the superior organization of their armies under great leaders like the Gaikwads, the Holkars, the Scindias and Bhosles. These leaders were loyal to the Central Authority of the Peshwa until the death of the great Madhavrao I in 1772. But after the First Maratha War (1775-83) the loyalty of the Maratha leaders diminished *pari passu* with the weakening of the Central Authority, and with the excellent opportunities each of those leaders obtained to carve out a dominion for himself in Central and Northern India. Holkar and Scindhia particularly began to maintain large armies trained and disciplined by French officers, and neither was blind to the imminent danger to the Maratha confederacy threatened by the growing power of the English. Before, however, the new armies could be combined and turned against the foreigners, Mahadaji Scindhia who alone among the Marathas proved an apt pupil of his European rivals in the arts of Diplomacy, War, and Government, died in 1794. His powerful army, now entirely under the domination of French Officers, proved the ruin of his weak successor Daulatrao, who only used it to cripple Holkar in the North and the Peshwa in the Deccan. The only hope of putting off the inevitable break-

* Lyall, page 110.

up of the Empire lay in the coincidence of two things : that Nana Farnavis should once again establish his power at Poona by bringing under control the incapable Peshwa Bajirao II, and that the Governor-General should be an adherent of the policy of non-intervention. But about the very time that Lord Wellesley was at the helm of affairs in India, that he destroyed the power of Tipu, eliminated that of the Nizam and was waiting for an opportunity to strike at Poona, Nana died (1800). With him, as Colonel Palmer said, departed the wisdom and moderation of the Maratha Government. "Nana Farnavis had for many years been the real Ruler of the State, contriving generally to keep on good terms with the Company without becoming entangled in obligations, the effects of which he looked upon with dread. He avowed his respect and admiration for the English, but shrank from their political embrace and whatever dangers might impend, he steadily refused to accept their offers of permanent armed assistance".* But Bajirao, after the death of Nana, began to take revenge upon those of his Maratha and Brahmin Sardars e.g., Holkar, Patwardhan, Raste &c. who were known to be hostile to the claims of himself or his father. Among his victims was Vithoji Holkar who was cruelly put to death. On the receipt of this news Jeswantrao Holkar marched upon Poona ; Bajirao being utterly defeated, fled from his capital and reached Bassein where he finally accepted the terms of a subsidiary alliance.

The Treaty of Bassein (1802) which was thus concluded with the Peshwa was the thin end of the wedge that Wellesley thrust in the Maratha Confederacy. The three Maratha Chiefs—Scindia, Holkar and Bhosle, would not accept the treaty, declaring that the Peshwa as the head of the Confederacy, ought not to have contracted it without consulting them.

* Torrens page 238.

Before turning to the issue of this great struggle, a few remarks ought to be made here upon the relative advantages and disadvantages of the new system adopted by the Native Princes. We may anticipate subsequent events so far as to say that Ranjitsingh 'the Lion of the Punjab' also adopted the same system. It was only when Maratha and Mahomedan powers in the South were completely overcome that the English were confronted with the consolidated power of the Sikhs. But whether the battles were fought with the Marathas or the Sikhs, History teaches the same lesson. It was the opinion of Arthur Wellesley that the cause of the defeat of the Marathas was the abandonment by them of their old method of warfare. The policy of remodelling only the army was bound to fail unless it was accompanied by a determined effort to recast the whole system of Government upon Western principles. None of the Indian Princes realized that the efficiency of an army depends upon larger considerations than those of mere size or equipment. It depends upon the sense of duty, of patriotism, of the resourcefulness and warlike spirit of the whole nation. No efforts were made, at that time, to study and assimilate whatever was useful in Western Civilization. An army officered by Foreigners was of the nature of an excrescence and not of healthy growth. As Sir Alfred Lyall says : The whole attempt of the Native Powers to imitate the military methods of Europe proved a delusion and a snare. It led them to suppose that they could put themselves on an equality with the English by a system that really placed them at a disadvantage, and to maintain upon a false estimate of their strength large military establishments under foreign officers, which it became the chief object of the English Government to disband or destroy. Nothing was easier for the English, with their command of money and war material, than to increase their own disciplined army.

in India up to whatever point might be necessary for maintaining superiority. Nothing, on the other hand, was more difficult for an Indian Prince than to repair his losses of cannon or trained soldiers. It is hard to understand how, in these conditions of political and military inequality, every successive campaign in India for the last 100 years has resulted in an increase of the English territory. In fact the whole country has thus passed gradually under the dominion of the Government which excelled all the other leading States in the art of disciplined fighting, and whose stability did not in any event depend upon the life or luck of a single Ruler or General, or upon the issue of a single battle, because its resources were drawn from an immense reserve of civilised wealth and energy beyond the sea."*

Wellesley and the Peshwa.—As already said the Treaty of subsidiary alliance with the Peshwa concluded at Bassein (1802) really involved Wellesley in "the interminable war with the many-headed Maratha Confederacy."† By this treaty the Peshwa agreed to cede to the English territory worth 26 lacs of rupees, for the services of a British contingent to be stationed in his dominions. He also agreed to conduct his foreign relations through them, and even his claims upon the Gaikwad and the Nizam were left to the arbitration of the English.

Operations were simultaneously begun against the Marathas in different parts of India. In the Deccan the campaign was sharp and decisive, Arthur Wellesley (the Duke of Wellington) having defeated the combined armies of Scindia and Bhosla at Assaye (September 23rd 1803) and of Bhosla at Argaon (November 29). In the North, the French officered army of Scindia melted away before the progress of Lord Lake who took Agra and

* Lyall page 200-201. † Dutt : Early British Rule page 11.

Delhi and defeated what remained of the army of Sindia in the battle of Laswary. By the treaty of Deogaon, the Bhosla ceded Cuttack to the English and Berar to the Nizam ; a British Resident was to be stationed at Nagpur, no foreigner was to be engaged, and all relations with outside powers were to be carried through the English. Scindia also, by the treaty of Sirji Anjangaon (December 30th 1803) ceded all territory between the Jamana and the Ganges to the English, renounced his claims over the Rajput Princes, and also, after some time agreed to entertain an English subsidiary force. Before, however, he gave effect to this treaty, the tide of war turned against the English. Jeswantrao Holkar who was holding himself aloof from the struggle during all this time could not make up his mind to fight a decisive action. On the contrary the British army under Colonel Monson that was pursuing him suffered a disastrous defeat in Rajputana and had to retreat. Holkar exacted tributes from the Rajput Princes and marched as far north as the Indus and was at the head of a large army. Lord Lake instead of striking a final blow at him laid siege to Bharatpur which was a failure. Scindia now openly joined Holkar, and marched upon Bhopal, the Nawab of which State was an old ally of the English. Scindia's object was to include Raghoji Bhosla of Nagpur, and Amirkhan the Pathan leader, in a common alliance against the English. Not only did he connive at an attack made upon the English residency by his troops but he submitted a list of grievances against the Company. It thus appeared that military operations on an extensive scale would soon recommence in North India. This alarmed the Court of Directors who were already protesting against the financial burdens of the late wars of Wellesley and who had other grievances against the Governor-General, and the latter, therefore, was peremptorily recalled.

Lord Cornwallis was surprised to find on his arrival the state of war that existed between the Company and the Maratha leaders. He was willing to concede every demand made by Scindhia—even though this procedure was disapproved by Lord Lake. But he died before he could embark upon any decisive course of action. Sir George Barlow adhered to the defensive policy laid down by Cornwallis, with the result that Scindhia and Holkar resumed their operations against the Rajput Rajas and other neighbours.

Wellesley and other Native Powers.—In addition to entering into subsidiary alliances with the more important Indian Princes Wellesley also annexed the territories of many minor Rulers on grounds which cannot bear close examination. Thus he practically annexed the whole of the *Karnatic*, the Nawab of which kingdom was the first ally of the English in their struggle against the French and Hyder. But he was a mere puppet in the hands of his European creditors to whom the entire revenues of his territories had been mortgaged. He was found to be in correspondence with Tippu; and he had not paid for years the stipulated sums for the British contingent which protected him. To add to these difficulties the Nawab died and there were two claimants—the son and the nephew. The latter was made the nominal Nawab and removed to Madras, the whole civil and military government of the kingdom passing into the hands of the Company.

Advantage was also taken of succession disputes at *Tanjore*, to transfer the civil and military Government of this small Maratha principality to the Company.

The Nawab of *Surat* dying about this time, that principality also was annexed, the brother of the Nawab being retired on a pension. Similarly also the boy Nawab of *Farakkabad* was made to give up his possessions.

We finally come to the annexation of the territories of the Nawab Vazir of *Oudh*. By the treaty of 1778 a British contingent was placed at the disposal of the Vazir in return for an annual subsidy and the Company undertook not to interfere in his internal administration. Wellesley, apprehending trouble in North India, partly on account of the threatened invasion by the Afghan leader Zamanshah but mainly on account of the impending struggle with Scindhia and Bhosla, insisted upon considerably increasing the subsidiary force of the Vazir, and the increased force being paid for by means of the cession of territory. The Vazier, rather than accept such a treaty showed his willingness to abdicate. He was taken at his word and was made to choose between two alternatives: acceptance of the treaty or abdication. An army was marched into Oudh, and the helpless Nawab had to submit. He ceded in perpetuity Allahabad and other districts. As they were the frontier districts of the Nawab Vazier the portion remaining to the Vazir was enveloped by British Districts, and the English were brought in direct contact with the power of Scindhia on the whole line of the Ganges and the Jamna.

The policy of annexing one-half of the kingdom of Oudh has been condemned by historians like Mill; and even those who justify the policy base their argument on the ground of expediency. Thus Hutton, the biographer of Wellesley in the Rulers of India series, says "after all the one cardinal justification of Wellesley's policy lies, not in any benefit to the population, or in an extension of the Company's dominions or revenues, but in an absolute political necessity."

We have now glanced at the various annexations of Wellesley. His part in shaping the map of British India has been thus summarised by Sir Alfred Lyall. "By occupying the Imperial cities of Delhi and Agra with the contiguous tracts on

both sides of the Jamna, and by annexing the whole country between the Ganges and the Jamna rivers, he carried forward British territory from Bengal north-westward to the mountains with a frontier resting upon the upper course of the Jamna ; and by his acquisitions of the Cuttack Province he secured the continuity of British territory south-eastward along the sea-coast, joined the two Presidencies of Bengal and Madras and established sure communications between them.”*

It should be noted also in this connection that the disappearance of the Mahomedan kingdom of Tipu rendered the sea-coast of southern India free from the designs of the French.

(12) III END OF THE NON-INTERVENTION POLICY.

Non-Intervention Policy—The costly wars of Lord Wellesley brought about a reaction against the aggressive policy followed by that Governor General and, as already stated, Lord Cornwallis was sent out to India to reverse that policy. Though he died shortly after arrival, during the time of his successor Sir George Barlow, the negotiations with Scindia and Holkar were brought to an abrupt termination and each was allowed to deal with his feudatories and neighbours as he liked. No new relations were established with any Indian powers except those with which definite treaty obligations had been previously made.

Lord Minto, under orders from the Directors, did not interfere in the affairs of Central India.

Its Results—When Lord Hastings succeeded Lord Minto, he was called upon to face a situation which was the necessary outcome of the ‘non-intervention policy.’ Those Princes with whom subsidiary treaties had been concluded, disbanded their native armies and their soldiers went to swell the hordes of free-booters.

known as the Pendharis. The ravages committed by bands of these marauders who had their haunts in Malwa were soon extended to the territories of the English and their allies, and their leaders were known to be in correspondence with the Peshwa, Scindhia, Holkar and Bhosla. Each one of these Maratha powers in turn had become a source of apprehension to the Company. At Poona the Peshwa Bajirao II, was chafing under the restrictions imposed upon him by the treaty of Bassein and he was secretly levying troops to oppose the subsidiary force. Doulatrao Scindhia wished to compensate himself for the territories ceded to the English by seizing the districts of Holkar and by harsh exactions from his Rajput feudatories. But he was a mere tool in the hands of his unruly army and as he was also an active supporter of the Pendharis, the centrical position he occupied with reference to military operations in North and Central India, made his attitude extremely menacing. Affairs at Indore and Nagpur were in a worse condition. Jeswantrao Holkar was dead, and the Pathan Officers of his army were all powerful. At Nagpur also the death of Raghoji Bhosla was followed by disputes about succession. In the end Appasaheb who was openly hostile to the English and a strong partisan of the Peshwa, got his claim recognised by the latter and became the Ruler of Nagpur.

It will thus be seen that the whole situation was fraught with the greatest dangers. Lord Hastings felt that the only way to meet it was to depart from the 'Non-intervention Policy.' He proposed to build up a confederation of such Indian powers as had suffered from the degradations of the Pathans and the Pendharis with a view to confine their ravages to a smaller area and ultimately to stop them altogether. The Directors, however, were opposed to any such plan of a general confederacy.

But the very audacity of the operations of the Pendharis demanded immediate steps to be taken. The Nawab of Bhopal, and many Rajput Rajas who had suffered most at the hands of the free-booters were anxious for British protection and at last towards the close of 1816 Lord Hastings got the tardy and qualified permission of the Directors to adopt measures for the final suppression of the Pendharis. Lord Hastings had by this time also got his own Council to accept his policy. Armed with the instructions of the Home Authorities, and the support of his colleagues, the Governor-General soon evolved a comprehensive plan of new treaties to be concluded with the Native powers and of military operations to be set afoot against the Pendharis. A new treaty (the Treaty of Poona) was made with the Peshwa by the Resident Mountstuart Elphinstone and he agreed to actively co-operate with the English against the common enemy. But the Bhosla and Scindhia made no response to the proposals of the Governor-General.

In his military preparations the idea of Hastings was to surround the Pendharis on all sides by marching armies upon them from all points of the compass and thus to eradicate them out of the fastnesses of Central India. Two main armies the Northern under the Governor-General himself, and the Southern under General Hislop—each consisting of many divisions began to converge upon the Pendharis. Bajirao seeing that the British force at Poona had been marched northwards, made an attack upon the Residency; but being soon after defeated in the battle of Kirkee (November 1817) he fled from his capital, never to return to it again. He proceeded to Satara and taking the Raja with him went to Pandharpur and thence to Nasik. He then suddenly turned round and marched upon Poona but was defeated in the battle of Koregaon (January 1818.) The pursuit of the Peshwa was continued and he was

again defeated in the battle of Ashta. As most partisans now deserted him and as his only General, Bapu Gokhale, was killed, he now marched northwards to join Appasaheb Bhosla of Nagpur, and Scindhia if possible. But he was being pursued by more than one British army, and haunted from place to place and unable to join either the Bhosla or Scindhia he finally delivered himself up to General Malcolm. The Governor-General had made up his mind to deprive the Peshwa of his dominions ; a portion was reserved for the Raja of Satara, the titular head of the Maratha power ; but the Peshwa was sent to Bithur near Cawnpore on an annual pension of 8 lacs of rupees.

On account of the help which he had given to the Peshwa during the latter's wanderings, and also on account of the unsuccessful attack on the Presidency at Nagpur he had previously made, Appasaheb Bhosla was imprisoned and deposed and a successor was appointed. A British garrison was stationed at Nagpur in return for which the Narbada and Saugor territories were annexed to the British dominions (1819).

The hostilities openly commenced by the Peshwa and the Bhosla encouraged the army of Holkar to participate in the struggle against the English which had now become general. Its Pathan leader Gafurkhan had recently murdered Tulsibai—the Regent at Indore and given shelter to the notorious Pendhari leader Chitu who was being pursued by Malcolm. At last the army of Holkar was completely defeated in the battle of Mahidpur, and Malcolm, by the treaty of January 1818, deprived Holkar of his claims on the Rajput Rajas, and put a stop to the disorders that had obtained at Indore since the death of Jeswantrao.

Malcolm was also successful in smoothing the relations of Holkar with Scindhia, and of the latter with the English.

Reference has already been made to the menacing attitude of Scindia at the beginning of the Pendhari War. But the constant watchfulness of two British armies at last forced him to conclude a treaty in 1818 by which he ceded Ajmere, and, two years later, he so far changed his general attitude towards the English as to accept what practically amounted to a subsidiary treaty.

Deprived of the help they secretly derived from the Peshwa, Bhosla, Holkar and Scindhia, the Pendharis soon fell an easy victim to the English armies. Large bands of them were hunted down and done to death. Their leaders either submitted or perished in the jungles. Thus one of them—Amirkhan—was made the Nawab of Tonk, and Gafurkhan—the Pathan General of the army of Holkar was given a small fief. The Nawab of Bhopal who, throughout this struggle, had remained an ally of the English, was rewarded by an increase of territory.

The pacification of Rajputana was left to be accomplished by Metcalfe and Colonel Todd. The tributes which the Rajput Rajas had to pay to Scindhia or Holkar were transferred to the English, and protective treaties were made with the Rulers of Kotah, Jodhpur, Udepur, Bundi and Jaipur. The Nizam of Hyderabad had to exchange territory belonging to the Peshwa, Holkar and Scindhia. Nor was the Gaikwar of Baroda left out of account in the comprehensive settlement made by the Governor-General. He, out of all the members of the Maratha Confederacy, was the most subservient to the Company ever since he espoused the cause of Raghunathrao Peshwa in the First Maratha War. Constant disputes about succession further weakened his position, and when in 1817 the imbecile Anandaraao died, a subsidiary treaty was made with his

successor Sayajirao in 1820 by Elphinstone who was now the Governor of Bombay.

Review of Hastings's Policy.—It has been urged that the object of Lord Hastings in his treaties as well as military operations was purely defensive. He wished to protect the dominions of the Company and of its allies against the ravages of the Pendharies. He himself distinctly repudiated any aggressive design on his part. He attributed the loss of territory which the Peshwa (wholly) and the Bhosla (partially) had to suffer to persistence in folly on their part rather than to aggressive motives on his own. He wished to suppress the predatory system "without disturbing any of the established powers of India or adding a rood to the possessions of the British Government." Whatever value we attach to this plea of Lord Hastings there is no doubt that he merely reaped the fruit of the policy of Wellesley. The Native States, in the predicament to which they had been reduced by that policy, found themselves isolated and helpless and entirely at the mercy of the English. When, therefore, the campaign against the Pendharies inevitably reached the proportions of a general war, it brought, in its wake, a comprehensive scheme of reconstruction. It proceeded upon the principle that the British Power had become the suzerain power in India. The foreign relations of the Native Princes came under the surveillance of the paramount power which also made itself responsible for their Military protection. Such was the work of Lord Hastings.

Extension of the Frontier.—The additions made to the possessions of the Company in North India—particularly the territories acquired from the Nawab Vazir of Oudh were bound to lead to disputes with the warlike inhabitants of the mountains that cut off India from the Asiatic Continent. One of the first States that thus became involved in a war with the

English was that of *Nepal*. Its Officers had made frequent inroads into territories that belonged to the Company, and as every effort to define the jurisdictions in a peaceful manner failed, war was declared in 1814. Partly on account of the ignorance of geography, but mostly on account of the stern resistance of the Goorkhas, the losses suffered by the English were very heavy. But in the end the Nepalese Government was forced to yield a long strip of land along the lower Himalayas extending from Nepal to the Sutlaj River. "All the hilly country that overhangs Rohilkhand, Agra and Oudh was thus annexed and the British frontier was pushed Northward till it touched Tibet." *

Disputes also arose on the Eastern frontier of the Bengal Presidency. Here the *Burmans* who had been, almost simultaneously with the English, extending their power came in conflict with the latter. Lord Amherst had to declare war against the Court of Ava, which yielded to the Company the Arakan and Tenasaram Provinces. Thus the Eastern Frontier was also consolidated, becoming coterminous with, in course of time, with that of Tibet.

(13) IV—LORD WILLIAM BENTINCK AND THE NATIVE STATES.

We have already considered how the subsidiary alliances were bound to produce a debilitating influence upon the Indian Princes. The steps which Bentinck—whose pacific motives are unimpeachable—had to take in the matter of many States form an effective commentary upon this statement. At *Hyderabad* the reigning Nizam Shikandr Jah died in 1829 and his successor was allowed a larger measure of independence. But on account of financial difficulties the payment for the

* Lyall page 263.

subsidiary force fell into arrears. At last Berar was leased to the English in satisfaction of these long-standing claims. At *Mysore* a long period of mal-administration set in after the retirement of the able Diwan Purnea. Sir Thomas Munro visited the capital, the Maharaja was deposed, and the whole State was placed under direct British Administration which lasted till 1881. In *Coorg* the Raja, after indulging in murder of his near relatives, fled away from his capital. Bentinck happened to be at Ootacamund at the time. He marched four armies into that small principality and Mercara the capital was taken and the whole State was annexed. In *Oudh* also there was grave mismanagement. Bentinck visited Lucknow to remonstrate with the Nawab Vazir. There was no improvement, and, as will be soon mentioned, this kingdom had to be annexed. Even the tiny State of *Kachar* which suffered from the same evils of mal-administration was also annexed. The Rajput States of *Jaipur* and *Jodhpur* became the scenes of civil war and bloodshed. Sir Charles Metcalfe had to intervene in the case of Jaipur, and with his help a Regency was established there under the eye of a British Resident.

Such was the tone of the Native States—be they big or small, ancient or modern, Hindu or Mahomedan, situated on the hills or in the plains. Each told the same story of an administration which was as rotten as it was irresponsible.

CHPATER V,

SECOND PERIOD OF TERRITORIAL EXPANSION (1835—57).

(14) I—EXTENSION OF FOREIGN RELATIONS AND THE FIRST AFGHAN WAR.

Lord Minto's Missions.—Reference has been made to the plan which Napoleon entertained of conquering Egypt and of making it the base of operations against the English in India with the help of Indian allies like Tipu. But he had to return to France where events were moving fast and where he soon became a Military Dictator. At the head of his revolutionary armies he conquered the whole of Central Europe, and made a common cause with the Czar of Russia (by the treaty of Tilsit 1807). The friendship with Russia revived the ambitious plans of Napoleon with regard to the conquest of India. The two potentates agreed to lead an army through Western Asia against India, and Russian and French Agents were busy establishing friendly relations at the Courts of Persia and Afghanistan.

It was to counteract this new danger that Lord Minto sent out three 'Missions', one under Sir Charles Metcalfe to Ranjitsing, another under Mountstuart Elphinstone to the Amir of Afghanistan, and a third under Colonel (afterwards Sir John) Malcolm to the Shah of Persia. The missions returned without achieving any striking results. The danger of a Franco-Russian invasion also vanished, for the two Emperors could not agree as to the share of each in the partition

of Turkey and Napoleon himself was called away by events in Spain and Portugal, and there was peace in Central Asia for the next twenty years. But Lord Minto had clearly foreseen the danger of Russian aggression. He had also realised that the invading enemy would probably pass through the kingdoms of Kabul and the Punjab as well as through the territories of the several independent Chiefs between Persia and India, and his policy was "to push forward a British Agency as far beyond the Indian frontier and as near the countries from which the enemy was likely to take his departure as possible."*

Commenting upon the significance of the three Missions, Lyall says that they extended the scope of Anglo-Indian diplomacy. Hitherto the English had confined their relations only with the Princes in India. "But now for the first time they entered upon that field of diplomacy in which all the countries of Western Asia, from Kabul to Constantinople, are surveyed as interposing barriers between Europe and their Indian possessions. The independence and integrity of these foreign and comparatively distant states are henceforward essential for the balance of Asiatic powers and for the security of the Indian frontiers."†

Policy of Lord Auckland.—The danger of Russian invasion was renewed at the advance of Russian Agents to the Courts of Persia and Afghanistan during the reign of the Czar Nicholas I. Lord Auckland thought that trouble was possible in three directions : (1) The Persians, chiefly under Russian instigations, had laid siege to Herat ; (2) Dost Mahomad, the leader of the Barakzai Afghans, was not only meditating schemes of aggrandizement against Ranjitsing but was

* Lord Minto in India" (quoted in Ramsay Muir 142.

† Lyall : 245

definitely hostile to the English ; and (3) the Chiefs of Kandahar (brothers of Dost Mahamad) avowed their adherence to Persia even when the latter was a Russian ally. The cardinal feature of the policy of Lord Auckland was to place on the throne of Kabul a strong and friendly ruler, able to check the intrigues of the Russians. "The welfare of our possessions in the East requires that we should have on our Western Frontier an ally who is interested in resisting aggression, and establishing tranquility, in the place of Chiefs ranging themselves in subservience to a hostile power and seeking to promote schemes of conquest and aggrandizement."*

A tripartite treaty was accordingly concluded in 1838 between the English, Ranjitsing and Shah-Suja—the fugitive Amir for the elevation of the last to the Afghan throne, with the help of the first two allies. But before the Sikhs could render any effective help in the enterprise Ranjitsing died (1839) and as permission was refused to the British Army to march through the Punjab, it had to resort to the more circuitous and dreary route through the deserts of Sindh, and the progress of the army was rendered at all possible through the good offices of the Amirs of that region. At the advance of the English Army upon Kabul Dost Mahomed fled and Shah-Suja was seated on the throne and it appeared as if the expedition was a great success. But the new ruler was unpopular, the whole Afghan country was up in arms against the English army of occupation, the British envoy MacNaughton was killed and in the retreat of the army from Kabul practically the whole force perished with the single exception of Dr. Bryden.

But the hour of vengeance soon came. Lord Ellenborough who had succeeded Auckland, sent an army to Kabul in

* Persian and Afghan correspondence p. 299. Quoted in Ramsay Muir.

September 1842 and again the British flag was planted on Bala Hissar. At the same time the folly of Auckland's policy of forcing an unpopular ruler upon the unruly Afghans was realized, and they were left to themselves. Dost Mahamad returned to Kabul and thus was closed this first essay of the English in their frontier policy.

Annexation of Sindh.—Reference must be made to one result that flowed from the First Afghan War. We have already seen how the Amirs of Sindh had rendered valuable assistance to the English Army marching upon Kabul. This conciliatory attitude of the Amirs was wholly due to the tact of the English Agent in Sindh—Major Outram. But in 1842 he was replaced by Sir Charles Napier—a haughty and querulous Officer.

In return for the help promised by the Amirs, Lord Auckland had undertaken to settle the claims made upon them both by Ranjitsing and the ruler of Afghanistan. For years past the Sindh Amirs had been subjected to heavy exactions by one or the other of their powerful neighbours and they had formed a loose confederacy for their own protection. They agreed to virtually dissolve their union, each chief showing his willingness to treat directly with the Governor-General who undertook to mediate for them with the Rulers of Punjab and Afghanistan and who also promised to maintain a contingent in Lower Sindh for the security of the province. The Indus was to be thrown open to navigation, free of all tolls. The Amirs at first accepted these terms, but the disastrous issue of the Afghan Campaign made them restive. It was not very difficult to find fault with their internal administration. Sir Charles Napier easily persuaded himself that the Amirs were at once traitors and tyrants, and without difficulty defeated them and annexed

their territories—a policy in which Lord Ellenborough quietly acquiesced.

So unjustifiable was this step that even the Directors were dissatisfied with it, and Ellenborough was recalled only after two years of administration.

As Professor Ramsay Muir points out, Ellenborough was anxious to reestablish British prestige after the failure in Afghanistan, by strong action in Sindh. "Sindh is the only British acquisition of which it may fairly be said that it was not necessitated by circumstances ; and that, therefore, it was an act of aggression." *

And Sir Charles Napier himself was not unconscious of his aggressive policy when, in announcing his victory to the Governor General, he said "*Peccavi*" i.e., I have sinned (Sindh).

(15) II—THE SIKH WARS AND ANNEXATION OF THE PUNJAB.

The history of the British dealings with the Punjab falls into three periods : The first period closes with the emergence of Ranjitsing ; the second covers the reign of that great Ruler ; and the third refers to the last years of that Power. It is not necessary to trace here the rise of the Sikh power prior to the days of Ranjitsing ; but during his reign on account of internal administration and prudent foreign policy the Sikh power was thoroughly consolidated ; the Sikh army particularly which was the mainstay of the State was trained into a formidable machine by European Officers like—Ventura and Avitable. Successive Governors General therefore, e.g., Lord Minto and Lord William Bentinck maintained friendly relations with Ranjitsing whose state thus formed

* Ramsay Muir ; page 311.

'a buffer state' between the English possessions in North India and the Afghans. But the security of the N. W. Frontier was jeopardised by the disaster of the First Afghan War and the dissatisfaction that was seething in that country, and also by the anarchy that set in the Punjab after the death of Ranjitsing.

Sher Sing, the son of Ranjit tried to keep the army under control ; but he was murdered in 1842 and the *Khalsa i.e.*, Sikh Commonwealth resolved to make War upon the English and crossed the Sutlaj which was the boundary between the two powers. Not before four pitched battles had been fought in quick succession Mudki, Firozshahar, Alwal and Sobraon, was the Sikh power brought to submit. Lord Hardinge was opposed to any plan of annexation. "Once more the policy of leaving a Native State on the frontier was to be tried, and although the Sikh Kingdom could no longer be allowed to be independent, its internal sovereignty was to be left to it."* Accordingly only the country between the Sutlaj and the Beas was annexed to British Dominions ; an indemnity of one crore and fifty lakhs of rupees was imposed upon the Sikhs and as it could not be paid, Kashmir was transferred to Gulab Sing, an ally of the English, for half the amount ; The Sikh army was reduced and a Council of Regency was appointed under Henry Lawrence, during the minority of Dhulip Singh, for the internal administration of the Punjab, and a British force was sent to garrison the province for the term of eight years.

Policy of Lord Dalhousie.—Such was the state of the Punjab when Dalhousie arrived in India. There was prospect of a peaceful administration under the reforming zeal of the

* Lee-Warner : Vol. I, Page 148.

brother Lawrence. But suddenly the storm broke. Divan Moolraj, (the Governor of Mooltan) who had amassed great wealth and who, therefore, was afraid of the reforms of Lawrence caused the assassination of two British Officers that were on a visit to Multan, and raised the standard of rebellion. As this took place in April, and as the army was neither large nor efficient enough for immediate action, nothing was done for some months during which time the trouble spread over the whole of Punjab ; and even Dost Mahamad, the Ruler of Afghanistan, who had not forgotten the wanton aggression of the English, joined the Sikhs. The Sikh army though considerably smaller than in the First War was still unbroken and bloody battles ensued on the fields of Ramnagar, Sadulapur, of Chilianwala 'which patriotism prefers to call a drawn battle' * and of Gujrat. Mooltan, after a protracted siege also surrendered and the Afghans were driven beyond the Indus.

The Punjab now lay prostrate and the question again arose if it should be continued as a 'buffer' Native State though considerably reduced. But Lord Dalhousie was opposed to any such policy. He thought that on account of the proximity of the Afghans, and the widespread dissatisfaction in the Punjab, no Sikh power could be continued there, and as he felt assured of full support from the Home authorities in any course that he might adopt he annexed the whole province (1849). Maharaja Dhulip Sing was pensioned off to England where he lived for many years as a country gentleman.

* Hunter : Page 313

(16) III—OTHER ANNEXATIONS OF LORD DALHOUSIE.

Lord Dalhousie, three years later annexed Lower Burma as the result of a War waged on account of complaints that had been frequently made by British merchants trading at Rangoon about money unfairly exacted from them. As the Governor-General wrote in his Minute, he held "to the wisdom of Lord Wellesley's maxim that an insult offered to the British flag at the mouth of the Ganges should be resented as promptly and as fully as an insult offered at the mouth of the Thames." The complaints of the British merchants were, therefore, regarded as a sufficient excuse for the commencement of hostilities against Burma.

Doctrine of Lapse.—It was not by conquest only that Dalhousie extended the boundaries of the British Empire. In his zeal to bring as large a part of India as possible within the pale of Western Civilization, he lost no opportunity of adding to the British possessions, and he found in his 'doctrine of lapse' a powerful weapon for territorial aggrandizement. As he himself said: "I take occasion of recording my strong and deliberate opinion that, in the exercise of a wise and sound policy, the British Government is bound not to put aside or neglect such rightful opportunities of acquiring territory or revenue, as may from time to time present themselves, whether they arise from the lapse of subordinate states, by the failure of all the heirs of every description whatsoever, or from the failure of heirs natural, where the succession can be sustained only by the sanction of the Government being given to the ceremony of adoption according to Hindu Law."

This is the Doctrine of Lapse. Now the ancient law of India allows a Hindu to adopt a son, on the failure of natural heir, and law treats equally the adopted and the natural

OTHER ANNEXATIONS OF LORD DALHOUSIE

heir. This right had been recognized by the Moghul Emperors; and even under the Peshwas it was in full operation, though it is true that the Peshwas, as over-lords charged heavy *Nazarana* or succession duty, at the time of issuing the *Sanad* or title to adopt the heir; but in no case had they denied the right or annexed the territories of their Jagirdars on the ground of failure of heir.

But upon the settlement of Central India after the Pen-dhari War, British Government began the practice of refusing sanction to adoption, as in the case of the Angria family of Kolaba in 1840. But such cases were rare. It was reserved for Lord Dalhousie to adopt this course systematically.

Lee Warner points out that Dalhousie did not 'invent' the doctrine of Lapse. He also restricted the application of this doctrine to such states as were 'tributary' or 'sub-ordinate' to the British Power.

But it was not easy to define and distinguish States which were independent and those which were dependent. The States that fell victim to this policy of annexation were *Satara* (where the claims of the adopted heir after the death of the Raja in 1848 were set aside); *Sambalpur* in the Central Provinces (where the Raja had died childless, without adopting an heir); *Jhansi* (where the rights of the adopted son of the dying Raja were not recognized); and finally *Nagpur* (where the heir adopted by the widow of the deceased Raja was set aside).

The policy of annexation followed in the smaller States of *Beghat*, *Udepur* and *Karauli*, was practically reversed by Lord Canning, and even Lee Warner admits 'that the case of Karauli must always be considered as the least justifiable of the measures taken by Dalhousie.'*

* Lee Warner Volume II. Page 171.

It would be out of place to enter into the general question of this doctrine of lapse or to examine each case separately. As already pointed out, the error of Dalhousie lay in systematically applying a right (*i.e.*, of refusing sanction) which though existing in theory, was never exercised in practice. Though the Indian Mutiny was not caused by this policy of Lord Dalhousie, some of its implacable leaders were those who had suffered by this doctrine. By the reversal of Dalhousie's decisions in two or three minor cases, and by the solemn recognition of the right of adoption given in the Queen's Proclamation after the Mutiny, this avenue at any rate of extending the British Territories was finally closed.

Further annexations.—In addition to annexation by conquest and by lapse, Dalhousie added *Oudh* (1856) on the ground of the protracted state of mis-government that prevailed there; and he took *Berar* from the Nizam on lease, as a guarantee of payment of the long-standing arrears on account of the subsidiary force.

(17) IV—RELATIONS WITH NATIVE STATES UNDER THE CROWN.

It is not proposed to consider in this volume questions affecting the Native States in India. But, as after the Mutiny, the policy of annexation was definitively given up and the integrity and continuity of such States as survived the 'second period' of territorial expansion were guaranteed, only a few remarks are offered here about the general trend of progress in the States.

Sir William Lee-Warner distinguishes three periods in the development of these relations: (1) the period of 'ring-fence' extending to 1813; (2) that of 'subordinate isolation' which lasted till 1857 and (3) of 'subordinate union' which-

set in after the Mutiny. The essential element of the policy of the "ring fence" was the refusal of protection to Native States lying beyond a certain limit, or, in another words, the avoidance of all ties or engagements which might possibly drag the Company beyond its own frontiers. This policy led to confusion and anarchy beyond the ring-fence and Lord Hastings broke down ring-fence and filled in the map of India with "protected" States. He deprived them of all external relations but at the same time he rightly marked off the internal administration of each Prince as outside the sphere of British action. This policy is called that of "sub-ordinate isolation" and was followed by his successors and was in vogue when Lord Dalhousie came out to India. Dalhousie was bent upon "getting rid of these petty intervening principalities which may be made a means of annoyance, but which can never be a source of strength for adding to the resources of the public treasury, and for extending the uniform application of our system of Government to those whose best interests, we sincerely believe, will be promoted thereby."

We have seen already what was the result of the policy of Dalhousie and how it was reversed after the Mutiny. The Queen of England promised to make no more territorial aggrandisement. But, in many cases, at any rate, the mis-government was due to the financial embarrassment caused by the heavy military charges of the subsidiary force, to the deleterious effects of which upon the Ruling Princes a reference has already been made. Whether the Princes were in subsidiary alliance, or under protection, whether they paid or did not pay any tribute, the military burden imposed upon them was in many cases unbearable, and was the cause of mis-government and oppression with which they were charged.

"In spite of cases of misgovernment, therefore, the value of the Native States was appreciated by some of the best administrators of India of the period (1800-1850). Thus *Sir Thomas Munro* declared—"Even if all India could be brought under British dominion, it is very questionable whether such a change, either as it regards the Natives or ourselves, ought to be desired. One effect of such a conquest would be that the Indian army, having no longer any warlike neighbours to combat, would gradually lose its military habits and discipline, and that the native troops would have leisure to feel their own strength, and for want of other employment to turn it against their European masters. But even if it could be secured against every internal commotion, and we could retain the country quietly in subjection, I doubt much if the condition of the people would be better than under their native princes." (Sir Thomas then goes on to consider the advantages and disadvantages of British Rule in India and concludes that one fatal disadvantage of that Rule has been the exclusion of Indians from all share in the government of their country, and the consequent debasement of the people.) "But among all the disorders of the native States, the field is open to every man to raise himself, and hence among them there is a spirit of emulation, of restless enterprise, and independence, far preferable to the servility of our Indian subjects. The existence of independent Native States is also useful in drawing off the turbulent and disaffected among our native troops."

Sir John Malcolm (who possessed unrivalled experience of the Native Rulers) said :—"I am decidedly of opinion that the tranquility, not to say the security of our vast Oriental possessions is involved in the preservation of the Native principalities which are dependent upon us for protection. These are also so obviously at our mercy, so entirely within

our grasp, that besides the other and great benefits which we derive from those alliances, their co-existence with our rule is of itself a source of political strength, the value of which will never be known till it is lost. They show the possibility of a Native State subsisting even in the heart of our own territories, and their condition mitigates to some degree the bad effects of that too general impression, that our Sovereignty is incompatible with the maintenance of Native Princes and Chiefs.....I am further convinced that though our revenue may increase, the permanence of our power will be hazarded in proportion as the territories of native princes and chiefs fall under our direct rule."

Views like these triumphed after the great conflagration of the Mutiny and few now question the wisdom of preserving the Native States or deny the very important part which they may play in the progress of India as a whole. At any rate I am personally a great believer in the possibilities of the Native States.

Constitutional Position of the Native States.—It is a nice question of constitutional law as to the position which the States occupy with reference to the Sovereign power. Any answer to this question must take note of the varying history and the importance of the several States, and of the treaties, Sanads and usages which govern the relations of the States with that Paramount Power. But, we may say, that in the case of every Native State the British Government, as the Paramount Power.—

- (1) exercises exclusive control over the foreign relations of the State ;
- (2) assumes a general, but limited, responsibility for the internal peace of the State ;

- (3) assumes a special responsibility for the safety and welfare of British subjects resident in the State ; and
- (4) requires subordinate co-operation in the task of resisting foreign aggression and maintaining internal order.*

Lord Curzon's Views.—This varying, complex, and almost personal relation with the Native States was thus described by Lord Curzon in a speech made in 1903 :—“ The political system of India is neither feudalism nor federation ; it is embodied in no constitution, it does not always rest upon treaty, and it bears no resemblance to a league. It represents a series of relationships that have grown up between the Crown and the Indian Princes under widely different conditions, but which in process of time have gradually conformed to a single type. The Sovereignty of the Crown is everywhere unchallenged. It has itself laid down the limitations of its own prerogatives ; conversely, the duties and services of the States are implicitly recognized, and as a rule faithfully discharged. It is this happy blend of authority with free will, of sentiment with self-interest, of duties with rights, that distinguishes the Indian Empire under the British Crown from any other dominion of which we read in history. The links that hold it together are not iron fetters that have been forged for the weak by the strong ; neither are they artificial couplings that will snap asunder the moment that any unusual strain is placed upon them ; but they are silken strands that have been woven into a strong cable by the mutual instincts of pride and duty, of self-sacrifice and esteem. It is scarcely possible to imagine circumstances more different than those of the Indian Chiefs now from what they were at the time when Queen Victoria came to the

* Ilbert : 166.

RELATIONS WITH NATIVE STATES UNDER THE CROWN

throne. Then they were suspicious of each other, mistrustful of the paramount Power, distracted with personal intrigues and jealousies, indifferent or selfish in their administration, and unconscious of any wider duty or Imperial aim. Now their sympathies have expanded with their knowledge, and their sense of responsibility with the degree of confidence reposed in them. They recognise their obligations to their own States and to the Imperial throne. The British Crown is no longer an impersonal abstraction, but a concrete and inspiring force. They have become figures on a great stage instead of actors in petty parts. In my view, as this process has gone on, the Princes have gained in prestige instead of losing it. Their rank is not diminished, but their privileges have become more secure. They have to do more for the protection that they enjoy, but they also derive more from it ; for they are no longer detached appendages of Empire, but its participators and instruments. They have ceased to be the architectural adornments of the Imperial edifice, and have become the pillars that help to sustain the main roof."

Chamber of Princes.—In view of this new appreciation of the value of the Ruling Princes of India, it was inevitable that there should be a growing desire to consult them in a more systematic manner in matters of common interest. Many Viceroys had elaborated schemes for closer contact with the States. Thus Lord Lytton had proposed to constitute an Imperial Privy Council which should comprise some of the great Princes ; Lord Dufferin succeeded in instituting the Imperial Service Troops, thus giving the larger States an opportunity to participate in the defence of the Empire ; Lord Curzon took keen interest in the education of the sons of the Princes and convened a Conference of the Princes at Calcutta in 1902, and he, as well as his successor Lord Minto,

had planned for the constitution of a Council of Ruling Princes. Lord Hardinge revived the practice of holding Conferences with the Princes to consider questions of higher education in the States and made no secret of his desire to seek the collective opinion of the Princes as trusted colleagues wherever possible on matters affecting their order and Lord Chelmsford utilized these Conferences for discussion of general questions affecting the States as a whole.

The feeling of solidarity with British India and the Empire and the desire to consult the Princes were emphasized during the late War on account of the splendid services of those Princes ; and in recognition of these services one of their Order was deputed, along with a representative of British India, to attend the Imperial War Conference.

It was natural, therefore, that when the question of the constitutional changes to be effected in British India was under discussion, attention should also have been paid to the position of the Native States. The Conferences convened by Lord Hardinge and Chelmsford had proved very useful and though they were annually called, their regular meeting depended upon the invitation of the Viceroy. They have been, therefore, replaced by the constitution of the "Chamber of Princes."

Another direction of recent advance has been the placing of more States in direct relation with the Government of India. The position before this was that only four large States *i.e.*, Hyderabad, Baroda, Mysore and Kashmir, and one small State dealt directly with the Government of India through their Residents ; there were some 150 States in the Central India Agency, and some twenty States in the Rajputana Agency, and two States in Baluchistan that were under Agents to the Governor-General. The remaining States were

in political relations with the local Governments. Madras dealt with five States, Bombay with over 350, Bengal with 2, the United Provinces with 3, the Punjab with 34, Burma with 52, Bihar and Orissa with 26, the Central Provinces with 15, and Assam with 16. It is obvious that relations with the Native States are a Central subject and as such to be properly dealt with by the Government of India. The authors of the Montford Report said : "It seems to us that the changing conditions of the time afford strong reason for affirming this principle (*i.e.*, that the relations are a Central subject) both because the institution of a Council of Princes will give greater solidarity to the views of the States, and also because the growth of responsibility in Provincial Governments will to some extent unfit them to act in Political matters as mere Agents for the Government of India."* All important States, therefore, are in the process of being placed in direct political relations with the Central Government.

The Viceroy has always been in charge of the Foreign Department which also manages relations with the Native States. But a new significance attaches itself—particularly after the constitution of the Princes' Chamber and the transfer of States to his direct relations—to the position of the Viceroy as the 'guide, friend, and Philosopher' of the Indian Rulers who have in their hands the destinies of a fifth of the population of the Indian Continent.

* M. C. Report Chapter X.

CHAPTER VI

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT: FINANCE: PUBLIC WORKS.

(18)

I—PLAN OF THE CHAPTERS.

Having considered in the last two Chapters the course of the expansion of British Dominions in India, it will be appropriate now to review the results of the Administration of India by the East India Company, or "John Company" as it was called in derision by its opponents. The Company increasingly assumed a political complexion and after 1833 altogether ceased to be a commercial body. In the present Chapter the system of Provincial Government as well as the state of Finance and of Public Works will be considered; The next chapter will be devoted to the examination of the Land Settlements. Important improvements made in the Judicial Administration by Lord Cornwallis and Lord William Bentinck, and in legislation by the Charter Act of 1833 will be referred to in the Chapter following; in the same chapter room will be found to consider the beginnings of Western Education and of the employment of Indians in the Public services of the country; finally, the whole period will be considered from the point of view of the contribution which some of the great servants of the East Indian Company made to the growth of the system of administration.

(19)

II—THE SYSTEM OF ADMINISTRATION.

The three Presidencies continued to be administered by their respective Governors and Councils; the Governor of Bengal was also the Governor-General for India and had powers of control over the other two Presidencies. These powers were emphasized and extended by the Charter Act of 1793. By the same Act the Governor-General while visiting another Presidency was empowered to supersede the Governor of that Presidency and to appoint a Vice-President to act for him in Bengal during his absence. The Act of 1833 made important changes in the system of administration. As all the Territories acquired in North India were tacked on to the Bengal Presidency it outgrew manageable limits and the Act of 1833 proposed to divide it into two Presidencies—the new Presidency being called the Presidency of Agra and being given a separate Governor with a Council which was then the approved type of Government for a Presidency. The Act also changed the title of the Governor-General from that of the Governor General in Council of *Bengal* into the Governor-General in Council of *India*.

But the proposal regarding the Agra Presidency was never carried out. A rival arrangement was suggested by Lord William Bentinck and Sir Charles Metcalfe. They contend- ed that on account of the great extent of territory, the task of Administration was putting an unbearable burden upon the Governor-General and that the local details pressing upon the time of the Supreme Government utterly precluded the per- formance of the higher and more important functions of its Office and therefore proposed that the Governor-General and his Council should be relieved from the Executive adminis- tration of any of the four Presidencies.

In the final arrangement, neither the provision of the Act of 1833 nor the proposal of Bentinck was adopted and the Board of Control, on the recommendation of the Directors appointed a Lieutenant-Governor to be selected by the Governor-General from amongst the experienced servants of the Company to the new Province. Bengal was left to be administered by the Governor-General alone with a separate establishment. That Bengal should suffer under this arrangement was a foregone result. The Governor-General, on account of his other duties, left the administration of Bengal to the care of his irresponsible Secretary. The whole position was so anomalous that the Act of 1853 had to provide that the Court of Directors might either appoint a Governor of Bengal, or authorize the Governor-General in Council to appoint any servant of the Company of 10 years' service in India to be a Lieutenant-Governor of that Province. The latter alternative was adopted. Thus Bengal which was the prototype of the Governor-in-Council form of Government was degraded from that status to the one-man rule of a Lieutenant Governor which, on the ground of its cheapness, now became the favourite model of Provincial administration with the Home Authorities.

The newly acquired territories which were 'backward' and which contained few or no European Settlers, were given a form of administration that was even simpler than the one just now described. A provision of the Act of 1854 empowered the Governor-General in Council, with the sanction of the Court of Directors and the Board of Control, to take by proclamation under his immediate authority and management any part of the Company's territories and provide for their administration. In practice this was done by the appointment of

Chief Commissioners to whom were delegated such powers as were not required to be reserved to the Central Government.

One can see, in the appointment of the Lieutenant-Governors and Chief Commissioners the tendency towards centralization which was in operation during the whole of this period.

(20) III—INDIAN FINANCE UNDER THE COMPANY.

We have considered in the last two chapters the territorial expansion of the Company during this period. It would be worth while to examine the effect of this expansion upon the Finances of the Company. What the Court of Proprietors in England cared for was a satisfactory dividend ; this depended, in its turn, upon a surplus of revenue over expenditure in India. To 'maximise' the revenue, and 'minimise' the expenditure was the Alfa and Omega of the policy of the Directors. In the pursuit of this policy the Directors found themselves exposed to two conflicting temptations. On the one hand they kept on protesting against that expansive tendency of the policy of Wellesley, of Hastings, and of Dalhousie, which involved them in costly wars and thus balked them of their dividend ; at the same time it made them reluctant to let go out of their grasp any of the newly acquired territories, as the employment of an increasing number of civil and military officers for their administration gave full play to their exercise of 'patronage'. The revenues of the Company were thus subjected to a double loss—that caused by wars, and that caused by an expensive system of administration, and the net financial result of the career of conquest and expansion which the Directors alternately openly disavowed and secretly desired, was an alarming addition to the debt of the Company. No efforts were spared e.g., ex-

actions and tributes from Native Princes, Subsidiary Alliances, fines and forfeitures &c., for getting as large a revenue as possible. But the whole of it was swallowed by the exigencies of administration, and more was constantly demanded. Kaye gives the following account of this increasing revenue: "Under the administration of Lord Cornwallis 1792-93, the Indian revenue amounted to 8 millions of English money. Under Lord Wellesley's administration in 1804-05 it had risen to nearly 14 millions. At the close of Lord Minto's period of government in 1813-14 it was set down at 17 millions; under his successor, Lord Hastings in 1821-22 it exceeded 21 millions; in 1852, the gross revenue was estimated at 29 millions." *

But in spite of this continuous increase of revenue the position of the Company went from bad to worse. The Company, paradoxically enough, used to have a *surplus* when the revenue was smaller. But the expensive wars of Wellesley caused heavy deficits and therefore a large public debt. The Company had to approach Parliament for assistance, and at the time of the renewal of the Charter in 1813, an important change was made in the system of keeping the accounts of the Company. From 1765 to 1813 the East India Company did not distinguish between its territorial from its commercial expenditure. But the Act of 1813 required a separation of these accounts. Lord Hastings, after attending to the grave situation of the Company's finances, calculated that the acquisition of territory made by him would yield to the Company a net annual surplus of four millions of pounds. But in spite of the additions to territory, the period from 1813 to 1833 ended with an increase in the public debt.

* Kaye v 107.

of 17 millions. In that year the Company was deprived of its last traces of commercial monopoly and the Indian Exchequer was saddled with the burden of paying more than £60,0000 for dividends to proprietors of India Stock. The extension of territory in the period 1833-53 resulted in an enormous addition to the Public Debt as can be seen from the following table :—

1792	..	.. £ 7.1	millions	(appro.)
1814	..	.. 27.0	"	"
1829	..	.. 39.4	"	"
1850	..	.. 50.9	"	"

The Financial Position in 1851-52.—A natural result of recurring deficits and heavy additions to the debt was the increase and multiplication of taxation. In 1852 the principal heads of taxation were the following—the land tax, the salt tax, the customs, the opium sales, abkari, the Post Office, the Stamp duties, mint, the tobacco monopoly.

The system of land tax will be explained in the next chapter. The salt tax—which was very unpopular, and which bore heavily upon the poor—contributed to the revenue in three ways: as profits of the monopoly of manufacture, as an inland duty levied in that part of the country where the production was not restricted, and as customs on the salt imported from England. The opium revenue was derived from the sale of opium (which was prepared and cultivated under the auspices of the Company,) by auction to traders who exported it to China.

The productivity of the taxes was as follows—(1851-52).

Land tax .. . . .	..	14.25	millions.
Customs .. . . .	..	2.0	"
Salt .. . . .	..	1.25	"
Opium .. . . .	..	2.50	"
Abkari .. . . .	..	1.04	"
Stamps .. . . .	..	.50	"
Post Office .. . .	..	.20	"
Marine .. . . .	..	.20	"
Subsidies from Native States .. .	..	.65	"
Revenues from Lahore, Sindh &c. .	..	1.90	"

		24.5 Millions £s.	

The main items of *expenditure* were in 1850-51 the following :—

	Rs.
1. The Revenue Charges ..	2'00
2. The Judicial Charges ..	2'00
3. Custom Charges ..	.20
4. Marine Charges ..	.47
5. Military Charges ..	10'01
6. Interest on Debt ..	2'70
7. General Charges (allowance to Native Princes, Public Works, Education,) &c. ..	4'50
8. Home Charges ..	2'50

	24.38 Crores.

N.B.—1 million £.=1 crore of Rupees.

(21)

III—PUBLIC WORKS.

From the continued financial difficulties of the Company (as explained in the last section) one will not be wrong in inferring that no considerable outlays were made upon the construction of Public Works during this period. The average annual amount utilised for 'Public Works in India, comprising roads, bridges, embankments, canals, tanks and wells' was about 30 lacs of rupees. In 1837-38 it was 17 lacs; in 1851-52 it was 70 lacs. But in spite of this increase, one must admit "that the amount of money expended on such works is miserably small in comparison with the immense sums lavished on unproductive wars"*. As the same authority continues, "that roads have not been made, canals have not been dug, bridges have not been built, in the number and to the extent to which the interest of the country demanded, and the benevolence of its rulers desired, was so, solely because the money, which was necessary to the construction of such works has been abstracted from the public treasury to meet the expenditure incurred by the ruinous wars in which we have been engaged."

What progress was made was due entirely to the public spirit of Governor-Generals like Hastings, and Hardinge, to the lessons taught by the severe visitations of famine in North India which brought home to the authorities the necessity of construction of Irrigation works, and finally to the labours of Engineers like Colonel Bird Smith, and Sir Arthur Cotton.

As soon as some tranquility was established after the wars of Hastings, the attention of that Governor-General

* Kaye : 316.

was drawn to the extensive system of the Jamna and Ganges Canals constructed by the Moghul Emperors, which had fallen into ruins. The restoration, therefore, of the Western and Eastern canals of the Jamna, was the first great achievement of the new administration. The name of Colonel Colvin is associated with these works.

The famine of 1838-39 pointed to the restoration of the Ganges Canal—which was sanctioned by Lord Auckland—“a man of humane nature, and, when left to himself, of sound discretion in quiet times.”* Lord Ellenborough wished to have the canal mainly for the purposes of navigation, and under such conflicting views, no progress was made until the time of Lord Hardinge. The latter put his heart into the project and thus the great work was accomplished. The Ganges Canal has been described “as one of the most magnificent works in the world.”†

In the newly acquired province of the Punjab, the development of the country by irrigation was one of the leading ideas of Lawrence from the first. The proposals of Lawrence were cordially approved by Lord Dalhousie and materialized in the Baree Doab Canal.

Commenting upon the material and moral advantages of Irrigation, Kaye rightly observes: “To fertilise the land is to civilize the people. It is impossible to conceive anything that will have a greater effect upon the civilization of the inhabitants of Upper India than the great remedial measures which guard them collectively against all the barbarising and demoralising effects of famine, and secure to every man individually his daily bread.”‡

* Kaye 288.

† Kaye 301.

‡ Kaye : 304.

The question of irrigation in South India—where the physical conditions are different from those of the North was tackled by Sir Arthur Cotton, and he projected and far advanced large schemes in the deltas of the three great rivers in Peninsular India—the Krishna, the Godavari, and the Kavery.

Equally important was the provision of the means of communication—the Trunk Road from Calcutta to Delhi (1423 miles) and the Bombay Agra Road commenced in 1840, (740 miles) being the outstanding achievements in this direction.

In spite of these results, the general complaint against the Directors was that they did not apply sufficient funds for Public Works; nor did they allow such works to be undertaken by private agency. The history of Public works after the creation of a separate Department for them by Lord Dalhousie will be resumed in another section.

CHAPTER VII

HISTORY OF THE LAND REVENUE SETTLEMENTS.

During the whole regime of the Company and for years after land revenue was the main prop of Indian Finance. Also the collection of land revenue has always been the primary duty of every Indian Ruler. We must, therefore, carefully examine the various systems of Land Revenue Settlements in Bengal, Madras, Bombay, the North-West Provinces, the Punjab and the Central Provinces.

(22) I—THE PERMANENT SETTLEMENT OF BENGAL.

Reference has already been made to the experiments in land revenue collection made by the President and Council of Calcutta since the acquisition of Diwani in 1765, and to the reforms of Warren Hastings. The impoverished condition of the Rayats and Zamindars of Bengal as well as the general policy of Warren Hastings attracted great attention in England, and when Parliament passed the Act of 1784 it laid down definite reforms to be carried by the new Governor General *viz.*, Lord Cornwallis. The most important of the duties was the making of an inquiry into the injustice done to the Rajas, Zamindars, and other land-holders of Bengal, and "the settling, upon principles of moderation and justice, according to the laws and constitution of India, the *permanent* rules by which their tributes, rents and services shall be in future rendered and paid to the Company."

The first part of this duty namely the inquiry, was most admirably performed by Sir John Shore and embodied in his Minute of 18th June 1789. Lord Cornwallis, who had no previous knowledge of India, guided himself entirely by the advice of Sir John Shore and the declared view of the Directors "that a *moderate permanent* assessment was more beneficial both to the State and to the people than a heavy fluctuating one, and that it should be made with the *Zamindars.*"

Sir John Shore thus defined the rights of the Zamindars : "I consider the Zamindars as the proprietors of the soil, to the property of which they succeed by the right of inheritance, according to the laws of their own religion, and the sovereign authority cannot justly exercise the power of depriving them of the succession, nor of altering it when there are any legal heirs. The privilege of disposing the land by sale or mortgage is derived from this fundamental right and was exercised by the *Zamindars* before we acquired the *Diwani.*"

Not only was thus the proprietary right of the Zamindars thus acknowledged ; it was made more valuable by *fixing* the demand of the State at nine tenths of the rental. The share left to the Zamindar was no doubt very small, but it was expected that it would improve in course of time.

Sir John Shore was in favour of making the settlement permanent after the one made in 1789 for 10 years had run its course, and the sanction of the Court of Directors obtained for such a declaration. It was here that Cornwallis differed from Sir John. The former was so much anxious to give a sense of security to the Zamindars against increase of assessment, that he declared the settlement made in 1789 per-

manent, provided only the sanction of the Directors was obtained, which was done within two years. Thus the very first Regulation of 1793 embodied the Permanent Settlement of Bengal.

Criticism.—The most diverse views have been expressed with regard to the merits of the Permanent Settlement. A typically adverse view is that of the biographer of Cornwallis Mr. Seton Karr in the Rulers of India Series. He says :—

"Lord Cornwallis had only the experiments and the legacies of failure to guide him. Pressed for ways and means and anxious for reforms in more departments than one, he committed himself to a policy which in regard to the three interested parties, the Zamindar, the Rayat, and the Ruling Power—assured the welfare of the first, somewhat postponed the claims of the second, and sacrificed the increment of the third."

On the other hand, a very high authority on land revenue administration—the late Mr. R. C. Dutt, characterised the measure as one that "has done more to secure the prosperity and happiness of British subjects in India than any other single measure of the British Government."*

A complete discussion of and final judgment upon the Permanent Settlement must be postponed until we have passed under review the settlements in other Provinces of India. But there is no doubt that the class that benefited most by the measure of Cornwallis was that of the Zamindars. Though their share of the rental at the time of the settlement was only 1/10th of the gross rental, competent authorities now reckon it at 75 p.c. of the rental,† Government getting only

* Dutt : Early British Rule p. 9

† Shah page 9.

25 p.c. as land revenue. It was the expectation of Lord Cornwallis that the Zamindars would devote an increasing share of their wealth to the improvement of land. But the general opinion is that they have not improved the land to any considerable extent ; but it has to be admitted that the wider diffusion of education and the cultivation of literature and art, which we find in Bengal are to be traced to the wealthy and leisured class of Zamindars to be found there.

The condition of the *Rayats* changed for the worse rather than improved, for some years after the Permanent Settlement ; for though the State had fixed for ever its own demand on the Zamindars, the latter could take as much as they liked from their tenants. A whole series of laws—known as Tenancy Acts—had to be passed before all the advantages of the settlement reached the Rayats. But even with this reservation it is worth while referring here to the testimony of Sir John Malcolm who said “ I must ever think it (the permanent settlement) one of the most wise and benevolent plans that ever was conceived by Government to render its subjects rich and comfortable.”

That the Permanent Settlement has entailed upon the State an enormous loss of revenue, cannot be gainsaid. It is no answer to this criticism to say that the State can compensate itself for the loss of land revenue of a particular Province, by overtaxing other Provinces, or interests other than agriculture in the same Province. It was this loss of revenue that disposed the authorities in England to look askance at the Permanent Settlement. They opposed its extension to other Provinces of India and after a controversy that raged for more than three quarters of a century, rejected it altogether. A word will be said about this controversy at a later stage.

(23)

II—LAND SETTLEMENT IN MADRAS.

Condition of the Karnatic.—The protracted struggle between the English and the French had told heavily upon the condition of the cultivators and the Nabab was a mere puppet in the hands of the Madras Council. He had borrowed extensively from the Servants of the Company and made assignments of land-revenue to his British money-lenders who, to recoup themselves, extorted as much money from the people as possible. The misery of the people was increased by the wars with Hyder and Tippu.

To turn next to the condition of the *Northern Sarkars*.—After the acquisition of these Sirkars, a Committee of Circuit was appointed in 1775 to inquire into the condition of these Districts and its inquiries lasted till 1788. It appeared that the lands were principally held by Zamindars who were the descendants of the ancient Hindu Rajas who paid a fixed tribute to the Mahomedan Government. Besides these Zamindars there were certain demesne or household lands of Government known as *Haveli* lands, which, after division into suitable lots were granted out to agents. Both in Zamindar and Haveli territories there existed Village Communities.

With the Zamindars short Settlements were made from time to time ; The Company's Chief and Council were abolished and Collectors, under the control of the Board of Revenue were appointed in 1794. By that time the Permanent Settlement had been made in Bengal and it was extended to the Sarkars between 1802-1805 during the regime of Lord Clive, the son of the Victor of Plassey. The Haveli lands, also, between 1812-14 were parcelled out into blocks and sold by auction as Permanent Zamindari Estates.

But this Permanent Zamindari Settlement was confined to the Northern Sarkars alone. When in 1792 the *Baramahals* were taken from Tippu, their administration was entrusted to a group of soldiers headed by Captain Read. One of his assistants was the celebrated Thomas Munro whose name is associated with the Revenue Settlement of Madras, known as the Raytwar Settlement.

From Baramahal, Munro was transferred to the large tract between the Krishna and the Tungabadra known as the "Ceded Districts." It was here that during seven long years (1800-1807) Munro perfected himself in the service in which he had graduated under Read. In an elaborate Minute submitted to the Board of Revenue, he thus described the plan of the Raytwari Settlement :

- (1) the Settlement should be Raytwari.
- (2) the amount of Settlement shall increase and decrease annually according to the extent of land in cultivation.
- (3) a reduction of 25 p. c. on all lands shall be made in the survey-rate of assessment.
- (4) An additional reduction of 8 p. c. or 33 p. c. in all shall be allowed on all lands watered by wells, tanks, &c.
- (5) Every Rayt shall be at liberty, at the end of every year, either to throw up a part of his land, or to occupy more, according to his circumstances.
- (6) Every Rayt, as long as he pays the rent of his land, shall be considered as the complete owner of the soil, and shall be at liberty to let it to a tenant, without any hesitation as to rent, and to sell it as he pleases.

- (7) No remission to be made, on ordinary occasion, for bad crops or for other accidents.
- (8) All unoccupied land shall remain in the hands of Government.
- (9) Patil, Curnums and other Village Servants shall remain, as heretofore, under the Collector.”*

The Madras Board of Revenue did not approve this Settlement. They called it an Herculean task, or rather a visionary project, to fix a land rent—not on each province, district or county, nor on each estate or farm, but on every separate field in the dominion. They further referred to the tendency of such a settlement ‘to dissolve the ancient tie which united the republic of each Hindu village’ and to the certainty of its practically abolishing private property in land. In the place of the Raytwari, they adopted in those District, where no Settlement had yet been made, the *Village* or *Mahawari* Settlement. “It differed from the Raytwari chiefly in the assessment being fixed on the entire aggregate lands of the village, not on each distinct and separate field, in its being concluded with all the Rayts collectively, not with each individually; and in its giving up to the Rayts not only the revenues to be derived from the arable land, but that also to be obtained by after exertion from the waste also; in fact, in leaving in consideration of a contract to pay a given sum as public revenue, the entire internal administration of affairs to the Village Community. “The object of this Settlement was to adapt the revenue administration to the ancient institutions and ancient usages of the country, to which the Hindus are proverbially attached; to suit the system to the

* Kaye : 219-20 (condensed.)

people and not to attempt to bend the people to the system."*

It will thus be seen that there were at this time three distinct revenue Systems in Madras : the Permanent Zamindari System in the Northern Sarkars ; the Raytwari System in Malabar ,Canara, Coimbatore, Madura, Dindigul ; and the Village System in the Ceded Districts, in Nellore, Arcot, Palnand, Trichinopoly, Tinnevelly and Tanjore.

" For a quarter of a century now under the Madras Government a series of experiments in land revenue had been going on. One system had been displaced to make way for another ; each had been tried in turn, and it was alleged that in turn each had failed. They had all failed, more or less, because the lands had been overassessed."†

The final decision of the Court of Directors to adopt the Raytwari Settlement was undoubtedly due to the influence exercised on them by Sir Thomas Munro who had gone to England in 1807. At the same time they realized how the land had suffered under over-assessment. When, therefore, Munro returned to India a second time as the Governor of Madras, he was authorized to adopt the Raytwari Settlement and he made a general reduction of from 25 to 33 p.c. of the original assessment.

The extension of the Raytwari Settlement in Madras involved the partial or complete wiping out of large classes of landlords who occupied positions corresponding to the Zamindars of Bengal. Thus the hereditary Rajas and Nair Chiefs of the Malabar District ; the Zamindars—known as Pattackdars in the kingdom of Tanjore annexed by Lord Wellesley ; and finally the class of Polygars in the *Karnatak*

* Kaye 222.

† Kaye : 224.

after its annexation in 1801, were swept aside. In the last case the Polygars—who were always a military and turbulent class rose into insurrection but were ruthlessly put down, most of them were deprived of their land, and after 1803, permanent Settlement was made with such of them as had survived the late harsh treatment. But in greater part of the Karnatic, Settlement was made directly with the cultivators.

Not only were the different orders of society reduced to the same level, the Settlement also gave the death-blow to the Village Communities. Though Sir Thomas Munro did all he could to foster them, organized the Panchayats, and revived their Judicial powers, this ancient institution declined under the pressure of British Administration.

It should also be noted that an essential feature of the Raytwari Settlement as conceived by Munro—namely the *permanency* of assessment was not accepted by the Court of Directors. The result was that the Madras Rayts steadily deteriorated after the departure of Munro; there were reports of the use of torture for the exaction of assessment; and a debate was raised in the House of Commons in 1854 in which John Bright gave a very harrowing picture of the condition of the Madras Rayts. A new Settlement was, therefore ordered in 1855.

(24) III—RAYATWARI SETTLEMENT IN BOMBAY.

Elphinstone's Proposals.—Elphinstone was appointed Commissioner of the Deccan in 1818 to settle the country of the Peshwa. His '*Report on the territories conquered from the Peshwa*' is a historical document. He showed how Village Communities were to be found everywhere in the Deccan and described minutely their constitution and internal

economy. He distinguished between two kinds of cultivators in the Deccan ; those who were proprietors of the soil and those who were more or less tenants at will. Pointing to the large class of peasant proprietors of the first kind known as *Mirasadars*, he said " They are proprietors of their estates, subject to the payment of a fixed land-tax to Government ; their property is hereditary and saleable and they are never dispossessed while they pay their tax and even then they have for a long period (at least thirty years) the right of reclaiming their estates on paying the dues of Government. The other class is that of *Upari* cultivators. Elphinstone also referred to the valuable work of the Village Panchayats and urged that for the pacification and improvement of the country " our principal instrument must continue to be the Panchayat, and that must continue to be exempt from all new forms, interference, and regulation on our part."

When Elphinstone became Governor in 1819 Chaplain was appointed Commissioner and his report on the condition of the Deccan is also equally valuable. Elphinstone's idea was to preserve whatever was valuable and useful in the institutions of the Deccan. His proposal was to settle, after a survey, what each cultivator should pay to the State, and then to realize this from each village through the Patil. By this means he wished at once to preserve the Village Community as symbolized by the Patil and at the same time to safeguard the fiscal interests of the State. But herein lay the weak spot of his proposal. If the share of each cultivator was to be determined by the Officers of Government, what was the necessity of keeping up the Patil and the Village Council thus deprived of their most important function of distributing the collective assessment among the cultivators ? This

weak point was too obvious to escape the notice of the Directors, and they rejected Elphinstone's proposals.

To the ruinous effect of excessive demand of the State testimony is borne by the report of Dr. Francis Buchanan who travelled extensively throughout India and by the Journal of Bishop Heber who made a tour in 1824-25-26.

Settlement Operations.—A preliminary Settlement Survey was commenced by Pringle (1824-28). It was based upon Government share being fixed at 55 per cent. of the net produce of the land. Though the principle was sound, it was not properly applied and a fresh survey was undertaken in 1835 by Goldsmid and Lieutenant Wingate. It proceeded on the simple expedient of ascertaining the average character and depth of the *soil* in each field, and classifying it accordingly. This principle based upon the geological examination of the soil though defective in theory, was applied with moderation by Wingate: The results of this Settlement are embodied in the Joint Report of 2 May 1847 of Goldsmid, Capt. Wingate and Capt. Davidson. It explained the principle thus: *firstly*, it was based upon the assessment of each field separately, and not of holdings or villages collectively; *secondly*, it granted long leases for thirty years instead of the short leases which had preceded; and *thirdly*, it abandoned the basis of produce estimate and substituted the estimated value of lands (from the point of view of depth and colour of soil) as the basis of assessment. Lands were classified according to their depth (which determines the power of imbibing and retaining moisture) and also according to colour and texture. The land of first order was of fine uniform texture, varying in colour, from deep black to dark brown; of second order, of uniform but coarser texture and lighter

in colour than the preceding order ; third order of land of coarse, gravelly and loose friable texture and colour varying from light brown to grey. The resultant value of land was expressed in terms of annas per rupee.

The demand for the whole District was arbitrarily fixed 'from the past history of the District,' and this was distributed among the fields according to the relative values as determined above. The cultivator had no voice in determining the demand and he was entirely at the mercy of the petty revenue officials.

The country suffered great hardships ; the village communities declined ; the landed aristocracy disappeared. The results were exactly similar to those that were observed in the case of Madras. A reduction of assessment was ordered and 'the revision' was going on at the time when the Company's administration came to a close.

(25) IV—THE LAND SETTLEMENT IN THE NORTH WEST PROVINCE.

The North-West Province was formed in four stages :

1775—Annexation of Benares and adjoining territory by Warren Hastings;

1801 The 'Ceded Districts' from the Nabab of Oudh, acquired by Wellesley.

1803 The 'Conquered Districts'—the territory between the Ganges and the Jumna, after the Maratha War.

1856 Annexation of Oudh by Lord Dalhousie.

In 1795 Sir John Shore extended to Benares the Permanent Zamindari Settlement and also the Bengal Code.

Immediately after the acquisition of the Ceded Districts Marquis Wellesley appointed a Commission of three civilians

and his brother Henry Wellesley as the Lieutenant Governor and President of the Board. Regarding the settlement of land Revenue, it was proposed to have two triennial settlements to be followed by a settlement which after a further period of four years was to be declared *Permanent*. Thus the Government pledged itself, in a most solemn manner, and as a result of their own Regulations, to a Permanent Settlement after an aggregate period of *ten* years from the first Settlement of Henry Wellesley in the Ceded Districts. A similar pledge was also given to the land-holders in the Conquered districts.

On account of the preliminary settlements which were always most exacting, and as a result of the ravages of the Maratha War a terrible famine visited the Ceded and Conquered Districts in 1804 and a Commission of R. W. Cox and Henry St. John Tucker was appointed to go into the question of the impending settlement, and this Commission was the first to sound a note of warning against a permanent settlement; though they had every disposition in favour of a permanent settlement they said "we submit to Your Lordship in Council our deliberate and unqualified opinion that the measure, considered with relation to the Ceded and Conquered provinces generally, is at this moment unseasonable, and that any premature attempt to introduce it must necessarily be attended with a material sacrifice of the public resources, and may, in particular cases, prove injurious to the parties themselves, whose prosperity it is the chief object of the measure to secure upon a durable foundation."

Lord Minto, however, and the members of his Council felt otherwise and they pressed the necessity of a permanent settlement upon the Court of Directors. But the warning of the special Commission was not lost upon the Directors and

they in their despatch of 27th November 1811 wrote "the object of the present despatch is to caution you in the most pointed manner against pledging us to the extension of the Bengal fixed assessment to our newly acquired territories."

Protests were made against the injustice of this order by Lord Minto, and by Lord Hastings. But the Directors were firm as adamant. In their final despatch of August 1821, they repeated their orders of January 1819 and required the Government not only to abstain from making a permanent settlement but "from taking any measure which may raise the expectation that a settlement in perpetuity will hereafter be formed."

Meanwhile short settlements were made with proprietors and pseudo-proprietors and on the whole the old landlords suffered great hardships and losses. They stood "bewildered, confused, dismayed, scarcely knowing by what strange juggling they were suddenly, but almost imperceptibly being deprived of their rights."*

Mahalwari Settlement.—When the idea of a permanent Settlement was abandoned in 1820 the plan of settling with the village communities whose existence was discovered by Holt-Mackenzie was adopted by Regulation VI of 1822. It pledged the Government to ascertain and when ascertained, to recognize, the territorial rights of all classes. It was its object "to introduce a scientific survey of the country, to mark carefully and to record the boundaries of every village, to register the separate possessions, rights, privileges and responsibilities of those communities who hold their lands in severalty and of the several interests of those who hold their land in common."† The revision of the settlement

* Kage 245 : 245.

† Kaye : 251.

was to be made village by village and estate by estate and as an estate is called a Mahal, the settlement was called *Mahalwari* settlement. When there was an intermediate Zamindar, the assessment was to be 80 p. c. of the rental, and when the estates were held directly by the cultivators in common tenancy it might be 95 p. c. of the rent.

(26)

V—LIEUT. GENERAL JOHN BRIGGS.

From this brief account of the land settlements of Bengal, Madras, Bombay and the North-West Province, it is evident that the theory underlying each was that the state was entitled to the '*rent*' of land. The notion of '*rent*' resulting from cultivation had been developed by Ricardo. Lord Cornwallis, on the false analogy that the Bengal Zamindar held a position comparable to that of an English landlord applied the theory of '*rent*' to Indian conditions. According to this theory, when population increases, the more inferior lands are brought under cultivation, and the owners of the superior lands get what is called '*rent*' which is the difference between the costs of production of food grain on the inferior and superior lands. In practice, this theory justifies the appropriation by the State of that portion of Rent which is due to increase of population, and for which, therefore, the owner has not laboured. It is his '*unearned*' increment of Rent. This theory, during the first half of the Nineteenth Century held undisputed sway in England. It was accepted by John Stuart Mill, who, on account of his position in the India Office as the Examiner of Correspondence, was able to exercise a decisive influence on the policy of Indian Land Revenue. He maintained that "if the land tax were limited to the rent only, then the revenue system of India would be the best in the world."

The most emphatic protest against this view of the Indian Land Revenue as rent was raised by Lieut.-General John Briggs—the well-known Translator of Ferishta, and also a great historian, and administrator. He had excellent opportunities of studying first hand this question of land revenue. His monumental work on "*The Present Land-Tax in India*" was published in 1830. Its main conclusions were : (1) that the integrity of private property in land had been recognized in every Village in India : (2) that Government had no right whatever to the land, but to a share in its produce that is to a *tax*, which did not affect the proprietary rights in land ; (3) that the Government share or tax was defined and limited both by Hindoo and Mahomedan Law and the Government had no title or precedents (except revolutionary ones) for taxing the people at discretion) and no more right to claim the property in land and take its 'rent' than a tithe owner has to claim another man's property because it pays him tithe ; (4) that the Native institutions themselves afforded a broad basis for the Administration, on which a durable Empire could be established."*

Summarising the defects of the theory on which the Company proceeded he said " Having assumed that the Government is the sole landlord, it considers the land to be the most profitable source of all revenue ; it employs a host of public servants to superintend the cultivation, and it professes to take all the profits. A land tax like that which now exists in India, professing to absorb the whole of the land lord's rent, was never known under any Government in Europe or Asia."

* John Dickinson : Page 39,

(27) VI—LORD WILLIAM BENTINCK'S POLICY.

Brigg's work produced a strong impression upon Bentinck. He drew up a series of Regulations which were sent to General Briggs who was at that time Resident at Nagpur, and which were the foundation of the settlement in North West Province. In his extensive tour in North India Lord William Bentinck was struck with the fatal weakness of the Regulation of 1822 namely its exorbitant demand of 80 p. c. of the rental. He immediately reduced it to 67 p. c. He also tried to preserve the integrity of the Village Communities in whose behalf Sir Charles Metcalfe had recorded his eloquent Minute of 1830.

Principles of the Mahalwari Settlement.—The principles of Bentinck's settlement were embodied in Regulation IX of 1833. The task of applying this Regulation in practice fell upon Robert Mertins Bird who laboured from 1833 to 1843 and whose name is as much famous in the North West Province as that of Munro is in Madras. Bird's settlement operations were completed by James Thomason who afterwards became the Lieut. Governor of that province. His "*Directions for Settlement Officers*" was the first complete Code of Settlement compiled in India. The principles of this settlement were thus laid down :—

First :—All the inhabited parts of the country are divided into portions with fixed boundaries called Mahals : on each Mahal a sum is assessed for the term of twenty or thirty years, calculated so as to leave a fair surplus over and above the nett produce of the land and for the punctual payment of that sum the land is held to be perpetually hypothecated to the Government. *Secondly* :—It is determined who are the

person or persons entitled to receive this surplus profit. The right thus determined is declared to be heritable and transferable and the persons entitled to it are considered the proprietors of the land from whom the engagements for the annual payment of the sum assessed by the Government of the Mahal are taken. *Thirdly* :—All the proprietors of a Mahal are jointly and severally responsible in their persons and property for the payment of the sum assessed by the Government on the Mahal.

Bird had intended to fix the assessment for ever in those parts of the province where cultivation had reached the maximum limit. But this intention was disregarded. Again, the Village Patwari—a paid agent was invested with powers that ought to have belonged to the Village Community; the inevitable result of these two measures was the gradual impoverishment of the Rayats and the disruption of the Village Community. As has been well said. “The decidedly levelling character calculated so to flatten the whole surface of society as eventually to leave little of distinguishable eminence between the Ruling Power and the cultivators of the soil” was not checked.

The completed settlement was approved of by the Directors in their despatch of August 13, 1851. But it was soon found that the demand of State fixed at $\frac{2}{3}$ of the net assets (*i.e.* the surplus which the estate may yield, after deducting the expenses of cultivation including the profits of stock and wages of labour) was excessive, and therefore when the resettlement of the province commenced with the Shaharanpur District, the State demand was revised by fixing it at 50 per cent of the assets—by the famous Shaharanpur Rule.

(28) VII—THE VILLAGE SETTLEMENT IN THE PUNJAB.

History of the Settlement.—A part of the Punjab was annexed as the result of the First and the whole of it as a result of the Second Sikh War (1849). Under the rule of Ranjit Singh, the land tax was theoretically one half of the produce of land ; it was collected in kind by powerful and military Governors in the more distant and unruly parts of his empire, and by Agents in the more peaceful or settled districts. The system rested on the acknowledgment of the proprietary right in the land and on the existence of village communities.

At the suggestion of Henry Lawrence the produce tax was converted into money. After the annexation a Board was appointed with Henry Lawrence as President and John Lawrence as a Member. But as the policy and temperament of the two brothers could not agree, both resigned and Lord Dalhousie, who fell in with the Imperial ideas and narrow views of John Lawrence, made him the President. Under his direction, the village communities were practically ignored. The Government share was reduced from $\frac{1}{2}$ to $\frac{1}{4}$ and then to $\frac{1}{6}$ of the gross produce of land or to one half of the net rental.

Mill's Description of the Settlement.—The general nature of this settlement has been well described by John Stuart Mill in a paper submitted to Parliament in 1857.

" In the Punjab one and the same man is usually the absolute proprietor and generally the sole cultivator, though he may occasionally lease out a few acres to tenants. He is saddled with no rent. But these men, well maintaining their individuality, do yet belong to the Village Communities. A village is not inhabited by a certain number of Rayats each unconnected with the other, but by a number of persons of

common descent, forming one large cousinhood, having their own headman and accustomed to joint action and mutual support.

The British Government has from the first decided on levying the tax by money payments assessed for a number of years. The peasant proprietors compound with the State for a fixed period, such assessment and compounding being technically called Settlement. But the Proprietors do not individually engage with the Government, but by villages. The brotherhood, through its headmen or representatives, undertakes to pay so much for so many years; and then, having done this, they divide the amount among themselves assigning to each man his quota. Primarily each man cultivates and pays for himself but ultimately he is responsible for its coparceners and they for him and they are bound together by a joint liability. The Punjab system therefore, is not Rayatwari, nor Zamindari, but the *Village System*.

(29) VIII—MALGUZARI SETTLEMENT IN THE CENTRAL PROVINCES.

The C. P. were formed at different times. The Raja of Nagpur ceded the Sagar and Narbada Territories in 1817 after the Third Maratha War. In 1849 Lord Dalhousie annexed the State of Samabalpur as the Raja died without an heir; and in 1853 the whole of the territories of the Raja of Nagpur was annexed as the claims of the adopted son were set aside. All the tracts were placed under the Chief Commissioner of Central Provinces in 1861 by Lord Canning.

The Sagar and Narbada Territory suffered so much under excessive and frequent settlements that in 1834 Robert Mertins Bird was appointed to make a special report and as a result of this a twenty years' settlement was made in

that year. Short term settlements were made in Nagpur and Sambalpur after their acquisition, but it was not till 1861 that a proper settlement was made. Sir Richard Temple—who had been an assistant of Thomason and Lawrence—was in favour of a permanent Settlement, which, he argued, was good both for the subjects and the State. The latter would be compensated for the loss of its prospective land revenue by the gradual increase of other branches of revenue. These branches entirely depended upon the wealth of the people and nothing contributed so much to augment that wealth as a Permanent Settlement.

But while this question was being debated, a new settlement was begun in 1863 of which the chief feature was the recognition of the rights of *Malguzars* or Revenue Payers. They were also given the right of transferring or dividing the right; and the half rental rule was applied to determine the demand of Government. In the latter case, however, the Settlement Officers put a narrow interpretation. They based their demand not on the *actual* rental but on *prospective* rental and this hit hard both the proprietors and the tenants. The settlement was to last for thirty years.

(30)

IX—SUMMARY AND CONCLUSION

We have thus passed under rapid review the principal land-settlements made during the regime of the East India Company—namely, those in Bengal, Madras, Bombay, North-West Provinces, the Punjab and (partly) the Central Provinces. I shall give, in a subsequent chapter, the development of the Land-Revenue Policy under the Crown and the technical details of its administration. But the foregoing account shows that the main lineaments of that policy were

fixed in the pre-Mutiny period. When the Charter was renewed in 1853 special attention was paid to this question. The Directors were against the Permanent Settlement but they admitted that the Indian land Revenue was a *tax* and not a *Rent*. Thus in their famous Despatch of December 17, 1856 they said : "The right of the Government is not a *Rent* which consists of all the surplus produce after paying the cost of cultivation and the profits of agricultural stock, but a *land-revenue* only, which ought, if possible, to be so lightly assessed as to leave a surplus or *Rent* to the occupier whether he, in fact, let the land to others, or retain it in his own hands."

The Half-Rental Rule and the 30 years Settlement were also accepted, though, in practice, there were wide and frequent departures from it, particularly in the sparsely peopled parts of India e.g., the Punjab, the Central Provinces &c.

CHAPTER VIII

JUDICIAL REFORMS OF CORNWALLIS & BENTINCK AND THE CHARTER ACT OF 1833.

(31)

INTRODUCTORY.

We considered in the first Chapter how, thanks mainly to the resourcefulness and energy of Clive, British power was firmly established in Madras as against the French, and in Bengal as against the Nabab of that Province. The misrule that ensued in Bengal attracted the attention of Parliament which, by the two Acts described in the second Chapter, established control over the affairs of the Company. The first Parliamentary Governor-General to be sent to India was Lord Cornwallis—a nobleman, statesman, and soldier and therefore peculiarly qualified to deal with the very pressing questions of revenue settlement and judicial administration in Bengal. Some account has already been given of his Permanent Settlement. Here we shall deal with his Judicial Reforms.

(32)

II—JUDICIAL REFORMS OF CORNWALLIS.

Reference has already been made to the work of Warren Hastings in this connection. It was continued by Lord Cornwallis. In the first few years of his regime he had to give effect to the specific proposals of the Court of Directors regarding the administration of justice. Thus by a Regulation of 1787 the duties of the Judge and the Collector of revenue

were combined into the same hands ; and the Magistrate was authorized not only to apprehend but to try all offenders. The great increase of crime in Bengal induced the Governor-General in Council to resume the administration of criminal jurisdiction throughout the Provinces. Four Courts of Circuit were accordingly created, each under two European Judges. And the Supreme Criminal Court (Sadar Nizamat Adalat) at Calcutta came to be presided over by the Governor-General and the Council. By this step the Mahomedan Judges were excluded from all share in judicial administration.

These measures had concentrated all powers—revenue, judicial and magisterial—into the hands of a single Officer—the Collector. “The benevolent mind of Lord Cornwallis had long been brooding over the defects of the existing Regulations, and the discouraging results of all that had yet been done for the protection of the inhabitants of the Provinces in Bengal. He believed that the establishment of the Courts of Circuit and the reorganization of the Police had conferred substantial benefits upon the people. But it was painfully obvious that the Civil Courts, presided over as they then were by the Revenue Officers, had been converted into instruments of oppression, and that the inhabitants of the Provinces were groaning under the wrongs which had been inflicted upon them by officers in whom the fiscal and judicial authorities had been so unwisely combined, and who consummated in one capacity the injuries which they originated in the other.*

It was to remove this radical defect of unchecked power that Cornwallis passed his Regulations of 1790. He first of all vested Revenue and Judicial Administration in sepa-

* Kaye 336.

rate hands. Then he set up Provincial Courts of appeal at Patna, Murshedabad, Dacca and Calcutta to hear appeals from the District Courts and appeals against the Provincial Courts lying to the Sadar Courts at Calcutta. But though Cornwallis insisted that the appointments of the Judge should be regarded the first in the Civil Service, he did not take away from them Magisterial powers.

Cornwallis however, was not satisfied with a mere reform in the machinery of administration. He had seen how entirely the Native inhabitants were exposed to the unchecked jurisdiction of the Officers of the Company. He was eager to give to the helpless inhabitants some means of redress against the officers. He made all the officers amenable to the Courts of Law. "We have resolved, likewise, that the Collectors of revenue and their Officers, and indeed all the Officers of the Government, shall be amenable to the Courts for acts done in their official capacities, and that Government itself, in cases in which it may be a party with its subjects in matters of property, shall submit its rights to be tried in the Courts under existing laws and Regulations."

Cornwallis also turned his attention to systematic codification of the Regulations. As has been already explained the power of passing such Regulations was conferred on the Governor-General and Council by the Regulating Act. But they had not been systematically collected or arranged : some were not even printed. Cornwallis ordered that all such Regulations should be numbered, arranged, printed and circulated for the guidance of all concerned.

Review and Criticisms.—That these measures of Cornwallis were not free from defects of their own is admitted by all. Particularly, it has been said against them that they—by

the facilities for appeals which they provided—aggravated the litigious tendencies of the population.

Reference should also be made here to what Cornwallis did to improve the 'tone' of the servants of the Company. Realising the significance their metamorphosis from merchants into administrators and public servants he gave them adequate salaries.

But the chief defect in this work of Cornwallis was the entire exclusion of Indians from a share in the administration of their own country. The lamentable results of this policy balked his reforms of the success to which they were otherwise fully entitled.

Half a century of territorial expansion had to intervene before the work of Cornwallis was resumed by Lord William Bentinck.

(33) THE REFORMS OF LORD WILLIAM BENTINCK.

The Judicial measures of Lord Cornwallis in their turn gave rise to new abuses. "That justice should be cheap and the judgment seat accessible are two of the first essentials of a pure judicial system and Cornwallis endeavoured to secure both the accessibility and cheapness of the Courts." But this only increased litigation : the English Judges also, in their eagerness to adhere to the letter of the Regulations, were very slow in deciding cases, and thus there was a frightful accumulation of judicial work. The remedy adopted to mitigate this evil was worse than the disease. Court fees were imposed to check litigation. Thus justice became again dear.

The judicial system of Cornwallis was in operation for nearly 40 years before it was substantially improved by

Lord William Bentinck. "Of all the Governors who succeeded Cornwallis he most resembled that benevolent and upright statesman. As Cornwallis was a reformer, so was Bentinck. He had abundant time to devote himself to measures of domestic improvement, for no miserable war was sitting like a curse upon his arm and paralysing his administrative energies.*

The first reform of Bentinck was the abolishing of the Provincial Courts. They had become "the resting places for those members of the service who were deemed unfit for higher responsibilities." The dilatoriness of these courts as courts of justice was particularly notorious and inflicted great hardships upon the accused and the witnesses.

The next measure of Bentinck was of a retrograde character Cornwallis had separated the Judicial from the Revenue functions. Bentinck now transferred the duties of the Sessions to the Civil Judges and as the latter were also Magistrates, their Magisterial functions were again vested in the Collector. This arrangement proved most unsatisfactory. As Kaye says "the office of the thief-catcher was postponed to that of the financier and the department of Police was the worst regulated of any branch of administration."*

As the conquests in North India had added considerably to the Presidency of Bengal, Bentick established a Court of appeal for the North-West Provinces at Allahabad.

But the greatest reform of Bentinck lay in the introduction of Indians to the more important places in the Judicial Administration. It was complained that those who were too old or unfit for revenue work were made judges. They were ignorant of the language of the people and of their legal and

* Kaye 345.

† Kaye Page 348.

social Institutions. They were also too much given to 'artificial technicalities of law.' On account of these causes judicial administration was fast falling into a chaos and the desirability of entrusting a substantial part of it to Indian Agency to clear off the heavy arrears, if for no other reason, had been repeatedly admitted by the Court of Directors. But no step had been taken in that direction. The powers of the Sadar Ameens and the Munsiffs which were the only two classes of service open to Indians—were very limited. Bentinck established in 1831 a higher grade of Judicial Officer known as "Principal Sadar Ameens" who were authorised to try cases involving property of any amount. An appeal lay from them to the European Judges.

The reform of the Criminal Branch of Judicial administration was not so easy. The only steps in that direction were (1) the appointment of uncovenanted servants as Deputy Magistrates (in 1843) in any district, at the discretion of the Bengal and Agra Governments, and armed with full Magisterial powers; and (2) improvement in the pay and status of the 'Daroga' to enable this officer to discharge his Police functions properly.

Criticism.—The reforms of Cornwallis and Bentinck were no doubt a great improvement upon the old state of things. But they could not easily fill the void caused by the destruction of the village communities in India. It is well-known how with the help of the Patil (headman) and Kulkarni (record-keeper), the communities were able to enjoy internal peace, and detect crime. Sympathetic administrators like Elphinstone and Malcolm attributed the contentment and security of the people—in spite of the mis-government of the Central Authority—to their admirable system of village

communities. Malcolm was particularly struck with the persistence with which the community adhered to its village site and organization whenever they were threatened or destroyed by political revolutions or foreign invasions. But these communities could not survive under the pressure of British administration, and the result was, that during the long time that new institutions were rising to take the place of the old, (always a slow process), the country was infested with a recrudescence of crime and lawlessness of which no idea can be formed at this distance of time.

(34)

IV—THE CHARTER ACT OF 1833.

The Charter Act of 1833.—The state of laws that obtained at the time of Lord William Bentinck was hardly better than that of judicial administration described in the last section. It was here, however, that a very important change was brought about by the Charter Act of 1833. Lord Morley characterised this Act as "Certainly the most extensive measure of Indian Government between Mr. Pitt's famous Act of 1784 and Queen Victoria's assumption of the Government of India."* To appreciate this high praise we must recall the changed circumstances—both in India and in England—under which that measure was enacted. The wars of Wellesley and Hastings had added enormously to the territories under British Rule, and to the difficulties of administration in India. In England, on account of reform of Parliament, liberal principles were in the ascendant; (1) there was a clamour for freedom of trade with India, (2) for the unrestricted immigration of Europeans into India; (3) for a reform of the laws of India; (4) and of the state of Education prevailing therein.

* Speech (Keith Volume II 95).

In response to the first demand the last traces of the commercial monopoly of the East India Company were abolished, and the Company thenceforward became a purely political body.

To satisfy the second demand all restrictions upon the immigration of Europeans into India were removed ; they could now settle in any part of India that was in British possession, without the requirement of a license.

Reform in Indian Legislation.—The unrestricted ingress into India of Englishmen rendered the reform of the Indian Law almost imperative. Lord Macaulay had well pointed out the danger of exposing the Indian population to the tyranny and insolence of the conquering race. As he put it “ India has suffered enough already from the distinctions of castes and from the deeply rooted prejudices which those distinctions have engendered. God forbid that we should inflict on her the curse of a new caste, that we should send her a new breed of Brahmins, authorized to treat all the native population as Parias.”*

The dangers of the situation were increased by the very defective power of law-making that was enjoyed by the Governor-General in Council. Hitherto the Regulations had been made with special reference to the Indian population and to the servants of the Company. Nor could the Regulations have any jurisdiction over the Supreme Court which owed its origin to a Royal Charter. The first thing to do, therefore, was to increase and extend the legislative power of the Governor-General in Council so as to reach the European Settlers. He was accordingly, empowered “ to make laws and regulations for *all persons* (British, Foreigners, or

* Speech July 1833 (Keith).

Natives), and for *all Courts* (*i.e.*, the Courts of the Company and the Supreme Court)." Such laws were not required to be registered in the Supreme Court and forthwith became *Acts* of the Governor-General in Council.

A reform of the machinery for the making of laws was required on another ground also—namely the chaotic state into which laws and Regulations had fallen about 1833.

At the time of considering the judicial reforms of Warren Hastings reference was made to the triumph of Hastings in his struggle against the Supreme Court as to the laws that were to be applied to the Indian subjects of the East India Company. "The Act of 1781 laid down that in suits between Natives within the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court regard should be paid to the personal law of the party whether Hindu or Mahomedan, and where the parties were under different personal laws, to that of the defendant. It was likewise prescribed that no act committed in consequence of a rule or law of caste in Native families should be held to be a crime, although it might not be justifiable under the laws of England."*

But though it now became possible for the personal law of the Hindus and Mahomedans to be developed, the principle was neither universal nor satisfactory; (*a*) thus, there were many communities, numerically small but socially and politically of increasing importance, *e.g.*, the Parsees, the Jains, the Portuguese, the Armenians etc., which were outside the pale of the Native Law; (*b*) again there were large areas of modern life for which neither the Hindu nor the Mahomedan law could have made any provision; (*c*) further, as the Mahomedan Law was applied in criminal trials, it inflicted great

* Chailley : 350.

hardships upon the non-Mahomedans ; (d) nor were some of the punishments prescribed by the Native Law e.g. mutilation, in consonance with modern views.

A practical difficulty in the application of the personal law arose from two further causes ; (1) the Mahomedan Law was contained in the Koran and other texts ; the Hindu Law in the Shastras and Commentaries thereon. It was not easy to interpret the texts or reconcile conflicting authorities. (2) In actual practice, the laws—as contained in the texts—were modified by custom.

The arduous task of adapting the laws and customs of the population to changed circumstances was sought to be accomplished by the decisions of the judicial Tribunals and by Regulations passed by the Executive Authority. But, as Lord Macaulay pointed out, there were different tribunals, independent of each other, which administered the law. There were courts established by Acts of Parliament (e.g. the Mayor's Court), by Royal Charters (the Supreme Court,) and Courts of the Company (the Sadar Courts). Each put its own interpretation and even the Judges of the same Court did not always agree.

The power of making Regulations was given to the Governor General and Council of Bengal, and to the Provincial Governors by the Acts of 1773 and 1781. The Regulations were of the nature of official instructions and explanations rather than of legislative enactments. Thus they embodied the Land Revenue Settlements and the judicial administration. Lord Cornwallis took great pains to systematize the Regulations. "He gave them permanent expression and substantial shape, for the guidance alike of those who were to administer and those who were to appeal to them. The Regulations were to be numbered, arranged, printed and

circulated. They were to have a home in every Government Office and to be transmitted to the Authorities in England."* Lord Cornwallis arranged these Regulations in 1793 in the Bengal Code; similar collections of the revised Regulations were made for Bombay by Elphinstone, and for Madras by Sir Thomas Munro.

But these Regulations had defects of their own: they were the work of practical administrators and not of skilled draftsmen, they were voluminous, and obscure, and contained a great deal of matter that was obsolete or repealed; above all, as they emanated from different sources, they often contained conflicting instructions.

On the top of the Regulations stood the Acts of Parliament that were made applicable to India. (a) Thus the Charter of 1726 given by George I introduced into India the English statute law as it stood in that year. (b) English Statute Law passed after 1726 was applicable in India if it was expressly extended to any part thereof.

It would be clear from this brief survey of the state of laws and judicial tribunals in British India, that the time had come for a great reform. Lord Macaulay suggested 'codification of the laws' as the only remedy to remove uncertainty, and recommended the appointment of a Commission for that purpose. "The work of digesting a vast and artificial system of unwritten jurisprudence is far more easily performed and far better performed by few minds than by many, by Government like that of Prussia or Denmark, than by a Government like that of England. A quiet knot of two or three veteran jurists is an infinitely better machinery for such a purpose than a large popular assembly divided, as such assemblies almost always are, into

* Kaye. 339.

adverse factions. This seems to be, therefore, precisely that point of time at which the advantage of a complete written Code of laws may most easily be conferred on India. It is a work, which cannot well be performed in an age of barbarism, which cannot without great difficulty be performed in an age of freedom. It is a work which especially belongs to a Government like that of India—to an enlightened and paternal despotism." The great principles of codification were three, as put forward by Macaulay : *uniformity* where you can have it, *diversity* where you must have it, but in all cases, *certainty*.

The provisions of the Charter Act of 1833 so far as they bore upon the machinery for the making of Laws for India were three: it deprived the Governors and Councils of Bombay and Madras of their independent powers of law-making: it vested this power in the Governor-General in Council of India; and it added to the Council, for the satisfactory work of codification, a fourth member (called the Legal Member) who was to be an English Barrister.

The Charter Act also provided for the appointment of a Law Commission for codification, and Lord Macaulay the first Law Member under the new Act, was appointed the President of this Commission.

So far, however, as actual results were concerned the Law Commission was a failure. Its activity languished after the departure of Lord Macaulay. The draft of the Indian Penal Code made by Macaulay was no doubt a solid achievement; but though begun in 1835 it did not become an act for nearly 20 years. The Commission no doubt, collected a vast amount of information, but did not proceed beyond that; and it cost India about 17 lacs of rupees.

(35) V—OTHER PROVISIONS OF THE CHARTER ACT.

General.—The Charter Act of 1833 marks an equally important change in the attitude of Parliament towards the people of India. Under the stress of wars and of territorial aggrandisement no attention had hitherto been paid to the condition of the people. The economic drain which increased in volume and ramifications, with every increase in the territories of the Company was, if possible, the least evil of the Rule of the Company. Greater harm was done by the complete exclusion of Indians from every post of honour and emolument in the public service of the land. This exclusion was all the more galling when contrasted with the memory of the highest positions—in Civil and Military Departments which they held—and often with distinction—in those Native States which were but recently subverted. Above all nothing had as yet been done to introduce the people of India to that Western civilization whose superiority in the science of government, in the method of war, in administration, in patriotism, in organization, in discipline, in culture, in education, in science, in art—in every thing, in fact, which makes for success in the great struggle for existence which is going on around us as much among individuals as among nations—whose superiority—I say—was being demonstrated to them with a rapidity and thoroughness that staggered them.

Both with respect to Western Education and the employment of Indians in Public Service, the Charter Act of 1833 laid down important principles.

(36)

VI—EDUCATION.

Little attention was paid to the subject of Education before the days of Lord Bentinck. It is true that the Charter

Act of 1813 had allowed the ingress, under restrictions, into India of Missionaries that the latter may introduce useful knowledge and Christianity among the native population ; the Act further required one lac of rupees to be set aside every year for the revival and improvement of literature and the encouragement of learned natives of India, and for the introduction and promotion of a knowledge of the Sciences among them.

But in spite of this Parliamentary enactment, and of what had been done by Warren Hastings for Oriental learning many years before that enactment, little progress was made till 1823. In that year a Committee of Public Instruction was formed to utilise the Fund for the promotion of Education. But this Committee did little more than print classical books and give stipends to scholars in the Oriental Colleges in Benares and Calcutta. In fact about this time a great controversy was going as to what system of education should be encouraged by Government—the Western or the Oriental. At last the cause of Western Education triumphed, thanks to the labours of the Missionaries, the efforts made by Reformers like Ram Mohan Roy, and to the famous Minute of Lord Macaulay. When he came out to India as the First Law Member under the Act of 1833 he was appointed President of the Committee of Public Instruction. The Members of this Committee were divided on the question of Western *versus* Oriental Education. Macaulay's Minute which made a deep impression upon Lord William Bentinck decided this controversy.

It should be noted, however, that Macaulay's attack was directed against *classical* (Sanskrit and Persian) learning. He was entirely for improving the *Vernaculars* ; but as they,

in their backward state, could not be a fit medium for conveying Western knowledge, the English language was to be used for that purpose. A number of causes conspired to make the spread of Western learning very rapid. (1) Increased activity of the Missionaries. "At the commencement of 1852 there were labouring throughout India and Ceylon the Agents of 22 Missionary Societies. They maintained 1347 Vernacular Day Schools containing 47504 boys, and 93 Boarding Schools with 2414 Christian boys. They also superintended 126 English Day-Schools containing 14562 boys."* (2) Bentinck displaced the Persian language from the Law Courts and English was substituted. (3) Freedom of Press was established in 1835. (4) Lord Hardinge made the attainment of Western Education a qualification for entrance into Government Service.

While the Governor-General in Council was labouring to spread Western Education, administrators like Elphinstone, Munro, and Thomason were trying to encourage the spread of knowledge through the Vernaculars. Elphinstone found the newly acquired Province of Bombay very backward in education and, therefore, formed "A Society for the Promotion of the Education of the Poor" in 1820 and for 12 years this Society printed books in the Vernacular and established schools for the spread of Primary Education. His project to found a College for the spread of higher education was opposed in his Council and did not receive the sanction of the Court of Directors. But though no English School was started in Bombay during Elphinstone's time, one was opened in 1828—the year after his departure, and the great Elphinstone Institution (now the College) was opened in 1842.

* Dr. Buist : Notes on India page 23.

Munro derived the inspiration to spread knowledge from Elphinstone. His plan was to establish normal schools for the preparation of teachers who were later on to be placed in the districts for the diffusion of knowledge through books specially designed for the purpose.

What was done for Bombay by Elphinstone, and for Madras by Munro was done for the Agra Province by *Thomason*. He came to the conclusion that "to produce any perceptible impression on the public mind in the new provinces, it must be through the medium of the vernacular languages." The labours of *Thomason* in the pursuit of this policy were thus eulogised by Dalhousie in 1853: "I desire at the same time to add the expression of my feeling, that even though Mr. *Thomason* had left no other memorial of his public life behind him, the system of general vernacular education, which is all his own, would have suffered to build up for him a noble and abiding monument to his earthly career."*

In Bengal.—Bentick deputed Mr. William Adam an American Missionary—to enquire into the state of education and his report is extremely valuable as throwing light upon the methods and extent of indigenous system of Education as it prevailed in Bengal for centuries. He was in favour of extending the Vernacular institutions on the lines of Elphinstone and Munro but his proposals were not accepted, and emphasis was laid upon the imparting of higher education.

It will thus be seen that though a powerful impetus had been given to the spread of English Education, the Vernaculars were neglected, the net work of indigenous schools fell to pieces, and as the funds made available for the promotion

* Briggs : 164.

of knowledge were, in any case, almost meagre, the progress was imperceptible.

The first step of permanent interest was taken by the Education Despatch of 1854—of Sir Charles Wood, the President of the Board of Control; but the serious execution of the policy adumbrated by that Despatch properly falls into the next period.

(37) VII—EMPLOYMENT OF INDIANS IN THE PUBLIC SERVICES.

A perpetual problem of Indian Administration has been the extent to which Indians should be employed in the administration of the country. In the beginning they were employed in the Civil Departments as well as in the Army. Indeed it was through them that the duties of Diwani—*i.e.*, Revenue Collection and Administration of Justice were discharged. Their exclusion from office begins from the year 1772 when the Court of Directors resolved to stand forth as the Diwan. At that time servants of the Company—Indian as well as European were tainted with corruption. Cornwallis tried to remove this evil by increasing the salaries of the European Servants of the Company and thus putting them above the temptation of receiving bribes. But, as already noted, the weakest point in the reforms of Cornwallis lay in his having systematically ignored the claims of the Indians. Every extension of territory meant employment of more Europeans and an enormous addition to the ‘patronage’ of the Court of Directors. The way in which they distributed this patronage among themselves has been referred to already. That the general tone of the lower servants of the Company—and particularly in the Interior of the Country—was low is now admitted, though there were many honourable exceptions. How jealous the Directors were of their patronage is well brought out by the

fate of the Fort William College which Marquis of Wellesley established at Calcutta. The object of the College was to give to the young factors and writers of the Company a knowledge of the Vernaculars and of the history, customs and institutions of the Indians. But the Directors ordered the immediate closing of the College. The servants instead got a rudimentary knowledge in the Institution at Hailebury in England prior to their going out to India. The evil effects of the ignorance and inexperience of the English servants, and of the exclusion of Natives were well pointed out by Sir Thomas Munro and by Elphinstone; but it was reserved for Lord William Bentinck to be the first to throw open the judicial administration to the sons of the land. This new principle was laid down in the Act of 1833. ‘No Native of the said territories, nor any natural-born subject of His Majesty resident therein, shall, by reason only of his religion, place of birth, descent, colour, or any of them, be disabled from holding any place, office, or employment under the said Company.’ In explaining this clause, the Despatch which accompanied the Act (and which has been attributed to James Mill) said “The meaning of the Enactment we take to be that there shall be no governing caste in British India ; that whatever other tests of qualification may be adopted, distinctions of race or religion shall not be one of them,” and it proceeded to make the extended employment of Indians an argument for “the promotion of every design of education, and the diffusion among them of the treasures of science, knowledge and moral culture.” It was Lord Macaulay who ran into raptures at having been one of those who assisted in framing the Act of 1833 which contained that clause—“that wise, benevolent, that noble clause” as he said.

In practice, however, the policy of the Company was one of exclusion. The distinction between covenanted and unconvenanted service was put forward as an excuse for this exclusion. The Act of 1793 reserved all principal offices in India to the "Covenanted" servants (*i.e.*, those who had entered into a Covenant or agreement that they would not trade or accept presents etc.) of the Company. But the covenant became meaningless when the Company ceased to be a commercial body in 1833. But the distinction was maintained and the exclusion of Indians continued.

In 1853 the Directors were deprived of their patronage and the Civil Service of India was thrown open to competition to all natural born subjects of Her Majesty. But as the competitive examination was held in London, it meant the exclusion of most of the Indian candidates. The assurances contained in the Queen's Proclamation did not materially improve matters. The subsequent history of this question will be taken up in another Chapter.

CHAPTER IX

SOME GREAT ADMINISTRATORS.

(38) I.—INTRODUCTORY.

In this Chapter attention will be drawn to the individual reforms of some of the great administrators of this period. I will not say here anything about Clive or Warren Hastings or Lord Cornwallis. Lord Wellesley—more known as a conqueror—was not blind to the great defect of the system of Government which the Company had established. The Governor-General in Council was at once the highest Legislative, Executive and Judicial Authority in India. The efficiency of such a centralization of power was won at the sacrifice of the interests and rights of the people. He therefore proposed the separation of the judicial function of the Governor-General in Council but the problem which Wellesley had most at heart was the education of the British servants of the East India Company.

(39) II.—THE REFORMING MOVEMENT.

As Prof. Ramsay Muir points out * the Reforming movement in India associated with the name of Lord William Bentinck was in part stimulated by the Liberal movement that set in Europe after the overthrow of Napoleon. This new spirit showed itself in two ways. On the one hand there was a far more respectful study and appreciation of Indian

* Ramsay Muir 282—283

Law and custom than had been shown since the days of Warren Hastings. Metcalfe, Elphinstone, Munro and Malcolm—each one of this great quadrilateral of administrators—was an admirer of the village communities of India. The primary aim of these great men was to maintain and strengthen whatever was good in the self governing institutions of the people. Along with this eagerness to understand and preserve what was old, there was an equally strong anxiety to introduce the civilization of the West into India.

As examples of the first tendency a few extracts from different authorities describing the *Village Communities* may be given here.

Elphinstone in his report had drawn attention to these village communities. "In whatever point of view we examine the Native Government in the Deccan, the first or most important feature is the division into villages or townships. These communities contain in miniature all the materials of a state within themselves, and are almost sufficient to protect their members, if all other Governments are withdrawn. Though probably not compatible with a very good form of Government, they are an excellent remedy for the imperfections of a bad one; They prevent the bad effects of its negligence and weakness, and even present some barrier against its tyranny and rapacity.

Each village has a portion of ground attached to it which is committed to the management of its inhabitants. The boundaries are carefully marked and jealously guarded. They are divided into fields, the limits of which are exactly known; each field has a name and is kept distinct, even when the cultivation of it is long abandoned. The Villagers are entirely cultivators of the ground with the addition of the few traders and artisans that are required to supply

their wants. The head of each village is the Patil who has under him an assistant called the Chaugula and a clerk called Kulkarni. There are besides 12 Village Officers, well-known by the name of Bara Baloti....the Patil is head of the Police and of the Administration of justice in his Village, but he need only be mentioned here as an Officer of revenue. In that capacity he performs on a small scale what a Mamlatdar or Collector does on a large ; he allots the land to such cultivators as have no landed property of their own and fixes the rent which each has to pay ; he collects the revenue for Government from all the rayats ; conducts all its arrangements with them, and exerts himself to promote the cultivation and the prosperity of the Village. Though originally the agent of the Government, he is now regarded as equally the representative of the Rayat and is not less useful in executing the orders of the Government than in asserting the rights or at least in making known the wrongs of the People."

Sir Charles Metcalfe—in his famous Minute of 1830 also wrote :—The Village Communities are little Republics, having nearly everything that they want within themselves and almost independent of any foreign relations....The union of the village communities—each one forming a separate little state by itself, has, I conceive, contributed more than any other cause to the preservation of the people of India through all revolutions and changes which they have suffered and it is in a high degree conducive to their happiness and to the enjoyment of a great portion of freedom and independence. I wish, therefore, that the Village constitutions may never be disturbed and I dread everything that has a tendency to break them up. I am fearful that a revenue-settlement with each individual rayat, instead of one with the Village Community through their representatives, the head

men, might have such a tendency. For this reason, and for this only, I do not desire to see the Rayatwari Settlement generally introduced into the Western Provinces."

(40)

III—REFORMS OF BENTINCK.

Coming back to the group of Reformers, one must note that at their head stood Lord William Bentinck. 'He was nearer to the *beau ideal* of what a Governor-General ought to be than any man that held that Office. There have been several good men and several great men in the same position, but there has been none like him. A paramount sense of duty to the inhabitants of India and a desire to do them good inspired all his words and actions.*

He had received definite instructions from the home authorities to effect retrenchment in expenditure which had grown enormously on account of the wars of Lord Hastings—and with the help of two specially appointed Committees he made large economies in Civil and Military Departments. He reformed the currency, and rupees with the head of the British Sovereign were struck and made equivalent to a tenth part of the pound. He also overhauled the Opium Department.

His Administrative Reforms took the shape of improving the judicial administration—(to which reference has already been made) ; he allowed the vernaculars to be used in the proceedings of the Courts, in place of the Persian ; above all he introduced Indians to important places. "He clearly saw in this far-sighted view of Policy that through the path of gradual enlistment of the intellectual ability and ambition of the Natives in the permanent service of their own land, lay our only reasonable or definite prospect of retaining an ascendancy therein."†

* Torrens : 303.

† Torrens : 303.

His *Social Reforms* consisted in the abolition of *Sati* and the suppression of *Thaggi*. He was dissuaded from interfering with the customs of the people by Oriental scholars like H. H. Wilson. But he persevered and abolished the evils.

We have considered in another place his Land Revenue Policy and also his Educational Policy.

On the whole we may concur with the tribute paid to him by his colleague in the Council, Sir Charles Trevelyan : " To Lord William Bentinck belongs the great praise of having placed our dominion in India on its proper foundation in the recognition of the great principle that India is to be governed for the benefit of the Indians, and that the advantages which we derive from it should only be such as are incidental to and inferential from that course of proceeding."

(41) IV—WORK OF SIR THOMAS MUNRO.

Munro's Views on Indian Administration are contained in his well-known Minute of 31st December 1824 which Mr. R. C. Dutt described as " perhaps the most thoughtful and statesmanlike Minute ever recorded in India since the time of Cornwallis."* Some of those views may be considered here.

(i) *On the Employment of Indians in Administrative Work.*—Munro deplored that no confidence was placed in the Natives and that they were excluded from all offices ; he was convinced that mere spread of education would not raise the people ; " our books alone will do little or nothing ; dry simple literature will never improve the character of a nation. To produce this effect, it must open the road to wealth, honour, and public employment. Without the prospect of such a reward, no attainments in science will ever raise the character of the people." Munro also held that the employment of Indians was also desirable on the ground of getting accurate

* Dutt (Early British Rule) 160.

information from them regarding their laws and customs and for the making of new laws for them.

(2) *On the Advantages and Disadvantages of British Rule.*— Though British Rule has secured India from the calamities of foreign war and internal commotion, it has also brought about the exclusion of the people from any share in legislation or administration ; this necessarily leads to a lowering of the character of the people.

"One of the greatest disadvantages of our Government in India is its tendency to lower or destroy the higher ranks of society, to bring them all too much to one level and by depriving them of their former weight and influence to render them less useful instruments in the internal administration of the country."

(3) *On the Future of India.*— "There is one great question to which we should look in all our arrangements ; what is to be their final result on the character of the people ? Is it to be raised or is it to be lowered ? Are we to be satisfied with merely securing our power and protecting the inhabitants, leaving them to sink gradually in character lower than at present or are we to endeavour to raise their character and render them worthy of filling higher situations in the management of their country and devising plans for its improvement ? It ought undoubtedly to be our aim to raise the minds of the natives and to take care whenever our connection with India might cease, it did not appear that the only fruit of our dominion there had been to leave the people more abject and less able to govern themselves than when we found them.... Various measures might be suggested which might all probably be more or less useful (in improving their character) : but no one appears to me so well calculated to ensure success, as

that of endeavouring to give them higher opinion of themselves, by placing more confidence in them, by placing them in important situations, and perhaps by rendering them eligible to almost every office under the Government.... When we reflect how much character of Nations has always been improved by that of Governments and that some, once the most cultivated have sunk into barbarism, while others, formerly the rudest have attained the highest point of civilization, we shall see no reason to doubt that, if we pursue steadily the proper measures, we shall in time so far improve the character of our Indian subjects as to enable them to govern and to protect themselves."

N.B.:—For his view on Subsidiary Alliances, and on Judicial and land Revenue Administration see elsewhere.

(42)

IV—WORK OF ELPHINSTONE.

He went to India as a young lad of 17 in 1796 and served in the capacity of a Private Secretary under Arthur Wellesley—the future Duke of Wellington. He was Resident at Nagpur from 1804 to 1808 and there he obtained intimate knowledge of Maratha affairs. A Mission to Kabul enabled him to write a history of Afghanistan and on his return in 1811 he was appointed Resident at Poona and was witness of the last stages of the Peshwa's rule. After the over-throw of that rule he was appointed Commissioner of the Deccan in January 1818 and Governor of Bombay in 1819.

His fame as a liberal Administrator rests mainly on his work in three directions. *His first endeavour was to codify the Law. He framed the Bombay Code consisting of 27 Regulations and he also had the idea of preparing an exhaustive digest of laws and customs of the different castes of the

* Dutt—India under Early British Rule.

Hindus. His second object was to confer on the people of India as large a share in the work of administration as possible. In this respect the maxim of Elphinstone was this : "our object ought to be to place ourselves in the same relation to the natives as the Tartars are to the Chinese : retaining the Government and military power, but gradually relinquishing all share in civil administration, except that degree of control which is necessary to give the whole an impulse and direction." His third and last purpose was to spread a sound system of education, about which something has been said already.

(43)

V—OTHER ADMINISTRATORS.

It is impossible to mention here all the great names of this period or to specify their work but the student of this period of Indian administration is easily convinced that at no time—either before or after this period—were there so many able servants of the Company labouring for the good of the people. Sir John Shore, John Sullivan, Sir John Malcolm, Thomason, R. M. Bird, Colvin, Cotton, Briggs, Todd, Grant Duff are famous names. As R. C. Dutt observes "Never did Englishmen of any generation show higher literary culture and talent in India, never did they show a truer sympathy with the people."*

(44)

VI—LORD DALHOUSIE AS AN ADMINISTRATOR.

Passing over a period of 20 years we come to *Lord Dalhousie* :—He is the consummation of the work of the East India Company. His thirst for territorial expansion and his anxiety to introduce material and moral elements of Western

* R. C. Dutt 428.

civilization into India, illustrate the weakness and strength respectively of the Rulers of India of the first half of the Nineteenth Century. Not only, however, does he sum up in himself the characteristics of the preceding era, he foreshadows the development of the succeeding period. He is thus a transitional figure. His views have been set out most clearly in his well known Minute in which he took a review of his long administration towards its close.

MINUTE OF LORD DALHOUSIE—28TH FEBRUARY, 1856.

Each item mentions what Dalhousie achieved or proposed to achieve regarding the various problems of administration.

1. Securing the peace of the frontier by friendly treaties with Kashmir, Khelat and Kabul.
2. Conquest of the *Punjab* and *Burma*.
3. Annexations of the kingdoms of Nagpur and Oudh, the principality of Satara, the Chiefship of Zansi, and the acquisition of Berar.
4. Increase in the revenue from £26 in 1847-48 to £30 in 1855, and of trade.
5. Setting up of strong Civil Governments in the provinces newly acquired, particularly in the 4 kingdoms of Punjab, Burma, Oudh and Nagpur.
6. Separation of Bengal and its administration by Lieut.-Governor as required by the Act of 1853.
7. The establishment of the Legislature of India as distinct from the Supreme Council. Its procedure was fixed; its debates were printed and published.
8. Reorganization of the civil service after it had been thrown open to competition, by setting up Depart-

mental examinations as tests of efficiency and promotion.

9. Appointments of Inspectors of prisons in the N. W. Provinces and in Bengal and in Madras and Bombay for establishing prison discipline.
10. Extension of the system of primary education as it was established by Mr. Thomason in the N. W. Provinces and the establishment of the Presidency College of Calcutta.

Giving effect to the orders contained in the famous Education Despatch of 1854.

A Department of Public Instruction under a Director was established ; provisional rules for grants-in-aid were drawn up ; and a Committee appointed to frame a scheme for the proposed Universities. Also special attention was paid to Female Education.

11. The first introduction into the Indian Empire of three great engines of social improvement, which the sagacity and science of Western times had previously given to the Western Nations namely Railways, uniform Postage, and the Electric Telegraph.

Railways.—A system of trunk lines connecting the interior of each Presidency with its principal port and connecting the several presidencies with each other, projected and begun.

Post.—A special Commission laid down the following principal rules underlying the postal system (i) the institution of the post office throughout India as a

distinct department, superintended by the Director-General, under the immediate control of the Government of India. (2) A uniform rate irrespective of distance, throughout India. (3) The substitution of postage stamps for cash payments. (4) The restriction of the privilege of official franking to as few officers as possible.

Telegraph.—About 4000 miles of Electric Telegraph were brought into operation.

12. (a) The successful execution and completion of the Ganges Canal.
(b) The Bari-Doab canal in the Panjab.
13. Works for improving the general communications of the Country.
(a) internal navigation by steam-ship flotillas in the Ganges, the Indus, and the Irrawady.
(b) Improvements in the ports of Calcutta, Bombay, Karachi, Rangoon and the new port of Dalhousie on the Bassein River.
(c) Construction of roads—particularly the Grand Trunk Roads, and bridges &c.
14. Finally the practice of requiring the Provincial Governments to submit annual Reports of important occurrences in their Provinces was begun by Dalhousie.

General Principles of his policy.—Some of the principles underlying the reforms of Dalhousie may be thus laid down:—As Lee-Warner points out,* Dalhousie's fundamental axiom was the separation of the functions of Government into Departments with responsible officials at the top. Thus he created a separate Department for Public Works, and so

* See Lee-Warner : Vol. II Chapter V.

reformed the system of accounts as to distinguish between the moneys spent upon the new works and those spent upon repairs and maintenance. He also proposed that money should be borrowed for the purpose of expediting the construction of Public Works. His Railway policy was fully set out in his minutes of 4th July 1850 and April 1853. He advocated Railway construction by private Companies, with guaranteed interest and State control.

His proposals for Military Reform.—In conclusion a word must be said here about his proposals for military reform. The Indian Army consisted of Royal troops (all European), and Company's troops (Indian and European). Dalhousie advocated the enlargement of the European portion of the army and the Act of 1851 raised the limit of the European army to 20,000. The efficiency of the army was lessened by its administration being carried on by Military Boards in Calcutta, Madras and Bombay. The Boards were abolished and their work entrusted to separate Departments. These and other proposals of Dalhousie regarding military matters were contained in a series of nine Resolutions which for a long time remained buried in the archives of the India Office.*

(45)

VII—RETROSPECT.

With this chapter the Administration of India by the East India Company comes to a close. Everywhere the old order of things gave place to a new order. Amidst the ruins of the old order the foundations were being laid upon which an extensive system of administration was to be built up under the auspices of the Crown. To that period of reconstruction we turn in the next Part of this book.

* See Lee-Warner : Volume II, Chapter VIII.

PART III

BUREAUCRATIC GOVERNMENT.

CHAPTER X

PARLIAMENTARY SUPREMACY IN THEORY AND PRACTIC.

(46)

I—INTRODUCTORY.

We considered in Part II the territorial expansion as well as the administrative system established in India under the East India Company. When the Crown assumed in 1858 direct responsibility for the Government of India, the centralization of administration was completed and a form of Government resulted which is aptly called "Bureaucratic Government." In this form administration is carried on by a hierarchy or gradation of officers, the lower officers being the agents of, and therefore entirely responsible to, those superior to them. The wishes of the people are never constitutionally consulted. This form of Government might be inevitable under certain conditions; nor need it necessarily be antagonistic to the interests of the people. Its essence lies in nothing being done by the people, though a set of officials may presume to do a great deal of what *they* think to be good for the people.

We may distinguish four tiers in the officialdom which now managed the affairs of India. At the top was (1) the Secretary of State for India in Council responsible to Parliament

for the administration of India. (2) Below him was the Viceroy and Governor-General of India in Council who was at the head of the administration in India and who was "The man on the spot." (3) Below him was a number of Provincial (or, as they were also called, local) Governments or administrations under Governors, Lieutenant-Governors or Chief Commissioners. These Governments did not enjoy any independent powers of their own but were the agents of the Governor-General in Council. (4) Finally, within the provinces a more or less uniform system of administration came to be established, the unit of which was the District, and the chief executive officer in which was Collector-Magistrate or the Deputy Commissioner.

In this Part we shall consider the growth of the system along these four lines, with special reference to the relations that bound the lower to the higher authorities. The defects of the system became obvious even before the process of centralization was completed. They were partially removed by (1) adopting the converse process of Decentralization as between the Central and Provincial Governments, (2) the institution of Local Self-Government within the provinces and finally, by (3) the establishment of Legislative Councils. An inquiry into the results accomplished or anticipated in each of these directions will form a proper Introduction to the study of Responsible Government which is the subject of the Fourth Part of this Book.

(47) II—HISTORY OF THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA
ACT 1858.

When the Charter of the Company was renewed in 1853. Parliament, as if prescient of the impending catastrophe provided that the Indian territories should remain under

the Government of the Company "in trust for the Crown until it should direct otherwise." The Indian Mutiny of 1857 gave the deathblow to the old system. It was argued by many that the question of abolishing the East India Company should not be raised in Parliament until peace was established in India. But the House of Commons resolved to take up that question without delay and two Bills were successively introduced in the House of Commons. It appeared at one time as likely that the two rival Bills would be made the subject of party strife. The House of Commons, therefore, resorted to the procedure of adopting certain Resolutions embodying the principles of the two Bills. A third Bill based upon these Resolutions finally became "The Act for the good Government of India" of 1858. It in no way interfered with the details of Indian Government. It confined itself to the improvement of the machinery by which the Indian Government was to be thenceforward superintended and controlled in *England*.

(48) III—THE CASE FOR THE *Status Quo*.

Great apprehension was expressed at the time of the passing of the Act about the danger of the Government of India falling into the hands of the Crown. It was felt that there should be some check over the exercise of authority by the Crown, and it was contended that the House of Commons, on account of its other preoccupations would not be an effective check. The partisans of the East India Company said that an independent body like the Court of Directors was a better check than the House of Commons. In the Petition (framed by John Stuart Mill) that was submitted to Parliament on behalf of the East India Company,* this position was well

* Keith Vol. I, pages 298—319.

argued. "The Home administration of India cannot be vested in the Minister of the Crown without the adjunct of a Council composed of statesmen experienced in Indian affairs. Such a body should not only be qualified to advise the Minister but also by its advice, to exercise a moral check over him. The Minister was likely to be influenced by private or public pressure. The Council ought to be a barrier also against the inroads of self interest and ignorance to which he is exposed. If the Council was not a check, it would be a screen. In any case, a new Council would not have that authority which an established body like the Court of Directors possessed." The Petition, therefore, pleaded for the continuance of the *Status quo*.

(49) IV—DEFECTS OF THE OLD SYSTEM.

But this plea proved unavailing. That the system of Double Government established by Pitt's Act of 1784 was a failure was admitted by all. At the same time when one reflected upon the work of some of the great administrators of India one was bound to conclude that if the Company's Rule over India proved a failure it was not due to the paucity of able servants, but rather to the incurable defects of the system itself.

The greatest defect was the irresponsible character of the Double Government. There were as many as three authorities between which that responsibility was divided: the Court of Directors (who could recall a Governor-General though he was appointed by the Crown), the Board of Control (which really meant the President who, particularly in matters of peace and war, acted without the consent and in some cases without even the knowledge of the Directors, and

involved India in unnecessary and ruinous wars); and finally the Governor-General in Council (who, relying upon the support of the President of the Board of Control, often followed a policy that was not to the liking of the Court of Directors.)

Such an arrangement was bound to prove harmful to the interests of the people of India and it was opposed to the fundamental principle of the British Constitution. As Lord Palmerston, in introducing the Government of India Bill of 1858, said "A principle of our political system is that administrative functions should be accompanied by ministerial responsibility—responsibility to Parliament, responsibility to public opinion, responsibility to the Crown." The Directors were responsible only to the Court of Proprietors and not to the people or Parliament of England, nor was the President of Board though a member of the Ministry, strictly responsible to Parliament through it.

A second defect was the cumbrous and dilatory method of administration. It involved an incredible amount of correspondence between England and India, with the inevitable result that a great deal of work was really done by those whom Burke called the "tyrants of the desk." Commenting upon this defect Palmerston said, "Before a despatch upon the most important matter can go out to India it has to oscillate between Cannon Row and India House....and its adventures between these two extreme points of the metropolis were often as curious as the familiar *Adventures of a Guinea.*"

A further defect was the indifference of the House of Commons to the affairs of India. As Macaulay complained a

broken head in Cold Bath Fields produced a greater sensation among Members of Parliament than three pitched battles in India.

Nor, finally, was the Government by a mercantile Company of a large country containing many Ruling Princes free from absurdity and anomaly.

In fact, though there was considerable diversity of detail as to the suggested remedy all critics of the old system of Government agreed that it should be abolished and that the administration of India should be transferred from the Company to the crown. The first step towards such transference was taken by the Act of 1853 by requiring six out of the twenty-four Directors to be nominated by the Crown. The Government of India Act of 1858 went further: it abolished the Court of Directors and the Board of Control altogether, transferred the Government, territories, and revenues of India from the Company to the Crown, declared that India was to be governed by and in the name of the English Sovereign, authorised the appointment of an additional principal Secretary of State, and created the Council of India.

(50) V—THE SECRETARY OF STATE AND HIS COUNCIL.

The duties and powers of the Secretary of State in Council were comprehensively defined as all those duties and powers which were exercised by the East India Company and the Board of Control in England and by the servants of the Company in India. In particular he was charged with the "Superintendence, direction and control of all acts, operation, and concerns which in anywise relate to the Government or revenues of India."

The position of the Secretary of State for India differed from that of the other four Secretaries of State (Home, Foreign,

Colonial, and War) in the British Cabinet in two respects. (1) His salary and that of his Parliamentary and Permanent Under Secretaries was placed on the revenues of India, and (2) he was given a Council which he was expected always to consult and in certain cases whose decisions were binding upon him.

That the Secretary of State should have a Council became obvious when one remembered that generally he had no sufficient knowledge and experience to discharge duties so various and complicated as those connected with the administration of India. But the exact composition of the Council and its relation to the Secretary of State gave rise to great difference of opinion. The Council was not meant to be a screen as the Court of Directors were in the past. Neither was it to be the master of the Secretary nor a mere puppet in his hands. Its real position was that of advisers and for that purpose its members were to possess the three requisites of intelligence, experience, and independence.*

The Council under the Act of 1858 consisted of 15 members of whom eight were appointed by the Crown and seven were elected, in the first instance by the Directors and subsequently by the Council itself. They held office during good behaviour but were removable on an address by both Houses of Parliament. They were debarred from sitting in Parliament. It was thought that otherwise they would become party men and their relations with the Secretary of State would be strained, especially after a change of Ministry.

The function of the Council was to conduct the business transacted in the United Kingdom in relation to the Government of India and the correspondence with India.

* Keith : Vol. II, Lord Derby's Speech.

As the full responsibility for the Government of India was fastened upon the Secretary of State it was natural to arm him with the power of overriding his Council. But to check an abuse of this power two qualifications were imposed upon it : when the Secretary of State acted in opposition to a majority of his Council he was to state and place on record the reasons why he set aside their opinion : similarly any Councillor whose advice was not adopted could also place on record the reasons which induced him to give that advice. (2) The Secretary of State was bound to call his Council at least once a week.

Regarding the transmission of correspondence there were two exceptions to the general rule that all despatches to and from India should be laid before the Council : *viz.*, the Secretary of State might if he thought fit issue orders on *urgent* matters without calling the Council together, in which case he was to place those orders before their next meeting ; similarly he might send out orders and instructions in *secret* matters without previously communicating those orders to the Council. The secret matters related to the carrying on of war, or diplomatic arrangements with the Native States.

In two cases the Secretary was bound by the majority of his Council ; (*a*) in the case of the election of members to his Council, and (*b*) in the matter of expenditure of the revenues of India.

From these main provisions of the Act of 1858 it is easy to infer what the intentions of Parliament were as to the relative position of the Secretary of State and his Council, and the relations of both with the Government of India. Parliament did not wish to disturb the legislative and administrative powers that then rested in the Governor-General and his Council. It imposed a Council of India as a check over the

authorities in India and also over the Secretary of State ; and over all these three authorities the House of Commons, in the absence of any representative institutions in India, was to exercise a close and constant supervision.

(51)

VI—THE SECRETARY OF STATE.

In practice, however, all power tended to gather in the hands of the Secretary of State. This was brought about (1) by the indifference of Parliament to matters Indian ; (2) by the position of subordination and dependence to which the Council was reduced ; and finally (3), by a very rigid control which the Secretary of State came to establish over the details of Indian Finance, Legislation and Administration.

(1) *Nature of Parliamentary Control.**—The authority of Parliament over the Indian Government is supreme. It is open to Parliament to exercise control either by means of legislation, or by requiring its approval to rules made under delegated powers of legislation ; it may control the revenues of India ; finally it might exert its very wide powers of calling the responsible minister to account on any matter of Indian administration. In practice however Parliament legislates for India on two occasions ; to make amendments in the constitution of India, and to authorise loans raised by the Secretary of State. The bulk of Indian legislation is left to the Indian Legislatures, though closely controlled by the Secretary of State. It required rules to be submitted to it only in important cases e.g., Rules made for the nomination and election of additional members of the Legislative Councils ; Rules for the appointments to be made to the Indian Civil Service etc.

* M. C. Report S. 33.

Nor does Parliament control Indian revenue (apart from loans raised by the Secretary of State) ; or Indian expenditure (apart from military expenditure incurred beyond the Indian frontiers) ; As the salaries of the Secretary and the Under Secretaries were paid out of the Indian revenues they did not furnish an occasion for discussion and criticism of their Indian policy. In fact once a year statement of the revenues and expenditure of India together with a "Moral and Material Progress Report" was submitted to Parliament. The Report was a cumbrous compilation and the interest of Parliament in the budget debate was nil. As Mr. Ramsay Macdonald admitted, "Parliament has not been a just or watchful steward. It holds no great debates on Indian questions; it looks after its own responsibilities with far less care than it looked after those of the Company; its seats are empty when it has its annual saunter through the Indian budget."*

Nor finally does Parliament avail itself to the fullest extent of the other means of making its opinion felt on matters of Indian administration e.g., by questions, by amendments to the address, by motions to adjourn, by resolutions, or by motions of no confidence. On the whole the Authors of the Report on Constitutional Reforms had no hesitation in saying that the interest shown by Parliament in Indian affairs was neither well-sustained nor well-informed. Before 1858 Parliament held regular inquests in Indian administration prior to each renewal of the Charter; but after 1858 it ceased to exercise control at the very moment when it acquired it. The authors of the Report regarded this omission on the part of Parliament to institute regular means of reviewing the

* R. Macdonald p. 44.

Indian administration as much responsible as any one cause for the failure to think out and work out a policy of continuous advance for India.

(2) *Subordination of the Council to the Secretary of State.*—The expectation of the Council exercising a check over the Secretary was not realised in practice. By an Act of 1869 the Secretary got the right of filling all vacancies in the Council, and the tenure was changed from tenure during good behaviour to tenure for a term of ten years. This period was further reduced to seven years by an Act of 1907. About the same time the practice was begun (by Lord Morley) of appointing Indians to the India Council.

Again though the Act of 1858 required the concurrence of a majority of votes at a meeting of the Council for incurring expenditure in India, this power of "Financial veto" was, as a matter of fact, of little moment. There was a discussion on this question in the House of Lords in 1869. "The discussion showed that whilst the object, and to some extent the effect, of this Section was to impose a constitutional restraint on the powers of the Secretary of State with reference to the expenditure of money, yet this restraint could not be effectively asserted in all cases, especially where Imperial questions were involved. The Council must in the last case submit to Parliament. It ought to be clearly understood that the moment the House steps in and expresses an opinion on a subject connected with India, that moment the jurisdiction of the Council ought to cease."

Further the circumstance that the Secretary of State could issue orders in secret or urgent matters without consulting the Council augmented his powers.

The method of transacting business in the India Office and in the Council of India also tended in the direction of increasing the importance of the Secretary. In the India Office work was divided among various Departments (e.g. Finance, Revenue, Public Works, Political, Military, Medical, Legal, and Department for the Purchase of Store on account of Government of India). Each Department was under a Secretary selected by the Secretary of State. The Secretary of State and the Governor-General carried on a good deal of correspondence of a private character of which no record is kept. The remaining correspondence was dealt with in respective Departments to which it belonged. The Secretary of the Department having worked up a case he placed it before a Committee of the Council. The Council worked through Committees. There were eight or nine of them corresponding to the Departments in the India Office and many Councillors served on more than one Committee. They were appointed on the Committees by the Secretary of State. It was before such a Committee that the Secretary of the Department placed his file. The Committee then recorded their opinion on the file which was next sent on to the Permanent Under Secretary of State. He took it to the Secretary of State who allowed him to issue orders on it or issued them himself, or allowed the Parliamentary Secretary to do so, or ordered the file to be taken before a full meeting of the Council. Of course in great many cases the orders were issued by the Permanent or Parliamentary Under Secretary. This method of transacting work through Committees gave enormous power to the Secretary of State.

(3) Finally we come to the *rigid and minute control exercised over the Government of India*. This control was based upon the theory that the supremacy of Parliament over the affairs

of British India was absolute.* A few examples will show how this theory was established. (a) In 1870 Lord Mayo's Government as a whole protested at being required to pass the Bills which ultimately became the Contract Act and the Evidence Act. At that time a Law Commission used to sit in London to frame drafts of Bills and Codes which were then sent on to the Legislative Council of the Governor-General for adoption. The Secretary of State required the Government of India to accept the two Bills in the shape in which they had been recommended by the Law Commission. The Government of India protested on the ground that such Codes deprived the Legislative Council of all liberty of action. The Home Government though admitting the possible inconvenience and embarrassment said, "that the risk of serious embarrassment would become much greater if a clear understanding were not maintained as to one great principle which from the beginning has underlaid the whole system. That principle is that the final control and direction of the affairs of India rest with the Home Government, and not with the authorities appointed and established by the Crown, under Parliamentary enactment, in India itself.

"The Government established in India is (from the nature of the case) subordinate to the Imperial Government at Home. And no Government can be subordinate, unless it is within the power of the Superior Government to order what is to be done or left undone, and to enforce on its officers, through the ordinary and constitutional means, obedience to its direction as to the use which they are to make of official position and power in furtherance of the policy which has been finally decided upon by the advisers of the Crown."

* M. C. Report S. 34.

(b) Again when Lord Northbrook attempted to assert the independence of his Government in fiscal matters, Mr. Disraeli's Government were equally decided in affirming their constitutional rights. "It is not open to question that Her Majesty's Government are as much responsible to Parliament for the Government of India as they are for any of the Crown Colonies of the Empire.....It necessarily follows that the control exercised by Her Majesty's Government over financial policy must be effective also."

(c) A further extension of the theory of Parliamentary supremacy was enunciated in 1894 on the occasion of the Cotton Duties Bill. Sir Henry Fowler, the Secretary of State, then laid it positively that the principle of the united and indivisible responsibility of the Cabinet, which was recognized as the only basis on which the Government of the United Kingdom could be carried on, applied to the Indian Executive Council, in spite of the different nature of the tie which held its members together. "It should be understood that this principle which guides the Imperial cabinet, applies equally to administrative and to legislative action ; if in either case a difference has arisen, members of the Government of India are bound, after recording their opinion, if they think fit to do so, for information of the Secretary of State in the manner prescribed by the Act, either to act with the Government or to place their resignations in the hands of the Viceroy. It is moreover immaterial for the present purpose what may be the nature of the considerations which have determined the Government of India to introduce a particular measure. In any case the policy adopted is the policy of the Government as whole, and as such must be accepted and promoted by all who decided to remain members of the Government."

Thus the supremacy of Parliament over the Government of India, and of the latter over the local Governments, and also the principle of unity within the Indian executive were finally established.

It will be now realised, in the light of this principle what an effective control the Secretary of State exercised over the Government of India. The relation will be examined in greater detail in the next chapter. But the responsibility of the Secretary of State to Parliament for every act of Indian administration, the fitful interest taken by Parliament which might make the most paltry incident in India the subject of interpellation or debate, and above all the telegraphic communication between the Secretary of State and the Viceroy tended to throw enormous power in the hands of the Secretary.

(52) VII—REVIEW, CRITICISM, AND REFORM OF THE HOME ADMINISTRATION.

It will thus be seen that just as under Double Government all power came to reside in the President of the Board of Control, similarly, under the guise of Parliamentary Supremacy the Secretary of State became the repository of all power. Well-informed writers like Cheilley, Sir O'Moore Creagh and Mr. Ramsay Macdonald agree in confirming this view. Much of course depended upon what is called the "Personal equation," regarding the relations between Whitehall and Simla.

Turning next to the position and reform of the Council of the Secretary of State we must first of all make clear to ourselves what we want it to do. As it had in effect become a purely advisory body it merely involved reduplication of work and loss of time. The majority of members consisted of those who had long official experience in India, and who, therefore, sought to control, from the India Office, the action

or policy of their successors in office in India. There was some excuse for re-examining and control of the measures of the Government of India so long as the latter was not amenable to popular control in India. But the excuse disappeared and the control became anomalous after the growth of public opinion in India.

Again seven years was too long a period to keep the members of the Council in living touch with the rapidly changing conditions in India. The innovation of Lord Morley to remedy this defect by the infusion of Indian members into the Council was a move in the right direction.

Another defect of the system was the very anomalous position of the Secretaries of the various Departments which transacted business in the India Office. These Secretaries were appointed by the Secretary of State and were often the holders of very high official positions in India prior to their appointment. Their knowledge of Indian condition was both more recent and authentic than that of the Councillors to whom, however, they were subordinate. The departmental Secretaries could not attend the meetings of the Councils and they were not the constitutional advisers of the Secretary of State. The object of Lord Crewe's proposed reform of the India Council was to convert the Secretaries into the Secretary of State's constitutional advisers, but the Bill was rejected by the House of Lords.

Proposals for the reform of the Council—like the one of Lord Crewe were always put forward. But it would seem that with the growth of Legislative Councils and popular opinion in India, the utility of the Council of the Secretary of State disappears. Any strengthening of the Council cuts at the principle of Parliamentary Control at both ends : it weakens the responsibility of the Secretary of State to Parliament

and of the Government of India to the Secretary of State. It was opposed to the salutary axiom that India must be governed as far as possible by the Government of India, and above all to the development of self-Government in India. Any attempt to seek, therefore, in a reformed and strengthened Council of India an effective check over the Secretary of State, is opposed to the whole trend of progress in India. As many as thirty years ago when the Legislative Councils were in their infancy, and when there was no talk of granting responsible Government to the People of India, Chesney said* "If, in the dim and distant future, the time should ever arrive when a Parliament of any sort is possible for India, it must be set up in that country and not in this, (England)." The question of the reform of the Council of India will be taken up in the fourth Part of the book which deals with the introduction of responsible Government in India.

* Chesney Chapter XXI, p. 379

CHAPTER XI

ADMINISTRATIVE CENTRALIZATION IN INDIA.

(GOVERNMENT OF INDIA.)

(53)

I—INTRODUCTORY.

From the Secretary of State in Council let us pass on to the centralized form of administration that came to be established in India. The best way of understanding the process of centralization is to consider the Government of India and its relations with the Provincial Governments. We shall take the Government of India first. We traced in an earlier section how the Governor-General of *India* in Council came to be evolved out of the Governor-General of Bengal in Council, under the Acts of 1773, 1784, and 1833. In 1854 when he was relieved of his duties as Governor of Bengal, he became the highest authority in *India* "for the superintendence, direction, and control of the Local Governments. In 1858 he was subjected to the general control of the newly created Secretary of State for India in Council. We shall first examine his relations with this superior authority.

(54) II—THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL IN COUNCIL IN RELATION TO THE SECRETARY OF STATE IN COUNCIL.

Reference has been made in the last Chapter to the doctrine of the absolute Sovereignty of Parliament. The multifarious control exercised by the Secretary of State over the Government of India was a corollary from that doctrine. What

power the Governor-General exercised in India was exercised on sufferance ; it was due to his being "the man on the spot" and the head of an extensive system of administration removed by 6000 miles from the real seat of authority. It is true that the Governor-General exercised great powers and functions as the successor of those Native Rulers whom he had superseded. The exercise of such powers was not derived from English Charters or Parliamentary enactments. In spite of this, however, the Secretary of State exercised a rigid control over the Government of India in matters of Legislation, Finance and Administration the nature of which must be now explained.

In Legislation.—It would seem to be the object of the Acts of 1858 and 1861 to invest the Government of India with the initiative in matters of Legislation. For, (as will be explained in the Chapter on Legislative Councils) the Councils Act of the latter year vested the power of previous sanction for the introduction of Bills in the Provincial Councils, in the Governor-General and *not* in the Secretary of State. The latter had the power of veto only, to be exercised on behalf of the Crown. But soon, as a result of controversy between Lord Mayo and the Duke of Argyll over the Punjab Drainage and Canal Act, the latter laid down that the prerogative of the Secretary of State was not limited to a veto of the measures passed in India. He said "the Government of India were merely Executive Officers of the Home Government who hold the ultimate power of requiring the Governor-General to introduce the measure and of requiring also all the official members to vote for it."

Not only was every measure to be introduced in the Central or Provincial Legislative Council to be previously submitted to the Secretary of State for sanction, but every important

alteration in the measure in its passage in the Legislature was to be similarly communicated for approval. Previous intimation to the Secretary of State was dispensed with in the case of unimportant or urgent matters. Such was the net result of the controversy between Lord Northbrook and Lord Salisbury in 1874 which was merely a continuation of that between Lord Mayo and the Duke of Argyll. But when in 1875 Lord Northbrook passed the Tariff Act imposing a duty of 5 p. c. on imported Cotton Goods without referring the matter to the Secretary of State on the ground that it was *urgent* he was censured by Lord Salisbury who required *telegraphic* intimation to be given to the Secretary of State in the case of urgent legislation. This of course led to the resignation of Lord Northbrook. But the effect of the orders of Lord Salisbury was to deprive the Government of India of all initiative in and control over Legislation in Central or Provincial Councils of India.

In Finance and Administration.—We may say generally that the Governor-General in Council was required "to pay due obedience to all such orders" as he may receive from the Secretary of State. The Government of India Act of 1858 placed all financial powers in the Secretary of State and every project for novel or large expenditure, every revision of the pay of or increase in the establishments, every change in Imperial or Provincial Taxation, in fact every departure from the established policy had to be referred to the Secretary of State for information and sanction.

The justification for this minute and multifarious control was that as there was no *popular* check over the Government of India *in India itself*—Parliament was the custodian and guardian of the interests of the people of India and the

Secretary of State exercised the control in discharge of the responsibility of Parliament to the people of India.

(55) III—THE VICEROY AND GOVERNOR-GENERAL.

From the relations between the Secretary of State and the Governor-General in Council, let us next turn to the Governor-General himself. When India was transferred to the Crown in 1858 the Governor-General became the "Viceroy," appointed by Royal Warrant, his term of Office being fixed at five years. As Mr. Ramsay Macdonald points out*, the Viceroy performs three great functions. He personifies the Crown, he represents the Home Government, and he is the head of the Indian Administration.

The first is now his proper function. He is the Crown visible in India, the ceremonial head of the Sovereignty, the Great Lord. He is the seat of justice and mercy, and catches up in himself, by virtue of his office, the historical traditions and sentiments of rulership."

His position as the Viceroy—in which capacity he deals with the Ruling Princes of India—should be distinguished from his position as the Governor-General in which capacity he is the representative of the Home Administration, and the Head of the Government of India. He is bound to carry out the views of the Home Government with regard to important questions e.g. the Fiscal Policy of India, the Frontier Policy, Foreign Relations, Constitutional questions &c. Otherwise he must resign. Lord Northbrook had to resign because he would not carry out the Fiscal and Foreign Policy of the Home Government; Lord Curzon had to resign because his view regarding the constitutional position of the Commander-in-Chief of India did not find support with the Home Authorities.

* R. Macdonald 57.

(56)

IV—HIS EXECUTIVE COUNCIL.

Its Constitutional Position.—The Governor-General of India had always a Council associated with him in the transaction of business. In fact the Governors of the Presidencies in India and of most English Colonies in other parts of the world had Councils of their own. But there are two points about the development of the Council of the Governor-General which distinguish it from similar Colonial Councils. (1) The Colonial Councils, consisting mainly of the Heads of Departments, were of an advisory character with the result that the acts of the Colonial Government were described as the acts of the Governor and *not* of the Governor in Council. In India the Council was not only advisory but also executive so that the acts and orders of the Governor (and of the Governor-General) are described as the acts or orders of the Governor (or Governor-General) *in* Council. (2) In the Colonies there was a *second* Council for the purposes of legislation. In India the Council of the Governor-General, (and of the Governor) *itself* was invested with the power of making Regulations. The importance attached to the law-making function of the Executive Council was small in the beginning; but it came to be emphasized with the growth and complexity of administration and the extension of territories. The interesting result was that the Executive Council *expanded* into the Legislative Council—a process which will be described fully in another Chapter.

Character of the Council up to the Councils Act of 1861.—The history of the Council in its *executive* capacity dates from the Regulating Act. The defect of the Regulating Act which made the vote of the majority of the Council binding upon the Governor-General, (who had only a casting vote), was

removed by the Act of 1786, chiefly at the insistence of Lord Cornwallis. The Act empowered the Governor-General to override the majority of the Council in special cases and to act on his own responsibility. This completely changed the character of the Council. From a set of obstructionist colleagues it was transformed into a body of submissive advisers. As the Members of the Council were persons who had long served in India and who, therefore, possessed intimate knowledge of Indian affairs which the newly-arrived Governor-General usually lacked they gave to him their opinion on matters that came before them. And though the Governor-General was not bound to accept that opinion and act accordingly and though he was individually and effectively responsible for every act of the Government, the Members collectively exercised a useful check over the Governor-General.

Change in its character.—But in course of time changes occurred which greatly modified this character of the Council. At first all papers were submitted to all members of the Council in the order of their seniority and, therefore, first to the Governor-General. The inconvenience of this procedure became intolerable when every extension of territory added to the work of the Council and the Governor-General had to be absent from his capital for months together on account of the distracted state of the country. There were no roads, or railways or telegraphs, and either there was an inconvenient accumulation of public work or the Governor-General transacted it without consulting his Council. The Council was thus reduced to second rate importance and the situation became so impossible that Lord Dalhousie proposed radical changes in the procedure of the Council. It was, however, reserved for his successor, Lord Canning, to carry them out.

Reorganization by Lord Canning.—The principle of specialization had been already introduced into the Council by the appointment, in 1834, of an expert member for law, and in 1859 for finance. It was along this line of specialization and departmentalization that Lord Canning proceeded. When the Act of 1861 gave the Governor-General power "to make rules and orders for the more convenient transaction of business", he introduced what in effect became the 'Portfolio System'. Each Member was placed at the head of one or more Departments, and made responsible to the Governor-General.

Strength of the Council before the Reforms.—The Act of 1861 also raised the number of members to five. In 1874 a sixth Member (for Public Works purposes) was added, but for a number of years after 1880 this post was left vacant. It was Lord Curzon who created a new Department for the promotion of Commerce and Industry in charge of a new Member (now again the sixth Member). During his time also another change took place. Before that time the Military Department was placed in charge of an Ordinary Member of the Council—always a soldier but precluded from holding a command in the army during term of Office—and distinguished soldiers like Sir George Chesney had held the office. The Military Member remained at Head Quarters and was the constitutional adviser of the Viceroy on questions relating to the Army. The Commander-in-Chief was responsible for promotions and discipline and movement of troops, but many times his duties prevented him from attending regularly in Council. He had to submit his proposals through the Military Department. Lord Kitchner when he came to India in 1902 did not like this arrangement and proposed to create a new Army Department of which he was to be the head and

responsible for the whole Military Administration. Lord Curzon protested that this proposal had the tendency to concentrate Military Authority in the hands of the Commander-in-Chief and to subvert the authority of the Civil power by depriving it of independent Military advice. But no heed was paid to the protests of Lord Curzon and he, therefore, resigned in 1905.* Of the six Ordinary Members three were required to be persons who, at the time of their appointment had served at least 10 years in the service of the Crown in India ; and one member (the Law Member) was required to be a Barrister of not less than five years' standing. The absence of statutory qualification for the remaining two ordinary members was availed of for the purpose of appointing Indians to the Executive Council under the Reforms scheme of Lords Morley and Minto.

(57)

V—WORKING OF THE COUNCIL.

We get an insight into the internal working of the Council from the writings of those who were distinguished Members of that Body, e.g. Sir William Hunter, Sir John Strachey, Sir John Chesney &c. Thus Sir William Hunter says in his *Life of Lord Mayo* “ All routine and ordinary matters were disposed of by the Member of the Council within whose Department they fell. Papers of greater importance were sent, with the initiating Member's opinion, to the Viceroy who either concurred in or modified it. If the Viceroy concurred, the case generally ended and the Secretary worked the Member's note into a letter or Resolution to be issued as order of the Governor-General in Council. But in matters of weight the Viceroy, even when concurring with the

* Sir Thomas Raleigh: Introduction to the speeches of Lord Curzon.

initiating Member's view, often directed the papers to be circulated either to the whole Council or to certain of the Members whose views he might think it expedient to obtain on the question. In cases in which he did not concur with the initiating Member's views, the papers were generally circulated to all the Members, or the Governor-General ordered them to be brought up in Council. Urgent business was submitted to the Governor General directly by the Secretary of the Department under which it fell; and the Viceroy either initiated the order himself or sent the case for initiation to the Member of the Council at the head of the department to which it belonged."

Sir William proceeds to say that the Viceroy also gave one day a week to his Executive Council.

A later glimpse into this subject is afforded by the Report of the Royal Commission on Decentralization.

"In regard to his own department, each Member of Council is largely in the position of a Minister of State, and has the final voice in ordinary departmental matters. But any question of special importance and any matter in which it is proposed to overrule the views of a Local Government, must ordinarily be referred to the Viceroy. This latter provision acts as a safeguard against undue interference with the Local Governments but it necessarily throws a large amount of work on the Viceroy. In the year 1907-08 no less than 21.7 per cent of the cases which arose in, or came up to the Home Department required submission to the Viceroy. The Home Department is, however, concerned with the questions which are, in a special degree subject to review by the Head of the Government, and we believe that in other Departments the percentage of cases referred to the Viceroy is considerably less. Any matter originating in one Department which also

affects another must be referred to the latter and in the event of the Departments not being able to agree the case would have to be referred to the Viceroy."

The Report then proceeds to accurately describe the position of the Departmental Secretaries. "It corresponds very much to that of the Permanent Under Secretary of State in the United Kingdom, but with these differences that the Secretary is present at Council Meetings; that he attends on the Viceroy, usually once a week, and discusses with him all matters of importance arising in his Department; that he has the right of bringing to the Viceroy's special notice any case in which he considers that His Excellency's concurrence should be obtained to action proposed by the Departmental Member of Council, and that his tenure of office is usually limited to three years. The Secretaries, the Deputy Secretaries and Under Secretaries are generally Members of the Indian Civil Service."

Councillors become mere Departmental Heads.—It is abundantly clear from these extracts that the Council from being at one time a collective check over the Governor General became in course of time a group of Departmental Heads. The Members of the Council found their position assailed in two opposite directions. On the one hand, the growth of centralization added to the strength of the Secretaries and Deputy Secretaries who had access to the Viceroy independently of the Member. The Viceroy, on the other hand, freely interfered with business in all Departments at all stages. Thus between the Viceroy above them and their Secretaries below them, the Members lost a great deal of their initiative and power. Many writers agree in the view that the Governor-General dominated over his Council and interfered with the working of Departments to an extent

which made the responsibility of the Member for the Departments a mere farce.

(58) VI—POSITION OF THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL.

We must now explain how the Governor-General came to exercise such wide powers in his Council. The explanation is to be found partly inside and partly outside the Council.

The Governor-General of India is appointed by His Majesty by Warrant under the Royal Sign Manual. The appointment is made on the advice of the Prime Minister and is, of course, made on party considerations. The Ordinary Members of the Council also are appointed by His Majesty by Warrant under the Royal Sign Manual. This means in practice that the appointments are made by the Secretary of State personally who generally consults the Governor-General but is not legally bound to do so. By the Act of 1858 these appointments were required to be made by the Secretary of State for India in Council, with the concurrence of a majority of Members to be present at a Meeting. But the exercise of this right by the Secretary of State alone necessarily made the Ordinary Members entirely subservient to the Governor-General to whom they owed their recommendation and to whom they looked up for further promotion. Further as the majority of Ordinary Members was drawn from the Indian Civil Service, obedience to superior authority became their ingrained characteristic. Sir O'Moore Creagh said "the mental attitude of the Members of the Council to the Governor-General is one of obsequious respect, which causes them—with rare exceptions—to treat his slightest wish as a Khati-Sherif, to be disregarded at their peril. When such a wish is prefaced in the Council, as is frequently the case, by the announcement that the proposal under

discussion emanates from the Secretary of State there is rarely any opposition to it, no matter how impolitic it may be. I do not think that individuality or independence are wanted in the Council."* Next to the Members drawn from the Indian Civil Service there was the practice of one or two Members being appointed from the Civil Service in England. Though such Members were expert in their own work e.g. Finance, Commerce &c., their ignorance of Indian conditions and the jealousy with which they were regarded by their Anglo Indian *Confreres* made them habitually look up to the Governor General for support. The Indian element of the Council also was not particularly known for independence of view and action. As the tenure of office was for five years only, the expectation of promotion and other jobs e.g. a place in the Council of the Secretary of State or Lieutenant-Governor or Chief Commissionership, operated in the same direction.

From the composition of the Council let us turn to the method of transacting business in the Council.

(1) The Rules and Regulations for the convenient transaction of business in the Council made, under Section 8 of the Act of 1861, by the Governor-General and collected together in "Rules of business" are kept absolutely secret. Not even Parliament knew any thing about their exact nature. The rules in addition to being strictly confidential were liable to change at the sweet will of the Governor-General. He thus came to exercise an enormous amount of discretion as to the mode of distributing work among the Departments and of assigning the Departments to the Members of the Council.

(2) Again the Governor-General could appoint any place within British India for the meeting of the Executive Council,

* Sir O'Moore Creagh : Indian Studies 101.

and he and *one* Ordinary Member formed the legal quorum for the transaction of business. This very small quorum was fixed at a time when there were only three Members of the Council of the Governor-General; but it was not changed though the number of Councillors had increased to six or seven. It thus became possible for the Governor-General to consult one or two selected Members of his Council and claim to have consulted his whole Executive Council. Properly speaking, however, such "surreptitious meetings" as Sir O'Moore Creagh characterised them, ought to be distinguished from formal meetings of the Council for which a convening notification in the prescribed form has to be sent to all Members. Thus "When Lord Hardinge was accused of not consulting his Council regarding Mesopotamia, he, in his defence speech in the House of Lords, stated that he had consulted the Finance Member and the Commander-in-Chief, and he contended that any ordinary meeting of the Governor-General and one Ordinary Member may exercise all the functions of the Governor-General in Council, and he proceeded to argue that he had therefore conformed to the law.*

(3) Further all orders and other proceedings of the Governor-General in Council are expressed to be made by the Governor-General in Council and signed by a Secretary to the Government of India.

As every order is issued in the name of the Governor-General in Council it is impossible to say whether it is the result of deliberation and decision in the full Council, or of consultation between the Member in charge and the Governor-General or of the Secretary acting on his own initiative. Sir O'Moore Creagh was of opinion that this procedure was not in accordance with the Acts of Parliament. Important busi-

* Indian Studies : 103.

ness was ordinarily dealt with between the Secretary, the Member, and the Viceroy, about which the Council as a body knew nothing. He expressed his belief that this procedure was first prominently introduced by Lord Minto.*

The difficulty of knowing whether the order was the view of the Member in charge, or of the Member in Charge and the Governor-General, or of the Governor-General in Council as a whole was increased by indiscriminate use of the expressions "Governor-General in Council" and "Government of India" as equivalent in meaning. It is not possible to say from the designation "Government of India" in telegraphic or private correspondence whether and with what result the Council was consulted.

It will thus be seen that the Indian Council's Act of 1861, by giving to the Governor-General the power to make rules for the distribution of work among the Departments, by allowing him to appoint the place and time of meetings of the Council and to regulate the procedure of transacting business therein, reduced the Executive Council to a state of weakness.

Nor were individual Members of the Executive Council free from the interference of the Governor-General. As Sir O'Moore says "the Ordinary Members of the Executive Council and the Extraordinary Member are at the head of the other Departments but they are not in charge of them, owing to the perpetual interference of the Governor-General and the ignorance of Members of Council as to the extent to which this power of interference will be exercised, for it depends upon his ability, leisure, or how the spirit moves him. His interference is consequently erratic and disconcerting to those nominally in charge of departments, for he deals with

* Indian Studies : 104.

matters small and great, local or Imperial, of which it is quite impossible he can have any sufficient knowledge."*

The scope for interference is vastly increased by the peculiar position of the Secretaries of the Departments. They are appointed by the Governor-General and they attend the meetings of the Executive Council whenever matters concerning their Departments are under consideration. They issue all orders and proceedings of the Governor-General in Council.

We must now refer to two more causes operating *outside* the Executive Council that helped the concentration of power in the hands of the Governor-General. Consider first his relation with the Secretary of State. The Viceroy is generally an English Peer of eminence wielding political influence in Parliament. He is in the fullest confidence of the Ministry and in constant communication with the Secretary of State. He also receives such correspondence as is "urgent" or "secret." His knowledge, therefore, of the views and opinions of the Home Authorities, and his personal acquaintance with and influence upon them give him an authority in his Council which his colleagues can never hope even to approximate.

Nor could the Local Governments offer any effective resistance to the encroachments of the Governor-General. Prior to the Reforms there was no clear cut division of Central and Provincial subjects, and all authority to deal with Local affairs was largely centralized in the person of the Governor-General.

Conclusion.—There can be thus no comparison between the position which the Governor-General held with regard to

* Indian Studies : 119.

his Council in the days of the Company and that which he came to occupy since the Act of 1858. To quote once again the words of Sir O'Moore :—“ The whole tendency of all Acts of Parliament previous to the transfer of the Government of India to the Crown was to associate the Governor-General with a Council of trained Administrators, who had that good knowledge of India in which he himself was deficient, and who, being in an independent position, would be capable of informing, guiding and—to a reasonable extent—controlling him, but who would not be in a position to thwart or obstruct him. It was never intended that the Governor-General should be a mere referee for his Council but that he should be a man of open mind and balanced judgment who would initiate as well as adjudge. He has now become the Agent of the Secretary of State, the independence of his Council is gone, and the Indian Empire is entrusted solely to their combined ignorance of India and is virtually handed over to a despotism.”* Chailley also says “ that the Executive Council of the Viceroy has become an Assembly of specialists who hold office for five years. The theoretical equality with the Viceroy has, in practice, disappeared and the responsibility is becoming more and more concentrated in the hands of the Secretrsy of State and the Viceroy.”†

(59) VII—IS THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S COUNCIL
A CABINET ?

Before proceeding to consider the relations of the Government of India with the Local Governments it will not be inappropriate to make a digression here upon the question—whether the Governor-General's Council is a Cabinet ? Both Sir John Strachey and Sir George Chesney put forward the

* Indian Studies 100.

† Chailley : p. 392.

view that the Governor-Général and his Council formed "a Cabinet of administrative heads of Departments." An examination of this view would clearly bring out the actual position of the Governor-General's Council.

Professor H. D. Traill has defined the Cabinet as "a body consisting of (a) members of the legislature, (b) of the same political view and chosen from the political party possessing a majority in the House of Commons; (c) prosecuting a concerted policy; (d) under a common responsibility signified by collective resignation in the event of Parliamentary censure and finally, (e) under a common subordination to one Chief Minister *viz.*, the Prime Minister."

Now we may look at the Cabinet from two points of view—the political *i.e.*, in its relation to the House of Commons, and the administrative. It is in the latter respect that considerable likeness may be discerned between the English Cabinet and the Indian Council. Both consist of Heads of Departments; both transact important business in meetings; both have Secretaries and Under-Secretaries who belong to the Permanent Civil Service. But here the resemblance stops. The contrast between the Cabinet and the Council is even more impressive when both are considered as executives related to their legislatures. The English *Cabinet* is the peculiar growth of Parliamentary Government in England. It is through the Cabinet that one or the other of the two great Parties in England which happens to have a majority in the House of Commons governs the Country. Thus it is through the Cabinet that the people of the United Kingdom realise and enjoy the fullest measure of Responsible Government. The Leader of the dominant party is called the Premier and he is the keystone of the arch of the Cabinet. He selects his colleagues from amongst his followers and

directs their policy and is responsible to Parliament for the whole Cabinet. Confidence of the House of Commons is the very breath of the nostrils of the Cabinet; above all, the whole system of Government by the Cabinet is based upon conventions and understandings and not upon Acts of Parliament.

Now the Council of the Governor-General had nothing to do with Responsible Government in India. In fact the Government of India was entirely responsible to Parliament and *not* to the people of India. Consequently they could always depend upon the official votes in the Legislative Council, which were always in a majority (before the Reforms). Members of the Council did not represent any political party; the majority of them were members of the Indian Civil Service and all held office for five years; though they followed a concerted policy they might not all hold to the same or similar political views. They were not called upon to, and generally did not, resign if their advice was not followed by the Governor-General. There is a wider gulf between the Viceroy and his colleagues than there is between the Prime Minister and his colleagues. Finally, the Governor-General-in Council is a body created by the Statute; its procedure is bound by Rules and Regulations; and every Member places on record his views. In fact the practice of recording minutes on every subject that comes before the Council is regarded by many as the greatest safeguard against irresponsible and slipshod exercise of authority by that body. It is not so with the British Cabinet.

CHAPTER XII.

ADMINISTRATIVE CENTRALIZATION—*Contd.*

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENTS.

(60)

VIII—FORMATION OF THE PROVINCES.

To go back to Provincial Relations. Let us first of all consider the formation of the provinces. It is unnecessary to go over once again the ground covered in the two Chapters on the territorial expansion of the East India Company. The different system of provincial administration that came to be established were closely bound up with the course of that expansion. We may distinguish three stages in the growth of the provincial system. (1) Right up to the year 1833 the presidential form of Government consisting of the Governor and his Council—was the approved type and the Act of that year proposed to provide the North-West Provinces which were then to be separated from the Presidency of Fort William with a Governor and Council. (2) The Directors however proposed to appoint a Lieutenant-Governor to the North-West Provinces and an Act of 1835 gave effect to the proposal. Bengal continued to be under the Governor-General of India, and its administration suffered on account of the prolonged absences of the Governor-General, all power falling into the hands of Secretaries appointed by him. The Act of 1853 authorised the Court of Directors to appoint either a Governor and Council for Bengal or ask

the Governor-General in Council to appoint a servant of the Company of more than 10 years' standing to be the Lieut.-Governor. The latter alternative was adopted. Unlike the Governors, the Lieut.-Governors were appointed by the Governor-General in Council from among the servants of the Company and they had no Executive Councils. (3) The Act of 1854 provided for a still simpler form of provincial government. It empowered the Governor-General in Council, with previous sanction of the Home Authority, to take by proclamation under his immediate authority and management any part of the Company's territories and provide for its administration. In practice, Chief Commissioners were appointed who were technically under the immediate authority of the Governor-General in Council and to them were delegated such powers as were not required to be reserved to the Central Government. The status of the Chief Commissioner was lower than that of the Lieutenant-Governor.

The three types being thus established and the Governor-in-Council form being confined to the old Presidencies of Madras and Bombay, the remaining provinces were given or deprived of one form or the other according as they gained or lost in territory as a result of territorial expansion or administrative redistribution. Thus the *Punjab* was at first placed under a Chief Commissioner; but when, after the Mutiny, the Delhi territory was added to it, it became a Lieutenant-Governorship. In *Burma* the amalgamation of the conquests made by the First and Second Burmese Wars led in 1881 to the whole province being placed under a Chief Commissioner. Upper Burma was annexed in 1886 and in 1897, Upper and Lower Burma were united and raised to the status of a Lieutenant-Governorship. The kingdom of *Oudh*, after annexation in 1856, was placed under a Chief Commissioner.

In 1877 it was merged into the Lieutenant-Governorship of the North-West Provinces and the name of the two Provinces was changed into the *United Provinces of Agra and Oudh* by Lord Curzon in 1902. The *Central Provinces* formed in 1861 continued to be under a Chief Commissioner throughout though *Berar* was amalgamated with them in 1903.

The Partition of Bengal.—The first instance when redistribution of territories was made ostensibly for the purpose of better administration was the Partition of Bengal in 1905. To the old Presidency of Fort William *Assam* had been added in 1826. It was separated from Bengal and placed under a Chief Commissioner in 1874. In 1905 the still unwieldy province of *Bengal* under a Lieutenant-Governor was divided into two Lieutenant-Governorships. The Western half retained the old name of Bengal and the old seat of Government at Calcutta, whilst the Eastern half was augmented by the addition of Assam, previously under a Chief Commissioner, and styled *Eastern Bengal and Assam* with its capital at Dacca.

Transfer of Capital.—But the Partition of Bengal caused grave dissatisfaction throughout the country and the error was remedied by extensive changes that were made on the occasion of the Coronation of His Majesty George V at Delhi in December 1912. The correspondence between the Governor-General in Council and the Secretary of State that preceded the Delhi Durbar shows that larger and deeper considerations than those of mere removal of a cause of popular agitation were at the root of the proposed changes. The transfer of the capital of India from Calcutta was urged on two grounds—(a) The anomaly and inconvenience resulting from its being the capital of the Imperial and Provincial Governments. (b) The peculiar political situation arising in

Bengal since the Partition made it desirable to withdraw the Government of India from its provincial environment. The advantages of the Capital being transferred to Delhi were urged to be three :—(a) *Political* “The maintenance of British Rule in India depends on the ultimate supremacy of the Governor-General in Council and the Indian Councils’ Act of 1909 itself bears testimony to the impossibility of allowing matters of vital concern to be decided by a majority of non-Official votes in the Imperial Legislative Council. Nevertheless it is certain that in the course of time, the first demand of Indians for a larger share in the Government of the country will have to be satisfied, and the question will be how this devolution of power can be conceded without impairing the Supreme Authority of the Governor-General in Council. The only probable solution of the difficulty would appear to be gradually to give provinces a larger measure of self-government, until at last India would consist of a number of administrations autonomous in all provincial affairs, with the Government of India above them all, and possessing power to interfere in cases of misgovernment, but ordinarily restricting its functions to matters of Imperial concern. In order that this consummation may be attained, it is essential that the Supreme Government should not be associated with any particular provincial Government. The removal of the Government of India from Calcutta, therefore, is a measure which will, in our opinion, materially facilitate the growth of local self-government on sound and safe lines. It is generally recognised that the capital of a great Central Government should be separate and independent, and effect has been given to this principle in the United States of America, in Canada, and in Australia. Other advantages of Delhi might be more briefly stated thus; (b) its centrical position

and splendid communications; its good climate for seven months of the year and its proximity to Simla would make the annual migration to the Hill Station less costly and tedious; (c) its great historical associations under Hindu and Mahomedan Rules.

The transfer of capital to Delhi was availed of to rectify the error of the Bengal Partition: the five Bengali-speaking districts *viz.*,—the Presidency, Burdwan, Dacca, Rajshahi and Chittagong were formed into a Presidency under a Governor-in-Council. (2) Bihar, Chota Nagpur and Orissa were formed into a new province under a Lieutenant-Governor with a Legislative Council at Patna. (3) Assam was restored to a Chief Commissionership.

Similarly the power given by S. 3 of the Government of India Act 1854 was exercised in 1912 to transfer the city of Delhi and part of the Delhi District to the immediate authority of the Governor-General in Council to form it into a Chief Commissionership to be known as the province of Delhi. The intention was to make the site of new capital and its surroundings an *enclave* occupying the same kind of position as Washington and the District of Columbia in the United States.

Though the territories were rearranged in 1912 upon principles of great political and constitutional significance, it is still true that the present political map of India was shaped by the military, political, or administrative exigencies or conveniences of the moment, and with no conscious regard to the linguistic or racial affinities or wishes of the people concerned. The bearing of this circumstance on the question of Responsible Government in India will be explained in the Chapter dealing with that subject.

(61) IX—VARYING STATUS OF THE LOCAL GOVERNMENTS.

British India consists of nine major Provinces and six lesser charges. Each of these 15 charges is called a Local Government. All alike are under the superintendence and control of the Governor-General in Council. But important differences existed between the status of the several classes of Local Governments. We may gather the Local Governments into five categories.

(a) *The Three Presidencies.*—Historically they were even prior to the Government of India. Madras and Bombay have always enjoyed the privilege of the Governor-in-Council form of Government. Bengal after many vicissitudes also came to have the same form since 1912. The Governors were appointed by the Crown, being usually persons of rank and experience in England. In an emergency the Governor can overrule his colleagues but otherwise decisions are those of a majority. Presidency Governments still enjoyed some relics of their former independence ; they were extra-ordinary members of the Governor General's Council if meetings of that Council should happen to be held in the Presidency ; they had the right to correspond direct with the Secretary of State unless financial issues were involved ; they could appeal to him against orders of the Governor-General in Council ; they had full discretion in selecting for important offices under them ; and they were less liable to supervision than other provinces in the administration of their revenue and their forests.

The Four Lieutenant-Governorships.—They were constituted by Acts of Parliament. N.-W. Province (1835), Bengal (1834) Punjab (1859). Fresh powers to constitute Lieutenant-Governorships were given by the Indian Council's Act 1861.

under this Statute Burma was raised to this status in 1897 and each of the two halves of partitioned Bengal in 1905. Lieutenant-Governors were appointed by the Governor-General subject to the approbation of the Crown. They must have served for at least 10 years in India. The extent of their authority may be declared by the Governor-General in Council. The maximum salary was fixed by Act of Parliament. Though the oldest and the heaviest charge (the U. P.) had no executive Council, the newest province of Behar and Orissa had one. But the executive Council did not materially alter the relation of the Lieutenant-Governor with the Government of India.

Central Provinces and Assam.—They came next. In theory the Chief Commissioner administered the province as a delegate of the Governor-General who was competent to give all necessary orders and directions for its administration. But, in practice, the powers entrusted to him were often as wide as those of the Lieutenant-Governor and with the creation of the Legislative Council in Assam and in Central Provinces any distinction in administrative methods vanished.

Baluchistan and North-Western Frontier Province.—These two form a group by themselves. They are administered by Chief Commissioners who are also Agents to the Governor General in respect of political relations in the adjoining tribal territories; they are in fact more directly than any of the foregoing provinces under the control of the Government of India, acting through its Foreign and Political Departments, both because political questions are of preponderent importance and also because they lack the financial resources and powers which the more settled provinces enjoy. Of the two, British Baluchistan was formed out of the territory extending for the most part over the

tableland beyond the mountain range which forms the North-West boundary of India. The nucleus of this Province was the district of Quetta occupied in 1876 and purchased from the Khan of Khilat. To this were added certain districts acquired from Afghanistan in 1879 by the Treaty of Gandamuck and other adjacent vast territories. The whole was formed into a Chief Commissionership in 1887. The 2nd namely the North-West Frontier Province was created by Lord Curzon in 1901, for purposes of political security by detaching certain Punjab Districts.

Minor Administrations.—Under this category come *Coorg* annexed in 1834 and administered by the Resident in Mysore; *Ajmere*—ceded in 1818 is similarly administered by the Agent to the Governor-General in Rajputana. *Andaman and Nicobar Isles*.—Are administered by the Superintendent of the Penal Settlement of Port Blair as Chief Commissioner; *Delhi*—comprises a small tract enclosing the new capital.*

(62) X—ADMINISTRATION IN A PROVINCE.

Having considered the separate provinces, a general account may be now given of the way in which administration is carried on in a major province. There are local differences and provincial peculiarities but it is still possible to give a picture of the provincial administration which is roughly true of any other Province. In every province but Bombay there exists at head-quarters, for the purpose of supervision of the revenue administration, a Board of Revenue, or its equivalent, a Financial Commissioner. In their administrative capacity these constitute the chief Revenue Authority of the province, and relieve the provincial Government of much detailed work which would otherwise come to it; while

* M. C. Report S, 121—23.

in their judicial capacity they form an appellate Court for the increasing volume of revenue and often of rent suits. But for other purposes than the revenue the provincial Government deals chiefly with its Commissioners and Collectors. The easiest way of understanding the organization of a province is to think of it as composed of districts, which, in all provinces except Madras, are combined, in groups of usually from four to six, into Divisions each under a Commissioner.

The *District* which is a Collector's charge is the unit of administration, but it is cut up into sub-divisions under Assistant or Deputy Collectors, and these again into revenue collecting areas of smaller size. The Provincial Government's general authority thus descends through the Divisional Commissioner in direct chain to the District Officer.

(63) XI—FUNCTIONS OF THE GOVERNMENT IN INDIA.

Having considered how the provinces were formed and how a centralized administration was set up in each, let us next consider the diverse duties of Government in India. "Government" means much more to the people in India than it means in the West. It is a paternal government. At a time when a great controversy was going on in England as to the functions of government, and when writers like Mill and Herbert Spencer were opposed to any extension of the sphere of State-intervention in the affairs of the individual a system of Government was established in India which touched the people almost at every point. The British administration had to do many things here which in England are done by private effort and organization. The following passage " in the unadorned language of the Decentralization Commission " describes the various functions of the Government of India.*

* M. C. Report S. 45.

"The Government (in India) claims a share in the produce of land, and save where, as in Bengal, it has commuted this into a fixed land-tax it exercises the right of periodical re-assessment of the cash value of its share. In connection with its revenue assessments, it has instituted a detailed cadastral survey, and a record of rights in the land. Where its assessments are made upon large landlords, it intervenes to prevent their levying excessive rents from their tenants, and in the Central Provinces it even takes an active share in the original assessment of landlords' rents. In the Punjab, and some other tracts, it has restricted the alienation of land by agriculturists to non-agriculturists. It undertakes the management of landed estates when the proprietor is disqualified from attending to them by age, sex, or infirmity or occasionally, by pecuniary embarrassment. In times of famine it undertakes relief works and other remedial measures upon an extensive scale. It manages a vast forest property and is a large manufacturer of salt and opium. It owns the bulk of the Railways of the country and directly manages a considerable portion of them and it has constructed and maintains most of the important irrigation works. It owns and manages the postal and telegraph system. It has the monopoly of note-issue and it alone can set the mints in motion. It acts, for the most part, as its own banker, and it occasionally makes temporary loans to Presidency Banks in times of financial stringency. With the co-operation of the Secretary of State it regulates the discharge of the balance of trade as between India and the outside world, through the action of the Indian Councils' drawings. It lends money to Municipalities, Rural Boards, and agriculturists, and occasionally to the owners of historical estates. It exercises a strict control over the sale

of liquor and intoxicating drugs not merely by the prevention of unlicensed sale, but by granting licenses for short periods only, and subject to special fees which are usually determined by auction. In India, however, the direct responsibilities of Government, in respect of Police, Education, Medical and Sanitary operations, and ordinary Public Works are of a much wider scope than in the United Kingdom. The Government has further very intimate relations with the numerous Native States, which collectively cover more than one-third of the whole area of India, and comprise more than one fifth of its population. Apart from the special functions narrated above, the Government of a sub-continent containing nearly 1,800,000 square miles and 300,000,000 people is itself an extremely heavy burden and one which is constantly increasing with the economic development of the country and the growing needs of populations of diverse nationality, language, and creed."*

(64) XII—ON THE RELATIONS OF THE CENTRAL GOVERNMENT WITH LOCAL GOVERNMENTS.

It is obvious that the functions enumerated above cannot be discharged by a single organization. In every considerable country there are, in addition to the Central Authority, what are called Local Governments, and the relations of the two kinds of Government present some of the most difficult problems of practical administration. The local units may be the result of the past history of the country e.g., the Counties or Shires of England, the Provinces of India, the Cantons of Switzerland; or they may be created by the Central Authority *ad hoc* for the purposes of administration e.g. the Districts in the Indian Provinces or the Departments of

* M. C. Report S. 45.

France. Often the historical and the administrative reasons may coincide. The units of local Government may also be the units of Local *Self-Government*, and economy and simplicity of administration ensue if the units for the exercise of these two authorities are coterminous.

We must distinguish between three separate inquiries that are involved in considering the relations between the Central and Local Authorities.

- (a) The relations of Local *Self-Government* with the Provincial Government.
- (b) The Provincial Government as a unit of Local Government on behalf of the Central Government.
- (c) The relations of the Provincial Government with the Central Government.

Of these the first inquiry will be pursued in the next Chapter. A picture of Provincial Government as the agent of the Central authority has been given in an earlier section. We shall take up the last now.

Of the functions mentioned in the last Section some are administered directly by the Government of India ; the administration of the remaining is primarily vested in the Local Governments as the Agents of the Central Government, the latter exercising general supervision and control.

The Sphere of the Government of India.—(1) Since the abolition of the three separate Military Commands of Bengal, Bombay and Madras in 1893, the defence of the whole country is the most important function of the Central Government. (2) Foreign and Political relations, including in this term relations with Asiatic powers and tribes on the frontiers of India, administration of bastions of territory like the

Frontier Province and British Baluchistan, and finally relations with the Native States in India which are mainly though not solely the concern of the Central Government; (3) In a separate category come the administration of Tariffs, the currency and the exchanges, the Public Debt, opium and also the great commercial services like the Post Office, Telegraph and the Railway. (4) Audit and Accounting of the revenue and expenditure of the country on a uniform plan.

Responsibility for every thing else is shared in greater or lesser measure between the Central and Provincial Governments.

*Distribution of Functions between the Central and
the Provincial Governments.*

Historical.—The three Presidencies were independent of each other up to 1773. The Regulating Act of that year gave the Governor-General of Bengal the right of controlling the two remaining Presidencies, and the Acts of 1793 and 1813 extended and emphasized this right. But on account of the difficulties of communication the Governments of Bombay and Madras enjoyed a very large measure of independence in administration and also exercised the right of correspondence with the Home Authorities. The question as to the proper functions of the Government of India assumed importance with the extension of the Territories of the Company and received special notice in the Charter Act of 1833 and the celebrated Despatch of the Court of Directors which is an exposition of the Charter Act. This Despatch pointedly refers to the difficulty of drawing a line of demarcation between the functions of a Central and Local government. “It is impossible for the Legislature, and it is equally so for

us in our instructions, to define the exact limits between a just control and petty, vexatious, meddling interference."*

(65)

XIII—CENTRALIZATION.

Considering the inherent difficulty of drawing a precise line between these relations the Despatch relied upon the practical good sense of the Governor-General in Council to determine it. On the whole the tendency towards centralisation gained the upper hand. Material development, improved communications, and the interest taken by Parliament in Indian Affairs strengthened the tendency. Let us consider how this tendency worked itself out in practice.

The powers of superintendence, direction and control were exercised by the Government of India in matters of *Finance*, *Legislation*, and *Administration*.

Finance.—The entire revenues of the country were vested in the Governor-General-in-Council by the Act of 1858 and the Provincial Governments could raise or spend not a single rupee on their own account. Though under the system of Provincial Settlements (as begun by Lord Mayo in 1870, and perfected by Lord Hardinge in 1912) larger powers were given to the Provinces their tutelage to the Government of India was still considerable.

Under that system (which will be fully explained later on) the revenues of the Government of India were derived from certain sources which were entirely their own e.g., Railways, Customs, Opium, Salt, Post and Telegraphs &c.; a substantial part of them was also derived from sources in which the Provincial Governments had a share and which, therefore, were called "divided heads" i.e., Land revenue, Forest, Irrigation, Income-tax, Stamps, Excise &c. The Provincial revenues in

their turn were derived in the first place, from these divided heads, and also from certain entirely Provincial Heads. The whole theory of the provincial settlements was based not on what a province collected by way of revenue, but on what the province required for expenditure to keep up a certain standard of administration. Whatever surplus revenue the Central Government received from the more productive Provinces it spent upon the administration, development, or defence of the unproductive provinces like the Frontier Province, Burma etc. The ultimate responsibility of the Government of India for the solvency of each of the provincial Governments made them very exacting in their control over provincial expenditure and their interest in the revenue collected by a Provincial Government made them equally watchful of the success or otherwise with which the province played the part of a tax-gatherer on their behalf. There were various ways of exercising this financial control : (a) all provincial budgets were carefully scrutinised and required sanction ; no province could budget for a deficit, or could go below a minimum cash balance which it was always required to maintain with the Central Government. (b) Again, in matters of expenditure, the spending authorities were bound by a series of financial Codes of Instructions such as the Civil Service Regulations, the Civil Account Code, the Public Works Code etc. The Provincial Governments could not create new appointments or raise emoluments beyond a certain narrow limit ; (c) a Provincial Government could not impose a new tax without the previous sanction of the Central Government ; (d) nor could it borrow money, either in England or in India, for capital expenditure. The Government of India advanced money to the Provincial Governments if at all the latter wanted to borrow.

In Legislation.—The absolute subordination of the Government of India to the Secretary of State in this matter has been referred to already. The control over provincial legislation followed as a corollary from that position. We shall trace in a subsequent Chapter the rise of the Legislative Councils in the Provinces of India. It is sufficient to state here that as between the Governor-General's Legislative Council and the Provincial Legislative Councils there was no definite line of demarcation like the one we find in the federal form of Government. Though the Provincial Council was theoretically competent to range over the whole field of legislation, its powers were restricted, in practice, in two or three ways. (1) In the first place the majority of the Councils were of recent origin and growth. A great part of the legislative field, therefore, was occupied by the enactments of the Central Legislative Council. Particularly a large body of laws dealing with important subjects like crime, marriage, succession, contracts, transfer of property, business and Industries, and public health, was codified by the Central Council. (2) Though the Central Council generally did not consider laws of a Provincial application, there were many exceptions. Thus it passed the Deccan Agriculturists' Relief Act (Bombay) 1879; the Bengal Tenancy Act 1885; the Madras Civil Courts Act 1887; the Allahabad University Act 1887; the Lower Burma Court's Act 1900; and the Punjab Alienation of Land Act 1900. Not only could thus the Central Legislative Council encroach upon the Provincial field, but (3) every project of legislation in a Provincial Council had to be submitted to the Government of India and the Secretary of State for previous sanction; every important change in the Bill made during the passage of the Bill in the Council had to be similarly com-

municated and got approved of ; and no Provincial Bill could become an Act before it was assented to by the Governor-General.

In Administration.--Here the control was too general and extensive to be described in a few simple propositions. In part the control was the direct result of the financial control which has been previously mentioned ; in part it was due to the necessity of keeping administration uniform in a vast country like India. The Public Services which administered in the Provinces were recruited in England by the Secretary of State and the conditions of pay, promotion, leave, pensions etc. of them were fixed by that authority. Similarly in matters of business and industry, as the Provinces were brought into very close contact uniformity was demanded in such matters as statistics, patents, copyright, insurance, income-tax, explosives, mining etc.

Further, as the Provincial Governments were mostly occupied with the routine work of administration it became the distinct duty of the Government of India to lay down policies of reform and progress in the shape of Resolutions. These often were based upon the Reports of Commissions or Committees appointed from time to time by the Supreme Government to investigate the working of Departments with which the Provincial Governments were primarily charged. Often a Commission recommended the appointment of advising or inspecting Officers at Head-quarters to co-ordinate the results of Provincial Administration. Lord Curzon was particularly fond of appointing such officers and often they were got from England. In addition to these occasions of interference which were common to all Provinces, the Supreme Government frequently exercised the right of issuing

instructions to particular Local Governments in regard to matters which may have attracted their attention from the numerous reports and returns which each Government was required to submit to them. And finally, considerable interference resulted from the Central Government having to attend to the appeals made to them by persons dissatisfied with the action or orders of a Provincial Government.*

From this account of the relations between the Central and Local Governments it is abundantly clear that these relations were in no way "Federal relations." The Government of the Country was one; the Provinces, in spite of the considerable powers they enjoyed, were strictly the 'agents' of the Central Government. Before the Provinces could exercise any real powers of their own, and before, therefore, Responsible Government could be introduced into them, they had to be relieved from a very large part of the control to which they were subjected—a process of emancipation to which we will revert in the next Part of this volume.

Effects of Centralization.—To the evil effects of over-centralization testimony is borne by many writers on Indian Administration. Sir O'Moore Creagh said that the state of affairs was bad enough in 1909 when he joined the Government of India and became infinitely worse in 1914 when he left it."* And this, in spite of the recommendations of the Royal Commission on Decentralization! But such was bound to be the case. In the absence of clear definition of the relations between the Government of India and a Local Government, the extent of interference depended entirely upon the personality of the Governor-General and the amount of control exercised over him by the Secretary of State. The

* Report of the Decentralization Commission.

Governor-General may demand information upon any subject—and as the test of efficiency lay in its immediate production, "the Departments live in a perpetual state of calling for information and returns on all imaginable subjects, great and small. There is probably no government in the world that has so much information in its pigeon-holes as the Government of India, but there it usually remains until eaten by white ants or other insects, which destroy paper in India, so it has to be periodically renewed. There is no end to the process of doing this."*

(66)

XIV—BUREAUCRATIC GOVERNMENT.

We considered in the last Chapter how the Government of India came to be subordinate to the Secretary of State for India and in this Chapter we saw how the Government of India, in their turn, excessively interfered with the Local Governments. It would be worth our while to review the growth of this centralized and bureaucratic system, to study some of its tendencies, to expose its inherent defects, and to visualize its proper place in the progress of a people.

It was natural that when the country began to pass under British Rule, the new-comers should attempt to make their system of Government as much like the old system as possible. Now a prominent feature of Moghul Administration was the delegation of large powers to the local Prefect or Subha in the exercise of which he was not much hampered by the Central Authority on account of his distance from the capital and also on account of the difficulties of communication. But though the Subha combined in himself Revenue, Judicial and Magisterial functions he left the Village

* Indian Studies : 123.

Communities and the local Zamindars in the undisturbed enjoyment of their customary powers.

The first step towards centralization of authority under British Rule was taken when the "Collector," armed with powers as extensive as those of his Moghul prototype, was appointed in each District. But, unlike the Moghal Officer, the Collector directly managed Revenue and Judicial functions—and the Village communities and Panchayats being deprived of their *raison de tre* soon fell into desuetude.

The Collector continued to exercise plenary powers for many years. He moved among the people, personally heard their complaints, and dealt out justice on the spot. He had few occasions to refer to his superiors; and the absence of roads left him unfettered in the exercise of his powers. Those were the golden days of the Civil Service. But soon a change came over his position. Railways, Post, and Telegraphs vastly improved communications. Parties aggrieved by the action of the District Officer or his subordinates could now make use of their wide powers of appeal. At the same time a host of Inspecting Officers began to tour the country. The District Officer thus found himself deprived of a large part of his former freedom, and more and more bound down by Rules and Directions which the Local Government began to issue on the recommendation of its Inspecting Officers. At the same time functions which were formerly discharged by the Collector e.g. irrigation, public works, agricultural improvements, settlements, forests, police etc., came to be taken out of his hands and entrusted to separate Departments. Thus between constant inspection on the one hand and departmentalization on the other the District Officer found less and less occasion to come in contact with the people. He was absorbed in his desk work. But

though as between the Secretariat and himself the Collector was playing a losing game, he kept an effective control over the exercise of Local Self-Government by the people. And nothing is a better proof of bureaucratic centralization than the almost negligible progress made in Local Self-Government by the people during the long period of 50 years since the days of Lord Ripon. All power came to be centered in the hands of the Secretariat at the Provincial Head-quarters. "The real power, the sceptre of authority, lies with the Secretariats and the Heads of Departments under whose standing or special orders the District Officers move and act like Marionettes, dancing to strings pulled by an unseen hand. And now the metamorphosis is complete. The Government is a bureaucracy. Impersonal has superseded personal absolutism—the absolutism of a machine, that of the man."*

In fact the growth of Secretariats at the cost of the other limbs of Government is a feature of all bureaucracies. They thrive upon correspondence. That they had succeeded in sucking the District Officers dry of all real power was well pointed out and explained by the late Mr. Gokhale. He assigned three reasons for the great change in the position of the Collector (1) The creation of Commissionerships; (2) the multiplication of the Departments; (3) the gradual evolution of a uniformity of administration which rendered Secretariat control both necessary and possible.

Gokhale deduced the following defects from the weakening of the Collector's position; (a) owing to excessive Secretariat control the Collector was unable to grant redress on the spot; (b) owing to multiplication of Departments, harassing departmental delays became inevitable in the disposal of matters

which properly speaking ought to be disposed of on the spot under the authority of the Collector. (c) Owing to the spread of English education in the country and other causes, there was not that mastery of Indian languages attempted by Collector which he used to acquire formerly. (d) The writing work of the Collector increased enormously; he was tied largely to his desk, and therefore unable to acquire that same acquaintance with the requirements of the people that his predecessors were able to acquire. (e) His back was stiffened by the growth of political agitation in the country, and he was, so to say, driven more within himself.

Not only the Collectors, but even the Heads of Provinces had no real authority, and Governors, Lieutenant Governors and Chief Commissioners were reduced to the same level of dependence. An indication of this tendency towards centralization is to be found in the opposition to the "Council Form." of Government. Instead of setting up this form of Government in Provinces like the N. W. Province, or Bengal or the Punjab, Lieutenant-Governors were appointed, for the Lieutenant-Governors were drawn from the Secretariats, and so also were the Chief Commissioners. In fact it was at one time seriously proposed to abolish the Councils of the Governors of Madras and Bombay and reduce the latter to the status of Lieutenant-Governors. Thus H. S. Cunningham seriously contended that the greater independence and privileges of the Governors of the two Presidencies had become anomalous. "To raise up two little *Imperio in Imperio* which, without any final responsibility, shall have the power of thwarting the Supreme authority, impeding its action, disobeying its orders, refusing to answer its inquiries, and otherwise treating it with disrespect, is a waste of power which must always go far to impair the

efficiency of Indian administration, and which may paralyze its efforts in any particular emergency."

The advantages of having a Viceroy "trained in more varied experience and wider range of English political life," "personally acquainted with English politics" and "trained to look at the matters in hand from the European rather than from the Anglo-Indian point of view" were admitted. But the same advantages in the case of the Presidential Governor were poohpoohed. What was wanted in him, it was said, was not wider statesmanship, but thorough local knowledge as is obtained in the Civil Service.

The Provincial and the Central Secretariats were almost wholly composed of the members of the Indian Civil Service and it is now easy to realise the full significance of the oft-repeated complaint that the whole Government of India was ridden by the Members of the "Heaven-born" Service, that, in fact, *they* were the Government of India. Interesting sidelight is thrown upon the power and position which they had built for themselves. The young Civilians—mostly drawn from the aristocratic Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, and not a few of them having a hereditary connection with India—as soon as they landed in India found themselves the members of a sacrosanct body. Their natural inclination to remain aloof from the people was not now corrected by the former salubrious practice of moving among the people, but was rather strengthened by the desk work to which they were condemned, and by the evidence of skill in which they were promoted. Easy communications, the amenities of "Dak Bungalows" when on tour, and their frequent transfers to and from the Secretariats to "life in the plains" completed the process of alienation. The practice

of the annual migration or exodus to the Hills contributed as nothing else did to this estrangement. From their "Olympian heights" the Official community could afford to look down upon the vast mass of the people on the plains. They ceased to have a living touch with the new aspirations and ideals that were steadily growing among the people as a result of the spread of education.

But in addition to the alienation of the sympathies of the people, the great evil of a bureaucracy is its dwarfing influence upon the personal and national ideals of the people. "Nations advance, a people becomes great not through docility and submissiveness, but by the free play of aspiration and thought, the liberty to advance along all lines of legitimate progress in self-respecting independence of spirit. That is the very antithesis of the bureaucratic ideal. Efficiency of the machine, not the living organic growth of a people; progress, if such there be, on the initiative of the Government not progress on the initiative of the people; such are its watchwords."*

In fact it is necessary to carefully bear in mind the true role of a bureaucratic Government in the political progress of a people. "It finds its true function in the provision of a kind of training school to bridge over the gap between autocracy on the one hand, and some popular Government on the other, to form a nexus, as it were, between the barbaric pomp of the mediæval monarch and the sober institutions that characterise democracy. For the arbitrary rule of one it substitutes ordered rule and precedent. In place of the perplexities and fierce uncertainties that dog the steps of even the most brilliant autocrat, it enables men to forecast with safety the future and to earn their living in confidence

* Houghton : 58.

and quietude. It provides the smooth and well oiled machinery essential for those social inquiries and ameliorations which the modern conscience so insistently demands. In a word, it is the portal to modern democracy."*

That the Anglo-Indian Bureaucracy, in spite of the many hard things said against it, admirably succeeded in giving to the country a perfect administrative machine must be admitted. When everything has been said against the bureaucracy we must maintain that the Bureaucracy laid those foundations, upon which the structure of Responsible Government is now to be raised, and in the raising of that structure also, the Bureaucracy will undoubtedly play an important part.

* Houghton: 168-69.

CHAPTER XIII.

DECENTRALIZATION.

(67)

I—FAILURE OF BUREAUCRACY.

We saw in the preceding pages how after the British possessions in India had been consolidated a rigid bureaucratic form of administration i.e., "an administration by officials, conducted with the aid of official light, and under merely official control"** came to be established. The chief features of the administration thus set up were the following :—

- (1) The complete subordination of the Local and Central Governments to British Parliament through the Secretary of State.
- (2) Domination of the Indian Civil Service in most Departments of Government.
- (3) Efficiency—not the consultation of popular wish or welfare—the goal of Government :—As seen in
 - (a) The exclusion of the people from any real share in administration or legislation.
 - (b) The decadence of indigenous institutions of Self-government—the Village Community or Panchayat.
 - (c) Unpopular redistribution of Provinces—as of Bengal.
 - (d) Enormous growth in public taxation and expenditure ; particularly the growth of Military expenditure.
 - (e) Backwardness of what are called nation-building activities of the state, e.g., Education, Sanitation, Temperance, Co-operation, etc.

* Gokhale : 1482.
 ** Gokhale : 1482.

- (f) Industrial backwardness ; agricultural stagnation ; poverty ; famines ; epidemics ; alarming vital statistics.
- (g) Attempts to thwart political agitation by restrictions upon freedom of press, speech, and movement ; increase in sedition and anarchist crime ; repressive measures.

Thus Efficiency, the sole *raison de tre* of bureaucracy, seems to have very serious limitations.

Gokhale's verdict.—The inevitable failure of a Bureaucracy to attain real efficiency was thus pointed out by the late Mr. Gokhale :—

" The efficiency attained by a foreign bureaucracy, uncontrolled by public opinion, whose members again reside only temporarily in the land in which they exercise official power, is bound to be of a strictly limited character, and it can never compare with that higher and true efficiency which is possible only under a well-regulated system of self-government. The present form of administration in India is a strongly centralized bureaucracy in which the men at the centre hold office for five years only. They then leave the country, carrying away with them all the knowledge and experience of administrative matters acquired at the expense of the country, and their places are taken by new men, who, in their turn retire similarly after five years. As things are there is no one ever in the Government who is permanently interested in the country as only its own people can be interested. One result is that the true well-being of the people is systematically subordinated to militarism and service interests of English mercantile classes ; and though under such a system peace and order may be maintained, and even a certain amount of efficient

administration secured, the type of efficiency is bound to remain a low one always. Moreover, it is clear that even such efficiency of administration as has been attained in the past by the existing system, is bound to suffer more and more, owing to the growing antagonism of the governed to that system. No man, for instance, ever laboured more strenuously for mere efficiency than Lord Curzon, and yet, never was discontent deeper and more wide-spread than when he left India, and no Viceroy of recent times has had to succeed to a greater legacy of difficulties than Lord Minto."*

(68)

II—DAWN OF A NEW ERA.

It would seem that the advent of Lord Minto and Lord Morley into the orbit of Indian Administration marked the dawn of a new era. Many events conspired to give point to the transition. Lord Curzon's failure meant the failure of the Bureaucratic form of Government. The Liberal party came into power about the same time with Morely as the Secretary of State and "it is not too much to say that to him belongs in an exceptional degree the credit of saving the cause of progressive constitutional reform in India."†

Remedial Measures.—The measures adopted by Government to mitigate the evils of Bureaucracy may be grouped under two heads. Firstly, *Decentralization* of authority by

(a) giving wider powers to the provincial Governments
and

(b) the institution of Local Self Government.

Secondly *Association* of Indians with Administration by

* Gokhale : 989, † Thakore : 150.

- (a) the increased employment of Indians in the public services.
- (b) The appointment of Indians to the Council of the Secretary of State in England and the Executive Councils in India.
- (c) Above all, the enlargement of the Legislative Councils.

In this Chapter we shall consider the measures of Decentralization, reserving for the next a consideration of the policy of Association.

(69)

III—DECENTRALIZATION.

The Royal Commission on Decentralization appointed during the time of Lord Minto presented its Report in 1909. It surveyed the relations between the Indian and provincial Governments and also between the latter and the authorities subordinate to them, and recommended a series of measures having for their object the relaxation of control by higher authorities and the simplification of administrative methods.

It was particularly in the sphere of finance that considerable improvements were effected—improvements suggested by the Commission and given effect to by the Government of Lord Hardinge. This great statesman, indeed, foreshadowed the grant of provincial autonomy in his Durbar Despatch, and paved the way for it by the transfer of capital to Delhi.

(70)

IV—HISTORY OF PROVINCIAL SETTLEMENTS.

Sir John Strachey, to illustrate the utter dependence of the Provinces upon the Central Government for funds, wrote: "If it became necessary to spend £20 on a road between two markets, to rebuild a stable that tumbled down, or to entertain a menial servant on wages of 10 shillings a month, the

matter had to be formally reported for the orders of the Government of India.”*

This continued right up to the year 1871. The provinces having no independent resources of their own and expecting to get whatever they wanted from the Government of India, had no motives for economy in expenditure or care in the collection of revenue and there was an amount of friction between them and the Central Government over trifling details. The first step in Decentralization was taken by the Government of Lord Mayo. Certain heads of expenditure e.g., Jails, Registration, Police, Education, Medical Services, Printing, Roads, etc., were transferred to the control of the local Governments with the revenue under the corresponding heads, to be supplemented by a *fixed annual Imperial grant*. By this measure a certain degree of fixity in Imperial finance was secured and the local Governments were given absolute freedom for allotting the Imperial grant as they liked.

But this arrangement did not offer an effective inducement to the Provinces to develop the revenues collected in their territories and to secure economy. Lord Lytton’s Government, therefore, chiefly as the result of the recommendations of Sir John Strachey, made the following improvements in 1877-78 :—

(1) Certain additional heads e.g., Land Revenue, Excise, Stamps, General Administration, Stationery and Printing, Law and Justice, were transferred to the Provincial Governments.

(2) For the administration of these additional services, instead of making an increase in their permanent grants,

* Strachey: 113.

a share in the revenues realized under certain heads was assigned to them e.g., excise, stamps etc.

Thus for the first time was introduced into Indian finance the classification of revenue heads into "Indian," "Provincial" and "Divided." It generally happened, however, that the assigned revenues of the provinces fell short of their required expenditure, and the deficit had to be made good as before, by a fixed lump *annual* grant.

This led to annual bargaining between the Central and Provincial authorities, and as the fixed grant formed a considerable portion of the resources of the provinces, the resources could not increase with sufficient elasticity. In the days of Lord Ripon, therefore, his Finance Minister Major Baring (afterwards Lord Cromer) (a) instead of making settlements *annually*, kept them in force for *five* years; (b) Instead of making up the provincial deficit by an Imperial grant, a certain percentage of *Land Revenue* was made over to the Provinces. Thus the annual bickerings were stopped and provincial revenues made more elastic. Settlements on these lines were made in 1882, 1887, 1892 and 1897. Though the Provinces were now better off than they were thirty years previously, their position was most unsatisfactory. "In 1900-1901, out of a total gross revenue of £75 Millions, the provincial Governments were entrusted with the expenditure of £18 Millions. From this income they had to provide for the greater part of the expenditure incurred in the various Departments of the Civil administration entrusted to them, for the collection of land revenue, for the Courts of Justice, jails, police, education, medical services, civil buildings and roads, and for a multitude of other charges."*

* Stradley : 115.

It was the practice of the Government of India to resume, at the time of the revision of the settlement, whatever surplus revenue accrued to a province during the period. This killed any motive for economy, as the provincial Governments knew that if they economized in one direction to accumulate money for other needs their savings were imperilled while their reduced standard of expenditure would certainly be taken as the basis for the next settlement.

The Government of Lord Curzon, therefore, made the settlements *quasi-permanent* in 1904. As at that time the Central Government was having a series of surpluses, it diverted a part of this surplus, in the shape of special grants, to the Provincial Governments for the improvement of Police, Agriculture, Education, Local Self Government, etc.

The final step in the history of these settlements was taken in 1912 when Lord Hardinge's Government declared the settlements to be *permanent*. At the same time certain improvements were made in these settlements. (a) Though the burden of famine relief was thrown entirely upon the provinces the Government of India showed willingness to consider the grant of assistance to a province in the event of grave embarrassment. (b) Fixed grants assigned to the provinces to make up their deficits were, wherever possible, replaced by growing revenues. (c) Special grants of a non-recurring character were to be continued as before, but care was to be taken to see that they did not unduly interfere with the local Governments and that they were given with due regard to the wishes of the provincial Authorities. (d) Minor adjustments were made to ensure that each province got its proper share of revenue. Thus Forest revenue and expenditure were made wholly provincial in all provinces, Excise was wholly

provincialized for Bombay, and to the extent of three quarters in the Central Provinces and the United Provinces. Land revenue was made half provincial in the Punjab and $\frac{5}{8}$ provincial in Burma.

Though by this arrangement the Provinces got larger revenues and greater freedom in their application, certain restrictions upon them were still continued. Thus they could not budget for a deficit, and they had to maintain a minimum cash-balance with the Government of India. Nor had they powers of taxation or borrowing. But the principle on which these provincial settlements were based—the subordination of the province to the Central authority—had been carried to the last *finesse* and had to make room for another principle namely financial autonomy for each province. We shall take up this subject in its proper place.

Decentralization in administration followed as a result of decentralization in finance. Nor did this process stop with the provincial Governments. They, in their turn, were called upon to foster Local Self-Government, with what results, will be considered in the section following.

(71)

V—LOCAL SELF-GOVERNMENT.

We considered in an earlier Chapter how the village communities—the immemorial institutions of self-government in India—decayed under the pressure of British Rule. The Local Self-Government that we propose to study here owed its origin to the desire of the Central Authority for decentralization *i.e.*, to relieve itself of such functions as were best managed by local bodies.

Faint Beginning—It is true that in the *Presidency Towns* Corporations consisting of a Mayor and Aldermen according to

the English model—had been established at a very early date, but it was only after 1861 that Corporations consisting of the elected representatives of the rate-payers came to be established in them. The beginnings of Local institutions *outside the Presidency Towns* upto the year 1865 were faint. An Act of 1850 had provided for the voluntary constitution of Town Committees and the levy by them of certain indirect taxes, but few Towns came forward to avail themselves of powers under that Act. Meanwhile towns were increasing in population and their sanitary condition was very unsatisfactory. The Towns Improvement Acts that were passed about 1885 in the different provinces were meant for the appointment of Commissioners who were to bring about improvements in Municipal affairs.

Lord Mayo's contribution.—But it was in connection with the scheme of financial settlements with the provinces begun by Lord Mayo in 1870, that the importance of Local Self-Government was for the first time emphasized. He said in his Resolution “Local interest, supervision and care are necessary to success in the management of funds devoted to education, medical charity, and local public works. The operation of this Resolution in its full meaning and integrity will afford opportunities for the development of self-government, for strengthening Municipal institutions and for the association of Natives and Europeans to a greater extent than heretofore in the administration of affairs.

Advance under Lord Ripon.—It was in Lord Ripon's time that the first really important and decisive step was taken in respect of Local self-government by placing it on its true basis, “not merely as a means of devolution of authority in administration and in decentralization of financial resources but as a means of popular and political education by

which alone progressive communities could cope with the increasing problems of Government."*

As Lord Ripon explained, in advocating the extension of Local self government, and the adoption of that principle in the management of many branches of local affairs, he did not suppose that the work would be in the first instance better done than if it remained in the sole hands of Government District Officers. It was not, primarily with a view to improvement in administration that the principle of Local self-government was put forward and supported. It was chiefly desirable as an instrument of political and popular education. Lord Ripon himself had no doubt that in course of time, as local knowledge and local interest were brought to bear more freely upon local administration, improved administration would in fact follow. Every year the task of administration became more onerous and His Excellency in Council argued that it was a sheer waste of power not to utilize the growing class of intelligent public-spirited men in the land. He attributed the failure of local institutions in the past to their being "over-riden and practically crushed by direct though well-meant, official interference."

(i) Regarding the mode in which Local Boards were to be generally constituted, the Resolution laid down the principle "that while maintaining and extending, as far as practicable, the plan of municipal government in the cities and towns of each province, the Local Governments will also maintain and extend through out the country, in every district where intelligent non-official agency can be found, a net-work of Local Boards, to be charged with definite duties

* Iyengar : 118.

and entrusted with definite funds." The area of jurisdiction allotted to each Board was in no case to be too large. It was to be such as would ensure local knowledge and local interest, and as such the Taluka or Tahsil was recommended as a suitable unit. The Taluka Boards, may, in their turn be combined under a District Board.

(2) In the composition of Boards—both rural and urban—"preponderance of non-official members" was advocated. The principle of election was to be followed wherever practicable, to be supplemented by a system of choice *i.e.*, nomination. The Chairmen of the Boards were to be, as far as possible, Non-officials elected by the Boards.

(3) Regarding the control to be exercised over the Local Bodies, the Resolution laid down the principle "that the control should be exercised from without rather than from within. The Government should revise the acts of Local Bodies but not dictate them. The Government should have two powers of control. In the first place, their sanction should be required in order to give validity to certain acts, such as the raising of loans, the imposition of taxes, alienation of municipal property etc. In the second place Government should have power to interfere either to set aside altogether the proceedings of the Board in particular cases, or in the event of gross and continued neglect of any important duty, to temporarily suspend the Board.

(4) Regarding the resources at the disposal of the Boards, the Resolution recommended that certain local sources of revenue should be made over to them. They should be supplemented by grants from the provincial revenues.

Review of Progress During 1882—1912.—In spite of the liberal principles underlying the Resolution of Lord Ripon

the progress of Local Self-Government during the next thirty years in different parts of India was most discouraging.

The Presidency Towns : Bombay—had always served as the model for the other Presidency Towns. Its first Corporation consisted of a Municipal Commissioner (a Government Official) and nominated Justices of the Peace who were entirely at his mercy. It was in the 1872 that for the first time, and as a result of the suggestions of Mr. (afterwards Sir P. M.) Mehta, the Corporation came to consist of Members half of whom were elected by the rate payers, the other half being made up of J. Ps. and nominees of Government. The Act of 1888 increased the number of elected Members to 72 of whom only 16 were nominated by Government, the rest being elected by the rate payers, the J. Ps., the University, and the Chambers of Commerce. The Corporation had a Standing Committee of 12—eight elected and four nominated—with an elected President under whose directions the work of administration was carried on by the Municipal Commissioner who was a nominated Official belonging to senior rank in the Indian Civil Service.

The Calcutta Corporation was remodelled on the Bombay pattern in 1876 when it came to consist of 48 elected and 24 nominated Commissioners. But the nominated President possessed preponderating power. Lord Curzon reduced the number of Commissioners to fifty of whom 15 were nominated by Government, the rest being elected by the rate-payers, the Chambers of Commerce and the Port Trust. This Corporation also had a Standing Committee of its own but it was not at all quite as powerful as that of Bombay.

The principle of election by rate payers was introduced in the *Madras* Corporation by an Act of 1878. An Act of

1904 increased the number of Corporators to 36 and created a Standing Committee with a President.

In addition to these Corporations the Presidency Towns had two other Bodies for specific purposes, the *Improvement Trusts*—for the purpose of reclamation of land, road widening, improvement of tenements of the labouring classes, etc. and *Port Trusts* for the improvement of the Ports. In 1911 the aggregate income of the Municipalities of Bombay, Calcutta, Madras and Rangoon was $2\frac{1}{2}$ Crores. The incidence of taxation per head was highest in Rangoon, being 11·61 Rupees, 10 Rupees in Bombay, $8\frac{1}{2}$ Rupees in Calcutta and 3 Rupees in Madras.

Municipal and Rural Boards.—Turning to Municipal and Rural Boards, we find that there were in 1911, 713 Municipalities, 197 District Boards and 517 Sub-district Boards. The population in municipal areas was about 16 millions i.e., about 7 per cent. the remaining 93 per cent. being entirely rural. The taxation per head in Municipal areas was about two rupees in Bombay, Punjab, Burma, and the North-West Frontier, $1\frac{3}{4}$ Rupees in the Central Provinces, a little over $1\frac{1}{2}$ in the United Provinces and Bengal, and only $1\frac{1}{3}$ in Madras. In Bombay, the United Provinces, the Punjab, and the Central Provinces, a large part of the Municipal revenue was derived from Octroi. In other provinces there was no Octroi. There was in Madras, however, a toll levied on roads, and Bombay and Assam also levied it. The principal revenue in Madras and Bengal was derived from taxes on houses and lands, Bombay, Central Provinces and Burma also levying such taxes. In some provinces there were taxes on professions and trades, and in all, on carts and vehicles.

The Municipal Boards had powers of taxation within certain limits with the previous sanction of the Local Government. The Rural Boards had no powers of taxation. Their sole source of income was the one-anna cess on Land Revenue and came to about $2\frac{1}{2}$ crores. Another $2\frac{1}{2}$ crores was received from various other sources including a small grant from Government. Thus the incidence of taxation was about 4 annas per head. Even of this cess all the Local Governments did not get the whole amount. Some of them e.g. the United Provinces, the Central Provinces, Punjab, etc. had to make contributions to the Provincial Governments for special services.

Their functions.—Turning now to the functions of these bodies, we may say that, briefly, they were the care of health, of education, and of roads or communications. Enumerating them in greater detail we find that Municipalities were entrusted *first* with the duties of construction, upkeep and laying out of streets and roads, and the provision and maintenance of public and Municipal buildings; *secondly*, the preservation of the public health principally with reference to sanitation, drainage, water-works, provision of medical relief, vaccination, and measures against epidemics and *thirdly* education, especially in the primary stage, the upkeep of medical institutions, sanitation, water-supply, vaccination, veterinary work, construction and maintenance of markets, and charge of pounds and ferries.

Summary and criticism.—It is clear from the foregoing short account that Local self-government had made no substantial progress in the country. The Bureaucracy did not appreciate its value. The District Officers—who were generally the Chairmen of the Rural Boards—had everything in

their own way. The proportion of *ex-officio* and nominated members was very large. Further, the Boards had very limited financial resources at their disposal. They could neither tax nor borrow on their own account. The Commission on Decentralization recommended considerable increase of the elective principle in the constitution of the Boards and the transfer to them of certain minor sources of revenue. The question of Local Self Government received some attention when a special Department was created about 1908 to deal with it and entrusted to a Member of the Executive Council of the Governor-General. Also special grants—though of a non-recurring character—were made to Local Bodies for the improvement of water-supply, sanitation etc. and the Government of Lord Hardinge, in a comprehensive Resolution that was issued in 1915, assumed a most sympathetic attitude towards the subject. The advance of Local Self-Government after the outbreak of the War and the Announcement of August 1917 will be dealt with in a subsequent Chapter.

CHAPTER XIV.

ASSOCIATION.

(72)

I—INTRODUCTORY.

“ Association ” is the second principle by which the rigour of Bureaucracy is rendered less intolerable in practice. It assumed three forms. (a) Employment of Indians as Members of that Bureaucracy ; secondly (b) their association in Councils for the making of laws ; and finally (c) their appointment in Councils whence they could—though only in a very imperfect manner—direct the policy of the Bureaucracy.

We shall consider each of these forms in the following sections :—

(73) II—EMPLOYMENT OF INDIANS IN THE PUBLIC SERVICES.

We must here consider how far the foreign Bureaucracy allowed itself to be leavened by the introduction of the Indian ingredient in its mass. It will be seen that until within recent years the results achieved fell far short of the requirements of the situation.

There are four or five landmarks in regard to this matter in the history of British Rule. In an earlier section reference was made to the pledge given by the Charter Act of 1833 that there would be no distinction of race in making appointments to the public services and that pledge was solemnly renewed by the Proclamation of 1858. The institution in

1853 of competitive examination for entrance into the Indian Civil Service to be held in London by its very nature excluded most Indian candidates. Curiously enough a Committee appointed by the Secretary of State in 1860 to inquire into this question recommended the holding of simultaneous examinations in England and India for recruitment to the Civil Service. No effect was given to this recommendation. As a result of the spread of higher education in India and thanks to the agitation carried on in England by Dadabhoi Nowroji, the question was reopened in Parliament in 1870 and an Act of that year contained the clause empowering the Government of India to frame rules, subject to the sanction of the Secretary of State in Council "for the employment of the Natives of India, of proved merit and ability, in the Civil Service of his Majesty" without requiring them to appear at the competitive examination in London. The method adopted for making appointments under these rules was that of nomination *i.e.*, favouritism, and did not give the best results. Again the appointments thus made were kept separate from those made by open competition ; they formed the "Statutory Civil Service" as distinguished from the "Covenanted Civil Service" which was regarded as of altogether a superior status. As educated Indians were entirely dissatisfied with these arrangements, the Public Service Commission of 1886 was appointed with the declared object of devising means for the larger admission of Indians in the Civil Service. The final orders of the Secretary of State on the Report of this Commission were passed in 1891, and they made the position of Indians worse than what it was prior to the appointment of the Commission. (1) The Statutory Service Rules of 1879 had reserved a sixth of the total recruitment to the Civil Service for Indians. This meant about

160 posts out of a total strength of 1000 posts. But as the result of the Commission's recommendations only between 90 and 100 posts were abstracted from the Indian Civil Service and reserved for Indians. (2) Secondly, the Commission recommended the division of the Public Service into Imperial and Provincial. This inflicted a twofold hardship upon Indians. A stamp of inferiority was placed upon the Provincial Service and secondly, in many Departments e.g. Public-Works, Education, etc., where formerly the Indians were on a footing of equality with the Europeans (of course with a difference as regards pay, etc.) they were reduced to an inferior status. It is important to understand the injustice of this recommendation. In many Departments, at first, Indians and Englishmen were on terms of equality *both* as regards pay and status. The next step was the reduction of pay to two-thirds in the case of Indians though the equality of status was not questioned. The constitution of the Provincial Service—inferior in every respect to the Imperial Service—finally created a permanent inequality as between Indians and Englishmen that led to grave dissatisfaction. In 1893 the House of Commons adopted a Resolution in favour of holding simultaneous examinations in England and India. This was again largely due to the efforts of Dadabhoj, who was then a Member of Parliament. But the Resolution proved a dead letter. The Bureaucracy did not budge an inch to give effect to it. Nothing was done for the next twenty years when, as a result of a Resolution moved in the Imperial Legislative Council, a Royal Commission on the Public Services was appointed in 1912. Its Chairman was Lord Islington and the present Premier of England—Mr. Ramsay MacDonald was one of the Members. The Indian element was represented by Gokhale (who un-

Fortunately died before the preparation of the Report), Sir M. B. Choubal, and Justice Abdur Rahim of Madras. Though the Report was submitted to Government in August 1915, its publication was postponed till January 1917 on account of the prevalence of the Great War. Of the recommendations of this Commission not even a short account need be given. "The War had raised the pitch of Indian expectations to an extreme point and a Report which might have satisfied Indian opinion two years earlier was generally denounced in 1917 as wholly inadequate."*

(74) III—GROWTH OF THE LEGISLATIVE COUNCILS
(UP TO 1909).

We must next turn to the association of Indians in the making of laws. We have seen already how the executive authority i.e., the Governor-General in Council passed Laws known as Regulations prior to 1833. The Act of that year gave to India her first rudimentary Legislature. It consisted of the Executive Council of the Governor-General with the addition of a *fourth Member*—the Law Member. At the same time the Governors-in-Council of Madras and Bombay were deprived of their law-making power. But this reform was found to have defects of its own. The Members of the Governor-General's Council belonged to the Bengal Service and their lack of local knowledge was felt to be a serious drawback to the Councils' handling of Madras or Bombay questions. To Lord Dalhousie belongs the credit of differentiating the Legislative Machine much more decisively from the Executive. The Act of 1853, for which he was in great part responsible, placed the "fourth Member" on the same

* M. C. Report S. 13.

footing with the "Ordinary" members of the Council, and the Council, for legislative purposes, was enlarged by the addition of 6 members, namely the Chief Justice and one Puisne Judge of the Supreme Court at Calcutta, and 4 representatives of the Local Governments of Madras, Bombay, Bengal and North-West Province.

Defects of its early form.—But it was soon clear that even Lord Dalhousie's improvement did not suffice to meet the needs of the time. (1) Madras and Bombay still complained of the preponderance of authority which Bengal exercised ; (2) the huge extent of territory for which a single Council legislated made it impossible for matters to be handled with adequate information and experience ; (3) Moreover, as Sir Charles Wood bitterly complained afterwards, the Council became a sort of debating Society or Petty Parliament, and arrogated to itself the right of inquiry into and redress of grievances. (4) Above all, the terrible events of the Mutiny brought home to men's minds the dangers arising from the entire exclusion of Indians from association with the legislation of the country.

The Indian Councils Act 1861.—It was to remove these defects that in 1861 was passed what Chailley has called "the primary Charter of the present Indian Legislatures"** as the result of much correspondence between Lord Canning and Sir Charles Wood. The legislative power was restored to the Councils of Bombay and Madras and new Councils were allowed to be established in other provinces. This was done for Bengal (1862), for North Western Province (1886), for Burma and the Punjab (1897), and for Eastern Bengal and Assam in 1905. Formerly the laws enacted by the Local

* Chailley : 385.

Legislatures had been complete in themselves and came into operation of their own force. Thenceforth the *previous sanction* of the Governor General was made requisite, for legislation by the local Councils in certain cases, and all Acts of the local Councils required the *subsequent assent* of the Governor-General in addition to that of the Governor. The Governor-General thus became the head of all legislative authority in British India.*

The third defect—namely the inconvenient interference of the Council established by the Act of 1853 with the acts of the Executive Government—was removed by strictly confining the functions of the new Councils to legislation. The fourth defect (exclusion of Indians) was removed by reinforcing the Central Council with additional members—not less than six and not more than twelve—nominated for two years, of whom not less than half were to be *non officials*. It is well to fully appreciate the meaning of this step. It was not easy to get, in the then state of education, Indians familiar with Western methods of Government. The kind of leaders the Act had in view were Indian Rajas, or their Diwans, or great Land-holders or retired Officials of high rank. But none of these knew the full bearing of the methods of legislation adopted in 1861. As Prof. Thakore says “In one word, the nomination of Indians to the legislative Councils was a bold step in advance of the time. It is necessary to understand this to realize how fast India has progressed, or rather, how utterly unprepared India was for Western political methods and institutions in 1861.”*

The Act proves inadequate.—Before long the Act proved inadequate. The number of Indians well-qualified by edu-

* See Cowell.

† Thakore 139.

cation and status to take an interest in the affairs of Government was growing fast and they wanted something more than a Council that was small in size and strictly confined to legislation.

The Indian Councils Act of 1892.—The establishment of the Indian Universities had given an impetus to higher education and the increase in political interest manifested itself in the inauguration of the Indian National Congress in 1885. The question of the reform of the Councils, therefore, began to exercise the attention of the Government of Lord Dufferin. Finally the Indian Councils Act of 1892 was passed. Mr. (afterwards Lord) Curzon who was then the Under Secretary of State explained that the object of that Act was to widen the basis and expand the functions of Government in India ; and to give further opportunities than then existed to the Non-official and Native elements in Indian Society to take part in the work of Government, and in that way "to lend official recognition to that remarkable development both of political interest and political capacity that had been visible among higher classes of Indian society since the Government of India was taken over by the Crown in 1858."

Though as a result of this Act the Councils were enlarged, there was great opposition to the principle of *election* being introduced in them. Lord Cross, the then Secretary of State, said " It would be unwise to introduce a fundamental change of this description without much more positive evidence in its favour than was forthcoming." But the Government of Lord Lansdowne urged that they should not be precluded from resort to some form of election where conditions justified belief in it ; and they asked for power to make rules for the appointment of additional members by nomination or otherwise. They had their way. The compromise between

the conservative principle of nomination and the radical method of election was embodied in the so called " Kimberley clause " (due really to Lord Northbrook). This clause empowered the Governor-General in Council, with the sanction of the Secretary of State in Council, to make regulations as to the conditions of nomination of the additional members to the Council. The intention of Parliament, in conferring this rule-making power on the Government of India, was explained to be as follows :—

" Where Corporations have been established with definite powers upon a recognized administrative basis (*e.g.* Municipalities and District Boards), or where Associations have been formed upon a substantial community of legitimate interests, professional (*e.g.* Universities), commercial (*e.g.* Chambers of Commerce), or territorial (*e.g.* Land-holders etc.), the Governor-General and the local Governors might find convenience and advantage in consulting from time to time such bodies, and in entertaining at their discretion an expression of their views and recommendations with regard to the selection of members in whose qualifications they might be disposed to confide."

Technically, the function of the nominating bodies was to be that of recommendation only ; but the political sense of the Government of India told them that it was impracticable either to insist on selection from a panel of names proffered, or to reject individual nominations at discretion. This course was bound, in course of time, to lead on to election pure and simple."

So far about widening the basis of the Councils. The Act of 1892 also increased their numbers and enlarged their functions. The Councils were allowed to hold a discussion of

the annual financial statement, and also to ask questions under prescribed conditions and restrictions.

(75)

IV—MORLEY-MINTO REFORMS.

The next stage of reform is associated with the name of Lord Minto and Lord Morley. The final proposals are contained in the Despatch of November 27th 1908. The Parliamentary Act embodying the changes received Royal assent on 25th May 1909. It is in the direction of enlarging the Councils, and of making them more representative and effective that the value of the Reforms lies. We may, following Ilbert, consider the change made by them under the heads of (A) Constitution and (B) Functions.

The constitution of the Councils was changed in *three* respects. (1) Numbers, (2) Proportion of Official and Non-official members, (3) Methods of appointment or election.

Numbers.—These, as they were laid down under the Act of 1892 were as shown in column 2 of the table below. The numbers were doubled or more than doubled after the Act of 1909 as can be seen from columns 3 and 4 of the same table.

Number.	PROVINCE.	Strength of the Councils under the Regulations.									
		Nominated.					Elected.				
		Officials.	Law Officers,	Other Officials.	Experts.	Total Officials.	(e)	Non-officials.	Total Nominated.	Non-officials.	Majority.
1	India	16	60	68	8	..	28	..	36	5	33
2	Madras	..	20	50	48	4	1	16	2	20	5
3	Bombay	..	20	50	48	4	1	14	2	18	7
4	Bengal.	..	20	50	53	3	..	16	2	19	4
5	Bihar Orissa	..	(a)	50	44	3	..	15	1	18	4
6	United Province.	15	50	49	..	..	20	2	20	6	28
7	Punjab	..	15	30	26	..	..	10	2	10	6
8	Burma..	..	15	30	17	..	..	6	2	6	8
9	Assam	..	20(b)	30	25	..	..	9	1	9	4
								14	11	11	6

Notes—(a) There was no Bihar and Orissa Province before 1912.

(b) Between 1905-1912 Assam was joined to Eastern Bengal, both being called Eastern Bengal and

(c) Ex-officio members here mean members of the Executive Council and in the case of Madras

and Bombay the Advocate-General.

(d) In the totals the head of the Province is excluded.

(e) i.e. nominated and ex-officio.

[Assam.]

Proportion of Official and Non-official Members:—
Under the Act of 1861 at least one half of the additional members of the legislative Councils of the Governor-General and of Madras and Bombay, and at least one third of the members of the other legislative Councils had to be non-officials. An official majority was not required by Statute, but in practice was always maintained before the Act of 1909 except in Bombay where the official members had been for some years in a minority.

Under the Regulations of 1909 and 1912 there *must be* an official majority in the Governor-General's Legislative Council and a non-official majority in all other legislative Councils. The proportion as fixed by those regulations is given in columns (11 plus 13) and 10 of the above statement.

The significance of the distinction between the official and non-official members arose out of the constitutional view that all *official* members were bound to vote with the Government on all Government measures. The provincial Governments were strictly subordinate to the Government of India and the latter to Parliament through the Secretary of State. Whatever legislative measure a Government introduced in the Legislative Council was in accordance with the instructions of the Secretary of State or with the decision of the Executive Council. The members of the Executive Council, therefore, were bound to support the Bill, and to oppose any amendments which were not in conformity with the plans of Government.

Lord Elgin's view on the subject.—The constitutional issue in this respect was well explained by Lord Elgin in a speech which he made in the Legislative Council on December 27th 1894 when he defended the position taken by himself and

other Members of the Executive Council in supporting the Cotton Duties Bill in pursuance of a mandate from the Secretary of State, and against their own previously expressed views :—

" So far as the individual action of my colleagues and myself is concerned, Sir Henry Brackenbury, in the discussions on the Tariff Bill, and again to day, has said that we are bound to obey the orders given by the proper and constitutional authority. But, for my part, I do not think that exhausts the question. It is claimed that members must be free to speak and vote in this Council for the measure they honestly think best. I can accept that position only with the qualification that they duly recognise the responsibility under which they exercise their rights in this Council. Only in an entirely irresponsible body can members act entirely as their inclination leads them. In every legislative body a man must sit, unless he has an hereditary right, by what in modern parlance is called a mandate, and that mandate must be given by some authority. I need not remind you that in a Parliament a man is not free to act exactly as he pleases, he is distinctly subject to the mandate he has received from his constituents, and practice has shown that even this is not sufficient, but to make Parliamentary Government effective it has been found necessary to introduce party management, and the bonds of party, in the present day, certainly show no sign of being relaxed. Here we have no election and, I am glad to say, no party, but every man who sits here sits by the authority and sanction of Parliament, and to say that he can refuse to obey the decisions of Parliament would be absurd. But that is not all. Parliament has provided for the Government of the Indian Empire. The British Raj can be provided for in no other

way. Parliament has allotted his proper place to the Viceroy, as the head of the Executive in India, and it has given him a Council for the purpose of making laws and regulations which cannot have powers in which he does not share. But the Viceroy admittedly is not invested with supreme authority but, as I understand, it is by distinct enactment entrusted to the Secretary of State and his Council, and to speak of this Council as supreme, if that means that it has independent and unfettered authority is to say what is not the fact."*

From this view of the position of the Governor-General and Ordinary members of the Council with regard to legislation it logically follows that additional Members *nominated* by Government from amongst its subordinate Officials should also vote in accordance with the declared intentions or policy of the Government.

We shall discuss at a later stage the *pros* and *cons* of this convention, but the fact of its existence should be carefully noted.

3. *Methods of appointment or election.*—Under the Act of 1861 all the "additional" members were *nominated*, the only restriction being the requirement to maintain a due proportion of non-official members.

The Act of 1892 recognised the principle of indirect election. The regulations under the Act enabled certain recognized bodies and associations to recommend candidates, who though there was no obligation to accept them, were rarely refused in practice.

Under the Act of 1909 the additional members must include not only nominated members but also members *elected* in accordance with regulations made under the Act.]

* Iyengar 146-147.

With regard to the principle of representation, Lord Minto's Government came to the conclusion that (1) election by the wishes of the people is the ultimate end to be secured, whatever may be the actual machinery adopted for giving effect to it; that (2) in the circumstances of India representation by classes and interests is the only practicable method of embodying the principle in the constitution of the legislative Councils. Sir Charles Aitchison, a member of the Executive Council in 1892, was quoted to the effect "the division of the people into creeds, castes and sects with varying and conflicting interests rendered representation in the European sense an obvious impossibility." It was therefore decided that for certain *limited* interests (Corporations of Presidency towns, Universities, Chambers of Commerce, Planting communities and the like) limited electorates must exist as they then existed. Difficulties began when one went beyond these limited electorates and had to deal with large and widespread interests or communities, such as the landholding or professional classes; or with important minorities such as Mahomedans in most province in India, and Sikhs in the Punjab. No uniform system was possible throughout India. Class electorates were to be granted where that was practicable and likely to lead to good results, and in their failure or defect, it might be necessary to have recourse to nomination. Accordingly separate representation was given to the Mahomedans, and to the large land-owning interests. The remaining constituencies for the provincial Councils—which constituted the only means of representation of the people at large—were constituted out of Municipalities and District Boards voting in groups. The Scheme of representation is shown in the following Table.

Constitution of the Legislative Councils under the Regulations of 1912.

Name of the Council.	No. of Members.		Nominated.	Elected.	Total. 68 or including the G. G.
	Ex-officio.	Additional.			
India	6 Ordinary 1 C. in C. 1 Lt. Gov., or and 3 being non-Chief Commis-officials, to be selected of the elected respectively Province in from the Landlords which the of the Punjab, the Council sits, Maharnedans of the Punjab and the Indian Commercial Community.	Not more than 28 to be officials Conn. and 3 being non-Chief Commis-officials, to be selected of the elected respectively Province in from the Landlords which the of the Punjab, the Council sits, Maharnedans of the Punjab and the Indian Commercial Community.	Pro. Leg. holders of Conn. Madras, Bombay, Bengal, U.P., B. and O. and the C. P.	The Mahomedans of Madras, Bombay, Bengal, U.P. and O. B. and O. and the C. P.	Chamber of Com- merce of Calcutta and Bengal at alterna-tive years.
	8	33.	13	6.	5.
					1. 2. 69.

Name of the Council.	Nominated		Elected.		Additional.		Total.		
	Ex-officio.	Official.	Non-Official.	Mun. & Distt. Boards.	Universities.	Landholders	Mahomedans Community.	Ch. of Com. in Indian Comm. unitry.	
Madras	4	16	5	1	9	1	5	1	48
Bombay	4	14	7	1	8	1	3	..	48
Bengal	3	16	4	1	10	1	4	2	Misce. 53
B. and O. ...	3	15	4	..	10	..	5	1	1 44
U. P.	..	20	6	..	13	1	3	..	49
Punjab	..	10	6	..	6	1	..	..	26
Burma	..	6	8	..	..	..	..	..	17
Assam	..	9	4	..	4	..	2	3	25
C. P. ...	..	10	7	..	5	..	2	..	25

Changes in the Functions of the Councils.—Not less important than these changes in the composition of the Councils were the changes in their functions. As has been already pointed out, by the Act of 1861 the Councils were confined strictly to legislation. The Act of 1892 gave members power to discuss the budget but not to move resolutions about it or to divide the Council. It became the practice accordingly to allot annually one or two days to the discussion of a budget already settled by the Executive Government. Lord Morley's Act empowered the Councils (1) (a) to discuss the budget at length before it was finally settled; (b) to propose resolutions upon it; and (c) to divide upon those resolutions. Not only on the budget however, but (2) on all matters of general public importance resolutions might henceforth be proposed and divisions taken. The resolutions were to be expressed and to operate as *recommendations* to the Executive Government. On certain questions among which may be mentioned matters affecting Native States, no resolutions could be moved. Any resolution might be disallowed by the Head of the Government without his giving any reason other than that in his opinion the resolution could not be moved consistently with the public interest. (3) At the same time the right to ask questions of the Government was enlarged by allowing the Member who asked the original question to put a supplementary one.

Criticism.—The Morley-Minto Reforms though a great improvement upon the Act of 1892, soon failed to satisfy the aspirations of the people. The reasons are not far to seek. They were defective in their constitution and circumscribed in their functions. They were not properly representative of the whole population; the official and nominated mem-

bers who generally voted with Government—lent a colour of unreality to the proceedings of the Councils, and strained the relations between the officials and non-officials. Nor had they any real powers in legislation or finance. When, therefore, the people were disillusioned about their real nature, there was an outburst of political agitation that was reinforced by the Great War. As the authors of the M. C. Report said the Moreley-Minto Reforms were the final outcome of the old conception which made the Government of India a benevolent despotism which might as it saw fit, for purposes of enlightenment, consult the wishes of its subjects. They were the last word in the application of the principle of association. In no sense did they make the Administration of India *responsible* to the people of India.

(76) V—APPOINTMENT OF INDIANS TO EXECUTIVE COUNCILS.

Even prior to the introduction of the Reforms Lord Morley had appointed two Indians to his own Council. Similarly Indians were appointed to the Executive Councils of the Governor-General and of the Governors of Madras, Bombay and Bengal. In this way Indians were allowed to enter the very citadel of Bureaucracy. But even there they were hopelessly outnumbered by their European colleagues and could not do much more than represent the Indian point of view.

We have thus passed under review the three forms of Association and shown the inadequacy of each, thus clearly bringing out why the next step had to be that of Responsible Government.

PART IV.

RESPONSIBLE GOVERNMENT.

CHAPTER XV.

PROVINCIAL DEVOLUTION.

(77)

I—GESTATION OF THE REFORMS.*

Having considered in the last two Chapters how neither the principle of Decentralization nor of Association succeeded in modifying the character of Indian Bureaucracy to the extent demanded by public opinion, it is now time to turn to the Reforms associated with the name of Mr. Mantagu and Lord Chelmsford. The Reforms merely carry forward the work of the last sixty years of direct British administration in India ; for, as was profoundly remarked by the late Mr. Gokhale, one of the peculiar conditions of the peculiar position of the British Government in this country is that it should be a continuously progressive Government. † Nor have the people of India stood still. “The political philosophy and axioms of the West have become an essential part of Indian life, and when its Education came to India it brought with it the politics of Nationality, Liberalism, Freedom.”‡ Indian aspirations were quickened by the outbreak of the Great War. It became a foregone conclusion that some great step in political advance of the country was inevitable in the near future though nobody could tell its exact nature. Political theorists, therefore, began to adumbrate schemes of Reforms of their own. One of the first was that of Mr.

* Horne Chapter III.

† Speeches 443.

‡ Ramsay MacDonald 2.

Gokhale, elaborated at the instance of Lord Willingdon and published posthumously in 1917. Next came the scheme of Mr. Curtis of the *Round Table*. This is an Organization founded in 1910, with branches in all parts of the British Empire, and having for its object the dispassionate study of Imperial problems. The account given by Mr. Curtis of its origin and development, in his book on "Dyarchy"† is specially interesting in as much as the essential feature of that scheme was incorporated in the Act of 1919. Mr. Curtis felt that "Responsible Government" was the *sine qua non* of the success of political Reform in India, and a sketch was prepared of the kind of new Government that was proposed to be set up in a province to give effect to Responsible Government. The proposal was "that for departments (of the provincial Government) in which it can be done safely some form of *responsible* as distinct from merely *representative* government should be instituted forthwith, while the remaining departments would continue to be administered under the present (*i.e.*, pre-Reforms) system, the functions of constitutional ruler in the one case and of actual administrator in the other being united in the person of the Governor..... The suggestion is that for such of the departments of Government as were made over to it, the (provincial) Legislature should be really supreme, and should be administered by an executive chosen from its own members and responsible to it." As will be presently seen, this is Dyarchy.

Reference should also be made to the Scheme prepared by Nineteen Members of the Viceroy's Legislative Council, which was subsequently adopted by the Congress and the Muslim League in December 1916. Its main features were (a) direct elections to the provincial Councils; (b) Resolutions of the provincial Councils to be absolutely binding upon the

Governor; (c) a 4/5 majority of elected members in the Central Legislature; (d) complete provincial autonomy; (e) Indian members of the Executive Councils—provincial and Central—to be half and half and to be elected by the elected members of the Legislature concerned.

(78) II—THE ANNOUNCEMENT OF 20TH AUGUST 1917.

The discussion of these and other schemes made the political atmosphere tense with expectations when Mr. Montagu made his Announcement in the House of Commons.

"The policy of His Majesty's Government, with which the Government of India are in complete accord, is that of the increasing association of Indians in every branch of the administration and the gradual development of self-governing institutions with a view to the progressive realization of responsible government in India as an integral part of the British Empire.....I would add that progress in this policy can only be achieved by successive stages. The British Government and the Government of India, on whom the responsibility lies for the welfare and advancement of the Indian peoples, must be judges of the time and measure of each advance, and they must be guided by the co-operation received from those upon whom new opportunities of service will thus be conferred and by the extent to which it is found that confidence can be reposed in their sense of responsibility."

The Act of 1919.—Mr. Montagu's Announcement was followed by his visit to India. The Viceroy and the Secretary of State toured all over the country and their proposals were published in July 1918 in the Report that has become popular under the name of "Montford" Report. The Report was preceded and followed by an enormous amount of prelimi-

nary work in the Provincial and Central Secretariats for being utilized by various Committees. The Report indicated three Committees for that purpose : the Franchise Committee and the Functions Committee presided over by Lord Southborough and finally, the Committee on the Home Administration of India under the presidency of Lord Crewe. The Government of India in their turn addressed a series of Despatches to the Secretary of State in Council on the subject of the Reforms. It was generally agreed that the net result of the modifications suggested by the Government of India would have been a "whittling" down of the original proposals of the Montford Report.

The Government of India Bill, based on all this material was introduced in the House of Commons on 2nd June 1919, and after its second reading was referred to a Joint Select Committee of both the Houses. The Report of this Joint Committee is a document of very great importance. The Bill, amended in accordance with the Committee's recommendations and passed by both the Houses received the Royal assent on 23rd December 1919.

Meaning of the Announcement.—Coming back to the Announcement of August we may say that, in the words of Lord Chelmsford, it had three features. (1) The progressive realization of Responsible Government was given as the key note and objective of British policy in India ; (2) Substantial steps were to be taken in that direction at once ; (3) that policy was to be carried out by stages ; or shortly "the gradual transfer of responsibility to Indians." The Announcement definitely abandoned the conception of the British Government as a benevolent despotism and substituted in its place the conception of British Government as a guiding authority whose role it would be to assist the steps of India along the

road that in the fulness of time would lead to complete Self-Government within the Empire.

(79)

III—DEVOLUTION OF AUTHORITY.

The next question is how and where to introduce Responsible Government in India? Is it to be introduced in the Central or Provincial Government? Now the Government of India cannot be made "responsible" to the Indian people unless its responsibility to British Parliament is relaxed. Parliament had hitherto performed the duty of controlling and criticising the Government of India in the interests of the Indian people. Parliament must delegate, little by little, from itself to the people of India the power to criticise and control the Government. Then and to that extent alone can the Government of India be responsible to the Indian people. The more of such power is given to the people of India the less will be left in the hands of the British Parliament.

"But this process of relaxation cannot go on at the same pace on all levels. The Secretary of State's relaxation of control will be retarded, if for no other reason, by the paramount need of securing Imperial interests; that of the Government of India by their obligation of maintaining the defence of India, and of the Provincial Governments by the securing of law and order. As we go upwards, the importance of the retarding factor increases, and thus it follows that popular growth must be more rapid and extensive in the lower than in the upper levels."*

On these general considerations the M. C. Report laid down *four formulae*: (1) There should be as far as possible, complete

* M. C. Report 188.

popular control in local bodies, and the largest possible independence for them of outside control.

(2) The Provinces are the domain in which the earlier steps towards the progressive realization of responsible government should be taken. Some measure of responsibility should be given at once, and our aim is to give complete responsibility as soon as conditions permit. This involves at once giving the provinces the largest measure of independence, legislative, administrative and financial, of the Government of India which is compatible with the due discharge by the latter of its own responsibilities.

(3) The Government of India must remain wholly responsible to Parliament, and saving such responsibility, its authority in essential matters must remain indisputable, pending experience of the effect of changes now to be introduced in the province. In the meantime the Indian Legislative Council should be enlarged and made more representative and its opportunities of influencing Government increased.

(4) In proportion as the foregoing changes take effect, the control of parliament and the Secretary of State over the Government of India and the Provincial Government must be relaxed.*

(80) IV—REDISTRIBUTION OF PROVINCES.

Before proceeding to consider the various measures of devolution attention must be drawn to three things by which the provinces have been standardized.

- (1) Redistribution of provinces.
- (2) All constituted into "Governor's Provinces."
- (3) Division between Central and Provincial Functions.

* M. C. Report S. 188—91.

(1) *Redistribution of Provinces.*—Reference has been made to the haphazard manner in which the provinces assumed their present configuration under historical forces. Changes in the boundaries of provinces have been made in the past for the sake of administrative convenience and the Governor-General in Council can bring about such changes by executive orders. But in all responsible Governments division of the country into units of administration and election is regarded as a special function of the Legislature. A redistribution of the provinces in greater conformity with the race or language of the people is also desirable for fostering interest in political matters. Mr. Curtis rightly argued that the institution of responsible government in provincial areas of appropriate size and based on racial and linguistic units will bring India nearer to the final goal by many generations.

Section 52-A gives to the Governor-General in Council this power of redistribution. The Joint Parliamentary Committee declared that a change in the boundaries of a province should not be made without due consideration of the views of the Legislative Council of the Province. Henceforward, therefore, representatives of the people will have a voice in so altering the boundaries of their province as would foster their communal or linguistic affinities.

Power has also been given to the Governor-General in Council to exclude from the operation of the Reforms what he declares to be "backward" tracts.

(81)

V—GOVERNOR'S PROVINCES.

Before the Reforms there were three kinds of provinces according as they were under Governors, Lieutenant Governors or Chief Commissioners. Though all had come to pos-

sess Legislative Councils of their own, the provincial Heads were assisted by Executive Councils only in the three Presidencies and Bihar and Orissa. But under the Reforms a uniform executive has been set up in each province, consisting of the Governor and a Cabinet containing Councillors and Ministers. The Cabinet form of Government has many advantages :

- (a) It relieves the over-worked head of the province of much pressure of work, which is more efficiently done by division of labour among the Councillors.
- (b) It makes possible collective deliberation.
- (c) It allows Indians to be introduced in the highest seats of authority.

But though each province is to have the Governor and a Cabinet, the status of all the Governors is not the same. There are three features which distinguish the Governors of the Presidencies of Madras, Bombay and Bengal from the rest.

(a) *Appointment*—The old Governors are appointed by His Majesty and previous consultation with the Governor-General is not essential ; and they are generally drawn from the ranks of British Peers or politicians. In appointing the new Governors, the Governor-General has to be consulted, for most of them are to be drawn from the senior ranks of the Indian Civil Service. A Governor drawn from the Civil Service has first hand knowledge of Indian conditions and practical experience of administration ; but there is little or no chance, in his case, of a wider outlook and more sympathetic insight being brought to bear upon problems of administration. Indian opinion, therefore, has never received with approval the policy of appointing Governors from the Civil Service

(b) The New Governors do not enjoy the privilege of direct access to the Secretary of State (a remnant of the former independence of the two presidencies); (c) finally, their pay is smaller than that of their older *confreres*.

(82) VI—CLASSIFICATION INTO CENTRAL AND PROVINCIAL SUBJECTS.

Even before the advent of the principle of Responsible Government provincial autonomy had been demanded by statesmen like Gokhale and it was the cardinal feature of the famous Durbar Despatch of Lord Hardinge. But it is important to note that provincial autonomy was advocated more as a palliative to the worst defects of bureaucratic centralization than as a condition of Responsible Government; But the Reforms Act emphasized the latter aspect. "Whereas concurrently with the gradual development of self governing institutions in the provinces of India it is expedient to give to those provinces in provincial matters the largest measure of independence of the Government of India which is compatible with the due discharge by the latter of its own responsibilities." The two questions of Responsible Government in the provinces and provincial autonomy were joined together by the Act and no progress was possible in the former unless there was a substantial attainment of the latter.

The first step was the classification of the functions of Government into "Central" and "Provincial" according to the recommendations of the Functions Committee. The lists are given in the appendix.

The principle of division was that a subject of all—India importance or extent e.g. Defence, Foreign, Relations Tariff, Coinage, Post, etc., belonged to the Central division.

On the other hand, matters which were of *predominantly* local interest e.g. Local Self-Government, Sanitation, Education etc. were provincialized.

Hitherto the Provinces were entirely dependent upon the Government of India and its Agents for the purposes of administration. Such functions, therefore, as have not been made over to the Provinces belong to the Central Government. Further, the Central Legislature has not been precluded from dealing with provincial subjects. The proviso "*subject to Indian Legislation*" in the list of provincial subjects means, that legislation on that subject, in whole or in part, or any powers reserved thereunder to the Governor General in Council are recognised as an all-India subject. Provinces can legislate upon them only with the previous sanction of the Governor-General in Council.

Where any doubt arises as to whether a particular matter does or does not relate to a provincial subject, the Governor-General-in-Council is to decide it and his decision will be final.

Finally the Government of India may use the provinces for the discharge of certain "agency" functions e.g., collection of all-India revenues etc., just as it makes use of the Secretary of State in Council for the discharge of "agency" functions in England.

(83) VII—FINANCIAL DEVOLUTION.

Having divided the Functions into "Central" and "Provincial" our next step is to consider how larger powers have been given to the provinces in matters of Finance, Legislation, and Administration.

We may consider the subject of Financial Devolution under the following heads :—

- (i) Financial relations between the Government of India and the Provinces.
- (ii) Relaxation of control over budget.
- (iii) Over Expenditure.
- (iv) Over Revenue, including taxation.
- (v) Over Borrowing.
- (vi) Over Cash balances.

(i) *Financial Relations.*—We traced in an earlier section the growth of the system of Provincial Settlements. We there found how certain heads of revenue were " Indian," others were " Provincial," and the remaining were " Divided" i.e., the proceeds were shared by both the Central and Provincial Governments. Land Revenue, Stamps, Excise, Income-tax, and Irrigation belonged to the last category. This system gave to the Government of India many opportunities of exercising control over provincial finance. The first step towards minimising this control was a complete separation of the Indian and Provincial sources of revenue which meant the abolition of the " divided heads." A special Committee under Lord Meston was appointed to go into this whole question. It recommended the provincialization of Land revenue, Excise, Irrigation, and Stamps and it recommended that the whole of Income-tax should go to the Central Government. Under such a redistribution of revenue heads the provinces gained what the Government of India lost. This might not have mattered much if the revenues that were still left to the Government of India i.e., Customs, Railways, Salt, Opium, had been capable of expansion. But they were not so. The revenue from Customs depended upon

the fiscal policy. Railways were an uncertain source of income and so was Opium ; an increase of Salt-duty was unthinkable. A method therefore, had to be devised by which the deficit in Central finance could be made good. In the end the system of provincial contributions was adopted as recommended by the Committee of Lord Meston.

The guiding principles which the Committee arrived at were briefly these. (1) Though provincial contributions were inevitable for some years to come, any permanent financial arrangement which involved them was unsatisfactory, and the Central Government, therefore, should so direct its policy as to reduce those contributions with reasonable rapidity, and with a view to their ultimate cessation. (2) Though the initial contributions of each province must, in any case, be arbitrary in view of the diversity of revenue and expenditure of each province and its past financial history, any such contribution ought to be regarded as temporary and provisional and steps ought to be taken to fix a *standard* and equitable scale of contributions towards which the provinces should be required to work by stages. (3) The initial contributions to be paid by each province in the year 1921-1922 were to be fixed arbitrarily.

Taking first the *initial contributions*. The Meston Committee calculated that the Government of India would suffer to the extent of 983 lacs of Rupees in 1921-1922 and the provinces would gain about 1850 lacs of Rupees under the new arrangement. The Committee assessed the initial contribution on the "increase in spending power" of each province, taking the case of each on its own merits. The initial contributions were fixed as shown in the second column of the following Table.

Province.	Recommended contribution in 1921. 1922; (in lacs)	Percentage of initial contribution to the total contribution.	Percentage of standard contribution to the whole contribution.	Standard percentage as finally accepted by the Government of India.
Madras ..	348	35 $\frac{1}{2}$	17	17/90
Bombay ..	56	5 $\frac{1}{2}$	13	13/90
Bengal ..	63	6 $\frac{1}{2}$	19	19/90
United Pro. .	240	24 $\frac{1}{2}$	18	18/90
Punjab ..	175	18	9	9/90
Burma ..	64	6 $\frac{1}{2}$	6 $\frac{1}{2}$	6 $\frac{1}{2}$ /90
Bihar & Orissa ..	—	—	10	—
Central Pro... .	22	2	5	5/90
Assam ..	15	1 $\frac{1}{2}$	2 $\frac{1}{2}$	2 $\frac{1}{2}$ /90
Total	983	100	100	90

To proceed next to the *Standard* contribution. The ideal basis for determining the standard contribution was the capacity of each province to contribute which, in its turn, depends upon the economic position of the province. After considering all available evidence, the Meston Committee recommended the percentage of the deficit shown in the 4th column as the standards for the various provinces. The standard was to be reached within *seven* years by regular gradations so that each province might have sufficient time to adjust its finances to the growing burden.

Criticism of this arrangement.—Lord Meston's Committee had to deal with a most difficult question. They had to satisfy the Government of India without displeasing the pro-

vinces. The latter did not submit to the proposed percentages of contributions without violent protests. Some relief was granted to them by the Joint Parliamentary Committee. (a) Thus instead of making the whole of Income-Tax Central, it assigned to the Provinces three pies per rupee of *additional* income assessed after the Income-Tax Act of 1921. (b) Meston Committee contemplated that some provinces e.g., Bombay, Bengal, Bihar and Orissa and Central Provinces might pay more than their initial contribution in course of time. But the Joint Committee laid down that in no case should the initial contribution payable by a province be increased. Nor have the Government of India accepted the recommendation to stop the contributions within *seven* years.

In case of an emergency the Governor-General in Council has the right of demanding a contribution in excess of that fixed under the preceding rules. The contributions, further are a first charge upon the provincial revenue and are not subject to the vote of the local Council.

The provinces were not satisfied with these arrangements. They challenged the very basis of "increased spending power" of the provinces upon which the contributions were fixed. They raised the question of provincial contributions again and again in the Legislative Assembly. Agricultural provinces like Madras and the United Provinces complained that they were paying far more than what the others were paying; on the other hand industrial provinces like Bombay and Bengal were bitterly lamenting the loss of revenue under Income-Tax. Bengal indeed, as a special case, got relief from the contribution for three years.

But, as Sir Basil Scott pointed out in the Assembly, the exact allocation of provincial contributions was a most com-

plex question. "After all, the problems of federal Finance, which have been raised by the Reforms, are extremely intricate and extremely difficult. They were not finally settled by the first instalment of the Reforms and it is my belief that a good deal more thinking about them is needed and advances in the way of improving the relations between the provinces themselves and the Central Government offer one of the most hopeful fields for advances within the Government of India Act."

As a step towards the solution of this intricate problem, a "Committee on Indian Taxation" has been appointed. It is to examine, among other things, the manner in which taxation has been distributed between Central, Provincial and Local Governments. Years ago the late Mr. Gokhale had recommended the appointment of a Committee for an identical purpose but no heed was then paid to that advice ! *

(ii) *Relaxation of Control over Budget.*—Before the Reforms the provincial budgets were included in the budget of the Government of India. But after the Reforms almost complete freedom has been given to the provinces in the preparation of their budgets. Only the Government of India has to be supplied with certain information about (a) withdrawals from the provincial balances; (b) any loans that the provincial Government may require from the Central Government; (c) the opening and closing balances of the Famine Insurance Fund; and (d) the paying off of the Provincial Loan Account.

(iii) *Over Expenditure.*—The real control over provincial expenditure will henceforward be exercised by the local Councils. So far as the Secretary of State in Council and the Government of India retain powers of control over expendi-

* Gokhale's Speeches 580.

ture they are best taken up in connection with that subject. We may only note that so far as the Provinces continue to act as the Agents of the Central Authority, control over them has not been relaxed.

Control by the Provincial Finance Department.—The Finance Department has extensive powers of advice and control in all matters bearing upon provincial finance. It is in the hands of a Member of the Executive Council. Its functions have been thus enumerated by Devolution Rule 37. It is (a) to be in charge of the account relating to loans granted to the local Governments, and advice on the financial aspects of all transactions relating to such loans; (b) to be responsible for the safety and safe employment of the Famine Insurance Fund; (c) to examine and report upon all proposals for the increase or reduction of taxation, and (d) of borrowing; (e) to be responsible for seeing that proper financial rules are framed for the guidance of other Departments and that suitable accounts are maintained by them; (f) to prepare an estimate of the total receipts and disbursements of the Province; (g) to assist in the preparation of the Budget; (h) on the receipt of a report from the Audit Officer to the effect that expenditure is being incurred for which there is no or insufficient sanction, to take steps to obtain sanction or to immediately stop the expenditure; (i) to lay the Audit and Appropriation-reports before the Committee on Public Accounts; (j) to advise Departments responsible for collection of revenue regarding the methods of collection.

Control by the Audit Department.—To secure an independent audit of Provincial expenditure, the Department of the Controller and Auditor-General has been made a *Central* subject. The Department brings to the notice of the Finance Department irregularities in expenditure.

(iv) *Over Revenue, including taxation.*—An enlargement of the taxing powers of the province is a necessary complement of the relaxation of control over expenditure. Of course as the Central Government has a vital interest in the financial position of the provinces it cannot relax its control with any degree of finality. But there are many taxes of a strictly provincial or local incidence the imposition of which cannot affect the resources in which the Government of India have interest. A Provincial Council may impose a tax mentioned in Schedule I, for the purpose of the Local Government, without the previous sanction of the Governor-General in Council i.e., (1) a tax on land put to uses other than agricultural ; (2) a tax on succession or acquisition by survivorship in joint family ; (3) tax on any form of betting or gambling permitted by law ; (4) A tax on advertisements ; (5) on amusements ; (6) on any specified luxury ; (7) a registration fee ; (8) a stamp duty other than duties the amount of which is fixed by Indian Legislation. Previous sanction is also not required to allow a Local authority e.g., a Local Board or Municipality to impose a tax mentioned in Schedule II. i.e., (1) a toll ; a tax (2) on land or land values ; (3) on buildings ; (4) on vehicles or boats ; (5) on animals ; (6) on menials or domestic servants ; (7) an octroi ; (8) a terminal tax (9) a tax on trades, professions and callings - (10) a tax on private markets ; (11) a tax imposed in return for services such as a water rate, a lighting rate etc.

The Governor-General in Council may at any time, by order, make any addition to the taxes enumerated in Schedules I and II.

(v) *Over Provincial Borrowing.*—Freedom in this is a necessary part of the above programme. Before the Reforms the Central Government did all the borrowing for the Provincial

Governments, who, in their turn lent to the Municipalities and Local Boards and the agriculturists. Provincial borrowing was opposed on the ground that the Indian money market was very limited and if provinces competed with each other the rate of interest would go very high. But during recent years the number of the 'investing' public is increasing and there are local sources of borrowing which are open only to local authority.

Devolution Rules accordingly provide that a Local Government may raise loans on the security of revenues allotted to it—for meeting capital expenditure in constructions 'of lasting public utility' if the expenditure is so large that it cannot reasonably be met from current revenues, and if the Governor-General in Council is satisfied that the projected construction is likely to yield a prescribed return of interest. The Provincial Government may also borrow for expenditure on Irrigation work, for famine Relief, for the financing of the Provincial Loan Account, &c. For each provincial Loan the sanction of the Governor-General in Council—specifying the amount of loan, the rate of interest, and the mode of repayment—must be obtained. The Government of Bombay was the first to take advantage of these borrowing powers, the Bombay Development Scheme and the Sukkar Barrage Scheme being undertaken on the strength of borrowed capital.

Provincial Loan Account.—Each Province, before the Reforms, used to borrow money from the Central Government, for the purpose of making advances to Agriculturists. These Provincial Loan Accounts must now be closed. Some of the Provinces e. g. Bengal, Punjab, Central Provinces, Assam closed the Account immediately. The remaining Provinces

have to wind up the Account within 12 years of the inauguration of the Reforms.

Advances to Local Governments by the Government of India.—the provinces, in addition to borrowing in the market, may receive advances from the Central Government for expenditure on Irrigation works etc. The terms as to interest and repayment of such advances are to be determined by the Government of India.

(vi) *Over Cash Balances.*—Before the Reforms the revenues of the whole of India were treated as one and each province was required to keep a minimum balance. Such balances were useful under the old system, because the Central Government was the banker of all public funds and it took precautions against withdrawals of funds which might distract its often fine-drawn calculations of ways and means. Greater liberty has now been given to the provinces to draw upon their balances provided due notice is given of the time and amount of withdrawal.

Famine Assignments.—The frequency and magnitude of famines in India have often thrown Indian Finance into disorder. A wide-spread famine means shrinkage of revenue at the very time when considerable outlays have to be made on famine relief or construction of protective works. The problem resolves itself into so distributing the loss of revenue and additional expenditure as would not throw out of gear either Provincial or Central finance. About 1917 Famine Relief Expenditure was made a divided head, the outlay being borne by the Central and Provincial Governments in the proportion of 3 to 1. Under the Reforms the expenditure has been provincialized and a Famine Insurance Fund

has been inaugurated in each ; the sum fixed for each province is as follows :—

	In thousands of Rupees.
Madras	661
Bombay	6360
Bengal	200
Western Provinces	3960
Punjab	381
Burma	67
Bihar and Orissa	1162
Central Provinces	4726
Assam	10

This annual grant is not to be expended except upon the relief of famine, or upon the construction of protective irrigation works or other works for the prevention of famine. Any portion of the grant which is not so spent is to be transferred to the Famine Insurance Fund. If this Fund exceeds six times the annual assignment, the latter might be temporarily suspended. This fund could be further utilized for the grant of loans to the cultivators. It is to form part of the general balances of the Central Government who is to pay interest on it.

Summary.—So much about the new financial arrangement between the Government of India and the Provincial Governments. A complete bifurcation between Central and provincial heads of revenue, a fixed and progressively decreasing contribution to the Central Treasury as the only surviving financial nexus between the two, absolute freedom in the preparation of the budget, simpler control over the provincial expenditure, and of Accounts and Audit, increased

powers of taxation and borrowing, revised conditions for advances to the provinces, and finally a new system of Famine assignments, are the chief features of the new arrangement.

(84)

VIII—LEGISLATIVE DEVOLUTION.

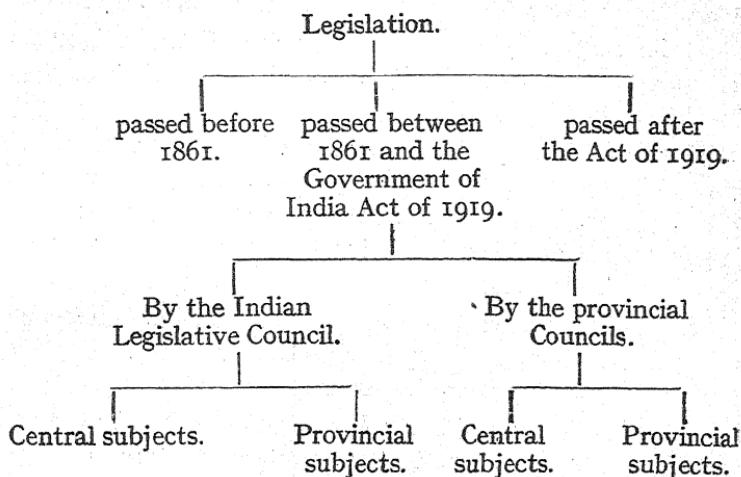
In an earlier section we considered how control was exercised over provincial legislation. No legislative proposal could be considered in a provincial Council without the "previous sanction" of the Governor-General in Council. This prevented the Councils from dealing with their peculiar social and local problems which vary in such a striking manner from province to province in India.

As a preliminary to the removal of the old restrictions, there was made a clear demarcation of powers between the Central and Provincial Legislatures closely following the division of subjects between the two authorities.

Section 80-A defines the powers of local legislative Councils. A local Legislature of a province may make laws for the "peace and good government" of the province. No previous sanction is required to legislate upon provincial subjects. It is required to make or take into consideration any laws mentioned in 80-A (3).

The problem of legislative devolution became difficult and complex because they had not a clean slate on which to write. A mass of legislation had been passed in the past by the Central and Provincial Councils on a variety of subjects ranging over the whole gamut from strictly parochial to Imperial matters.

We may thus classify that mass of legislation.



Now considering legislation from this chronological point of view, let us see how "previous sanction" is to apply. It is required—

(a) For repealing or altering laws passed *before* 1861 except those which the Governor-General in Council may by notification in the *Gazette of India* declare to require no previous sanction.

(b) For repealing or altering laws passed between 1861-1919 which have been mentioned in the published Schedule. If the provinces had been entirely free to make laws on subjects which though provincial had also an interprovincial or all-India aspect, the general framework of the laws of the country as laid down in the Acts and Codes regulating commercial and business relations might have been seriously changed and grave confusion might have ensued. It was to

avoid this that important Acts of an interprovincial nature were included in a Schedule published in the *Gazette of India*.

(c) Since 1919, (1) for legislating upon any *Central* subject, or (2) upon those provincial subjects which are, in whole or part, "subject to Indian legislation."

An authentic copy of every Act to which the Governor has given his assent has to be sent to the Governor-General and the Act has no validity until the Governor-General has assented to it and that assent has been signified to and published by the Governor.

Where the Governor-General withholds his assent from any such Act, he has to signify to the Governor in writing his reasons for so withholding his assent.

An authentic copy of every Act assented to by the Governor-General is to be sent to the Secretary of State and it is lawful for His Majesty in Council to signify his disallowance of the Act.

(85)

IX—ADMINISTRATIVE DEVOLUTION.

Much need not be said about this process which is the necessary result of the greater powers in finance and legislation conferred upon the province. Numerous laws have been passed—mostly of a technical nature—which have the effect of ridding the provincial governments of control in administration.

CHAPTER XVI

REFORMED PROVINCIAL COUNCILS.

(86)

INTRODUCTORY.

The underlying principle of the Morley-Minto Reforms was, as explained in the last Chapter, that of greater association of the people with the discussion and decision of public questions e.g., (in the Legislative Councils). But the Councils though they exercised influence over the administration did not in the least *control* it, for the administration continued to remain essentially responsible to Parliament. Lord Morley expressly repudiated that the Councils were a step towards Responsible Government. But the principle of "Association" has its limits which were nearly reached under the Morley-Minto Reforms. Association is merely a means to an end and as such is incapable of becoming the goal of political ambition. That goal is Responsible Government and Association was a period of probation for it.

(87)

II—CONSTITUTION OF THE COUNCILS.

Now the grant of Responsible Government in the Provinces being the cardinal feature of the Montford Scheme, the legislative Councils had to be reformed—both with regard to their *Constitution* and *Functions*—in conformity with that principle. Bearing upon the change in their *constitution* the M. C. Report laid down the following comprehensive

formula : " We propose that there shall be an *enlarged* legislative Council, differing in size and composition from Province to Province, with a *substantial* *elective* majority, elected by *direct* election, on a *broad* franchise, with such *Communal* and *Special* representation as may be necessary." What we have now to do is to show how the vital questions here so briefly mentioned have been dealt with in the Act or by the Rules framed under it.

(1) *Numbers.* Even the *maximum* strength under the old Rules (50 in the major Provinces) was very small, considering the extent and population of the provinces. In many provinces the actual numbers fell far short of the statutory maximum. The maximum had to be low, as a substantial proportion of the members consisted of officials, and the number of officials that could be withdrawn, for the purposes of the Councils, from the administration without serious inconvenience to it became the upward limit to which or about which non-officials could be "added" to the Councils.

But such a requirement of official strength or majority is inconsistent with the Reforms. A few officials—in addition to the Executive Councillors who are *ex-officio* members, might be appointed but their *raison-de-tre* is not the furnishing Government with official votes but rather the stabilizing influence which they will bring to bear upon the debates in the Council on account of their first hand and living touch with administration. As for *non official* representation, the guiding principle is that all interests and communities should have a fair and equal chance. Nor should the Councils be, on the other hand, unmanageably large. The *minimum* as

laid down in the Act is given in the Table. It will be noted that as the Morley-Minto Act prescribed the *maximum* strength of the Councils, it was possible for the Executive to have fewer members than the maximum. The Act of 1919, however, prescribes a *minimum*, and by the Rules made under the Act, it will be observed that in each province there are more members than the Statutory minimum.

The Composition of each Council established under the rules

PROVINCE.		Total (<i>Ex-officio</i> , nominated and elected.)	Nominated.			Elected.		
			Total (Nominated and <i>Ex-officio</i>)*	Officials (Nominated and <i>Ex-officio</i>)	Non-Officials.	By special electorates.		
						Total.	University.	Landholders.
1. Madras	..	127	29	23	6	98	13	6
2. Bombay	..	111	25	20	5	86	11	3
3. Bengal	..	†139	26	20	6	†113	†11	5
4. United Provinces	..	123	23	18	5	100	10	6
5. Punjab	..	93	22	16	6	71	7	4
6. Bihar & Orissa.	103	27	20	7	76	9	5	3
7. Central Provinces	..	†70	16	10	6	54	7	3
8. Assam	..	53	14	9	5	39	6	6

as finally made is shown in the following Table.

Elected.											REMARKS.			
By Communal Electorates.					By General Electorates.									
Total.	Mahomedans.	(Rural).	Mahomedans.	(Urban).	Europeans.	Anglo-Indians.	Indian Christians.	Sikhs.	Total.	Non-Mahomedans.	(Rural).	Non-Mahomedans.	(Urban).	Minimum under the Act of 1919.
20	11	2	1	1	5	..	65	56	9	118	*	This column shows the maximum number of officials who may be nominated under the rules.	118	
29	22	5	2	..	..	..	46	35	11	111			83	
46	33	6	5	2	..	..	46	35	11	125			98	is open to the Governor to nominate fewer officials with a corresponding increase in the number of nominated non-officials shown in the next column.
30	25	4	1	..	..	..	60	52	8	118			70	
44	27	5	..	..	..	12	20	13	7	83			53	
19	15	3	1	..	..	..	48	42	6	98				
7	6	1	..	..	..	..	40	31	9	70				
12	12	..	..	..	..	..	21	20	§1	53				

crease in the number of nominated non-officials shown in the next column.

† There will later be an additional elected seat for the Dacca University with consequent increases of one in the figures shown in these columns.

‡ Members to be nominated as the result of elections held in Bengal have been shown as elected. *Vide* sect 72 (2) (c) of the Act.

§ This seat (Shillong) is filled by a general electorate including Mahomedans, there being no separate Mahomedan Urban constituency.

(2) *Proportion of Officials and Non-officials.*—In an earlier section we considered the theory of official voting. In the old provincial Councils the officials were not in a majority, for it was felt that there were sufficient safeguards against non-official opposition. No non-official could introduce a private Bill without “previous sanction.” Non-official opposition to a Bill proposed by Government could be got over by getting the Bill passed in the Legislative Council of the Governor-General which had concurrent powers of legislation and where an official majority was always handy; and as regards Resolutions, even if non-officials succeeded in carrying one in the teeth of Government opposition—which was not a rare phenomenon—the Resolution was of a purely recommendatory character. As regards the budget the powers of the local Council were more illusory than real. Thus, as in any case, the powers of the Councils were nominal and limited, a non-official majority in them did not matter much. But though an official *majority* was unnecessary, an official *bloc* was felt to be indispensable. The officials had freedom neither of speech nor of vote, and the non-officials were irritated by their apparently meaningless opposition which widened the cleavage between the Government and the people. But though the non-officials were in a majority, their influence was compromised by certain factors. A non-official majority was not the same thing as an *elective* majority. The former contained *nominated* European and Indian non-officials most of whom voted with Government. Thus the non-official majorities proved largely illusory & the unreality of the Councils caused disappointment and dissatisfaction;

In the new Councils “not more than 20 per cent of the members can be officials and at least 70 per cent must be elected members.”

It will be seen that the power of the Governor to nominate non officials is restricted to only 10 per cent. of the total strength. Out of these he *must* nominate some to represent interests or classes mentioned in the Rules under the Act. Thus in the case of the Bombay Council the Governor is required to nominate members to represent the Anglo-Indian Community, the Indian Christian Community, the labouring classes in Bombay, the Depressed classes, and the Cotton trade in Bombay. He has full discretion only as regards the remaining *five* members.

In addition to the nominated officials and non-officials, the Governor has the right of nominating one or two persons "having special knowledge or experience of the subject matter of a Bill which has been introduced into the Council, as *expert* members.

(3) *Method of appointment.*—We considered in an earlier section the defects of the state of representation before the Reforms. In the first place the electorates were very restricted and secondly as the election was indirect there was no *real* connection between the primary voter and his representative in the Council. This lack of connection deprived the franchise of its political value and educative influence and left no room for the principle of Responsible Government.

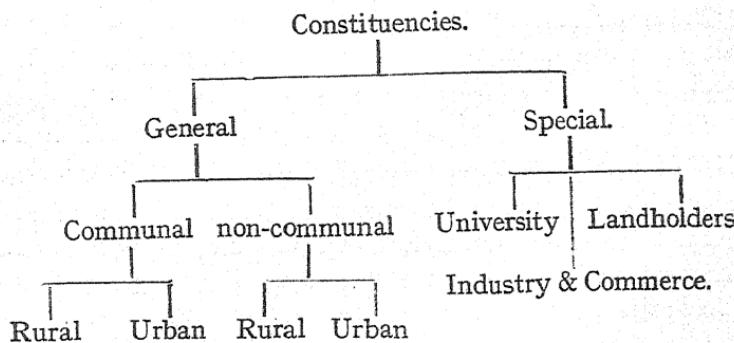
But as it is upon this principle that the whole edifice of Provincial Government is raised, its proper application requires *direct* election and low franchise. In framing the constituencies and defining the franchise, however, we must remember that about 90 per cent of the population is illiterate and 70 per cent rural in its habits; that education is unequally distributed among various communities, is too much literary, and imparted in an unsatisfactory manner; further, as the

authors of the M. C. Report say, "the politically minded educated Indians, though they have done a great deal for the political and social improvement of the masses, have not yet identified their interests with those of the masses. Nor can we be blind to the division of Indian Society by races, creeds and castes. In spite of these real difficulties, however, the experiment of responsible government must be tried. "It will be agreed that the character of political institutions reacts upon the character of the people. This fact, that the exercise of responsibility calls forth the capacity for it is the best ground for confidence in the working of self-government in India."*

The detailed work of defining constituencies and franchise was done by the Franchise Committee of Lord Southborough. For purposes of "rural" representation it took the District as a convenient unit each sending one or more members according to its size or population. The larger and more industrial towns were given "urban" representation. This distinction between rural and urban constituencies was unknown in the old Councils. But Towns are assuming a new importance in India. As the Government of India said in their Despatch "After religion and race, the boundary between the town and the country is the greatest dividing line that runs through the Indian people. It corresponds closely with the division between progress and conservatism, between English education and vernacular; between experience of self-government and lack of such experience; between the existence of newspapers, professions, bar-libraries, and societies, and their absence. It is roughly the difference between the old India and the new, the forces that are forcing us forward and the forces that are holding us back."

* M. C. Report S. 130.

But uniform constituencies based upon territory though well-suited to politically advanced countries like England or the United States, are unsuited to Indian conditions. They have been supplemented by constituencies designed to represent particular communities, or special interests e.g. the Universities, European and Indian Commerce, and Landholders. We may classify the constituencies thus.



Disputable matters of Representation.—Thus the problem of the representation of the Indian population is one of peculiar complexity. The Joint Committee laid down important principles in this respect in connection with their comments upon section 72A (4) (c). We shall take them in order, and first, *Communal Representation*.—So far as the Mahomedans were concerned their claim for separate representation was beyond revocation, as they were in enjoyment of that privilege in the old Councils. The non-Mahomedans—particularly the Hindus, in their turn, had not only acquiesced in that concession but solemnly given their approval by what is known as the “ Lucknow Compact ” of 1916. By this agreement the Mahomedans were allowed to have Mahomedan Members equal to fifty per cent of the total elected Indian

Members in the Punjab, *thirty* per cent in the United Provinces, *forty* per cent in Bengal, *twenty-five* per cent in Bihar and Orissa, *fifteen* per cent. in the Central Provinces, *fifteen* per cent in Madras, and *thirty three* per cent in Bombay.

This Lucknow Compact was taken by the Functions Committee as the basis for determining the number of Mahomedan seats in each Provincial Council.

It was not thought wise to go behind the Lucknow Compact which was taken as a proof of the growing understanding between the two great communities of Indian Society.

Considering the question of communal representation on its merits, we may say that its advantages are the following:—

It better protects the interests of the particular community ; secures better representation of that community ; it welds the community more closely, and affords it greater opportunities of education and service.

On the other hand there are grave disadvantages. As the M. C. Report pointed out, Communal Representation will not carry India towards Responsible Government. (1) It is opposed to the teaching of the history of all self governing countries which shows that in each the territorial principle has vanquished the tribal, and blood and religion have ceased to assert a rival claim with the state to a citizen's allegiance. (2) Again, communal representation perpetuates class divisions and thus retards the growth of that citizen-spirit which is superior to the partisan spirit of a narrow community or religion. (3) A minority which is given special representation owing to its weakness and backwardness is positively encouraged to settle down into a feeling of satisfied curiosity, it is under no inducement to educate and qualify itself to make good the

ground which it has lost compared with the stronger majority. On the other hand the latter will be tempted to feel that they have done all that they need do for their weaker fellow-countrymen and that they are free to use their power for their own purpose. The give and take which is the essence of political life is lacking.”*

Some other disadvantages might be here pointed out. (4) The concession is contagious. It is impossible to stop when once you give concession to one community, before giving it, in fairness, to all. (5) Many Communities in India are not homogeneous. There are divisions and subdivisions and communal representation would accentuate this fissiparous tendency. (6) Again, in India communal representation may be viewed with intense suspicion as a Machiavellian device to widen existing lines of cleavage, to check the growing sense of nationality and to secure the position of the British Government by the application of the principle of “divide and rule.” (7) A separate representation given to the less progressive communities is certain to affect the calibre of the Council during the period of transition.

In spite of these drawbacks this concession has been continued to the Mahammedans in all provinces, and conferred afresh on the Sikhs in the Punjab, the Indian Christians in South India, and the Europeans in Madras, Bombay and Bengal. It was no doubt an irony of fate that the publication of the M. C. Report with its strong presentation of the case *against* communal representation should have witnessed the recrudescence of the communal feeling with a strength and sharpness that were impatient of reasoning and that succeeded in gaining the concessions mentioned above.

* M. C. Report 227—230.

A less objectionable method of securing the representation of minorities is that of *Reservation of Seats* in plural member constituencies. The superiority of the device of reservation to communal representation is this that it does not deepen existing differences, it admirably secures the object which it has in view, it is simpler in operation, and it is a concession that can be revoked with greater ease and facility than communal representation when it has done its work. It is by this means that the Non-Brahmins in the Madras Presidency and the Marathas in the Deccan have been represented in the local Councils. So far as the Deccan Marathas were concerned 6 seats were reserved for them in each of the plural-member constituencies of Bombay (South), Thana, Ahmednagar, Nasik, Poona, and Ratnagiri Districts. The Sholapur, Kolaba and the West Khandesh District is to elect a Maratha member to the first, second and third Councils respectively and to succeeding Councils in the same rotation. It was not felt necessary to reserve a seat in the Satara District because it was thought that the Maratha element in it was sufficiently strong to return a Maratha to the Council with certainty. Both the Communities had pressed their claims for separate representation before the Franchise Committee but their claims were not favourably entertained. The Non-Brahmins in Madras are in an overwhelming majority in that province, though backward in education. Experience has shown that the Non-Brahmins can organize themselves well for entry into the Councils. In the Madras Council they are in a majority and in the Bombay Council the Marathas form an important group. In fact the time may not be distant when the Brahmins will be constrained to demand separate adequate representation to prevent themselves being swamped by the Non-Brahmins.

Representation of Special Interests.—Next to the problem of communal representation comes the one of the representation of *Special* interests. Here the qualification is based not on the elector's belonging to a particular community in a town or district, but rather upon representing a special interest *i.e.*, of the land holders, of University, or of industry and commerce. Such special electorates are non-territorial in their nature and the vote or votes thus exercised are in *addition* to that based upon the territorial qualification.

The Landholders—the historic aristocracy of the country had special representation in the old councils and they are sufficiently distinct from the vast mass of cultivators who are either their tenants or peasant proprietors. In the Bombay Presidency the Gujrati Sardars and Inamdar, the Deccan Sardars and Inamdar, and the Sindh Jagirdhars and Zamindars—paying not less than Rs. 1000 per year by way of land revenue, are given one member each in the legislative Council.

The Universities also, on the analogy of the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, enjoyed special representation in the old Councils. They safeguard the interests—not of the educated classes—but of university corporations. The franchise extends to all graduates of the University of more than seven years' standing.

Indian and European commercial and industrial interests have been given special representation, *e.g.*, the Planting interest in Madras, Bihar, Orissa and Assam; Mining interest in Bengal, Bihar, Orissa and the Central Provinces; European Chambers of Commerce in Bombay, Bengal, Madras and the United Provinces; Indian Chambers of Commerce in Bombay, Bengal and Madras; Mill Owner's Association in Bombay, etc.

Nomination.—But there are sections of Indian population to whom the devices of communal representation, of reserva-

tion of seats or of special representation cannot be conveniently applied. In such cases nomination pure and simple was found most suitable. It is even simpler and more elastic than reservation. There are minorities which are too small or unorganized to be protected by a seat being reserved for them but which are sufficiently important to have their claims acknowledged. Nomination serves the purpose well in such cases. Rules under the Act require the Governor of each Province to secure the representation of certain interests or communities by this method of nomination; for example the Depressed classes in many provinces; Anglo-Indians; Indian Christians; similarly the Cotton trade in Bombay; "excluded tracts" in Madras, Central Provinces and Assam; and the wage-earners in the city of Bombay.

The case of the Wage-earners is specially interesting. They are sufficiently important and organized in Bombay for instance. But the Joint Committee felt that election would not secure for labour the best and most useful representative that was available. They, therefore, went in for nomination rather than election. The advent of the Labour Party to power in England gives special importance to this question; and proposals are being put forward to so amend the Rules under the Act as would secure the right of election to Labour.

At the same time it must be admitted that the position of the Nominated members in the Councils is far from enviable. They are viewed with suspicion both by Government and by the elected members. Perhaps Nomination is inconsistent with full Responsible Government.

Proportional Representation.—It is obvious that devices like communal representation etc. can have no permanent

place in a perfect franchise scheme. Though useful as transitional and preparatory measures, they are bound to make room in course of time for more scientific methods of election which have been found useful in Western Countries. The problem of the representation of the minorities is in no way peculiar to India. In advanced countries it has been successfully solved by ingenious methods of election. One of them—Proportional Representation—was strongly advocated by Dr. R. P. Paranjpye as well suited to Indian conditions. He rightly claimed that it would facilitate the progress of India towards Responsible Government by gradually obliterating communal differences. The Joint Committee accepted the suggestion and recommended that the method might be tried if the local Council of a province passed a resolution in favour of its adoption.

Scheme of Franchise for the Bombay Presidency.—As an example of the way in which the above principles have been applied in practice I give below a Table showing the scheme of franchise in the Bombay Presidency. I have also included in the table the franchise for the Legislative Assembly and the Council of State, in order that the juxtaposition may suggest how the franchise is higher for the Indian Legislature.

SCHEME OF FRANCHISE FOR THE BOMBAY PRESIDENCY.

Qualifications.	Legislative Council.	Legislative Assembly.	Council of State.
(a) Assessment to Income-tax.	On an annual Income of not less than ..	Rs. 2,000 <i>Urban.</i>	Rs. 10,000-20000
(b) Occupation or ownership of a building.	(i) of which the annual rental value was not less than. (ii) of which the capital value was not less than.	In Bombay City .. In Karachi City .. In other Cities .. In other Cities .. less less	120 60 36 1,500 <i>Rural</i>
	(i)	.. .. ..	(1) Panch Mahal and Ratnagiri. (2) In Sind and rest of the Presidency.
	(ii)	.. .. ..	(1) Panch Mahal and Ratnagiri. (2) In Sind and rest of the Presidency.

(c) The holding of land.	By ownership or tenancy of which the annual assessment is not less than.	In Upper Sind Frontier,		
		Panch Mahal	16	37-8-0
(a) Land - hold. By being a Khot.	In right of Government to land Revenue being alienated to him	Ratnagiri .. .	..	—
		By being a Khot.	32	75-0-0
(d) Lands.	Sardars and Inamdar,	Deccan Sardars and Inamdar,	Paying land revenue of not less than ..	1,000
		Sind Jagirdars and Jamindars,	Do. ..	—
(e) The holding of land.	By the right of Government to land Revenue being alienated to him	Other Imamdar, Saraijamdar, Talukdars or Khots	Do. ..	2,000
			Do. ..	—

N.B.—In some provinces, both in urban and rural constituencies, the franchise is based on the payment of Municipal rates and taxes in lieu of occupation of buildings.

(88) III—SCHEME OF FRANCHISE FOR THE BOMBAY PRESIDENCY.

In the preceding table was given the scheme of franchise for the Bombay Presidency. It shows the qualifications of electors to the local Council, the Legislative Assembly and the Council of State. It should be read in the light of the explanatory remarks that follow. Franchise Rules of the different Provinces with explanatory remarks have been collected in an excellent book called "*Electioneering in India*" by Mr. Hammond of the Indian Civil Service.

In the Bombay Presidency the qualification of an elector to the Council is based upon.

- (i) Community.
- (ii) Residence and
- (iii) (a) occupation of a building or
 (b) assessment to income tax.
 (c) receipt of a military pension.
 (d) the holding of land.

(iii-c) *i.e.*, the qualification based upon the receipt of a Military pension is a special concession to the Indian Army Officers on account of their services in the late War.

With regard to the whole scheme it should be noted that the Joint Committee desired that the Franchise as settled by Rules under the Act should not be altered for the first ten years and that it should be at present outside the power of the legislative Councils to make any alteration in it. The case of Woman suffrage where such a change has been allowed—is to be regarded as exceptional and as not forming any precedent in respect of proposals for other alterations.

Explanatory Remarks.—An elector to the local Council or to the Assembly or to the Council of State must be a *male British*

Subject, of sound mind, and over 21 years of age. The question as to whether the franchise should be extended to subjects of *Native States* was much discussed at the time and received favourable consideration at the hands of the Southborough Committee. But as some local Governments were opposed to the enfranchisement of the subjects of the Native States, the question was left to the discretion of each local Government. Not one of them has extended the privilege to them.

Similarly with regard to *female suffrage*, though there was an overwhelming case in its favour, the Joint Committee felt that the question went too deep into the social system and susceptibilities of India, and therefore, left it to be settled in accordance with the wishes of the Indians themselves as constitutionally expressed *i.e.*, by a recommendatory resolution in its favour in the local Councils. That popular opinion in some provinces is genuinely in favour of extending the franchise to women is clear from the fact that Resolutions in favour of removing the sex-disqualification were passed in Madras and Bombay, and also in the Legislative Assembly. But in some provinces *e.g.*, Bengal, Bihar and Orissa, similar resolutions failed.

Residence for a specified period of time *e.g.* one year in the constituency is required in the case of each elector.

It will be seen from the subjoined Table, that the qualification for voting is based upon the possession of property as evidenced by the holding of land, occupation of house, payment of Municipal Taxes, Income Tax etc. The qualification is not the same for all the provinces nor is it uniform throughout a Province. It is generally higher in the Urban area than in Rural area. Even in Urban areas it is specially high in towns like Bombay and Karachi, and in Rural areas

specially low for poor districts like Ratnagiri and the Panch Mahals. But within a given constituency it is the same for *all* voters.

Qualifications for candidates.—A person is not eligible for election as a member of the Council if such person (a) is not a British Subject, (b) is a female, or (c) is already a member of the Council or of any other legislative body constituted under the Act, or (d) is dismissed or suspended from legal practice, (e) is of unsound mind, (f) is under 25 years of age, (g) is an undischarged solvent, (h) is a discharged solvent with a certificate that his insolvency was caused by misfortune without any misconduct on his part.

Again a person against whom a conviction by criminal court involving a sentence of transportation, or imprisonment for a period of more than six months is subsisting, unless the offence of which he was convicted has been pardoned, is ineligible for five years from the date of expiration of the sentence.

In addition to these general qualifications a candidate is required to belong to the "special" constituency or, in the case of communal representation, to the community he proposes to represent. A further qualification of residence for six months within the constituency is required in some provinces.

Corrupt Practices.—Direct elections and wide franchise open the door to all sorts of irregularities at the hands of candidates or their overzealous agents. Stringent rules have been drawn up to prevent such practices. Corrupt practices include bribery, undue influence, personation, publication of false statements, etc. The best method of checking such practices is to have a proper scrutiny of election-expenditure of

each candidate. The candidates are therefore, required to keep a careful record of receipts and expenditure in connection with the election and submit it to the Returning Officer. As a further check over such practices the declarations of election expenses made by the candidates and lodged in the office of the Returning Officer, are open to inspection on payment of a prescribed fee. Conviction for a corrupt practice would disqualify a candidate from standing for election for five years from the date of conviction.

Other electoral Rules.—It is unnecessary to reproduce here the detailed rules made for the purpose of preparing the electoral roll, nomination of candidates, the holding of elections, and the publication of results, etc. Nominations are made by a fixed date ; they are officially scrutinized ; the Collector is the Returning Officer for the District. The polling booths are scattered throughout the district and polling takes place on the same day throughout the district and throughout the Presidency for the matter of that. Different days are fixed for Urban and rural voting, and for Mahomedan and Non-Mahomedan voting. Votes are given by ballot and in person. In plural member constituencies every candidate has as many votes as there are members to be elected though he may accumulate all of them upon any one candidate.

(89) IV—SESSIONS AND DURATION OF THE COUNCIL.*

If we throw a glance at a fully developed democratic body like the House of Commons we find that all matters relating to its composition, duration, methods of business privileges, etc. are settled by itself. It has cost the House of Commons many a protracted struggle with the King and

* S. 72 B of the Act.

his Council before it succeeded in establishing these valuable privileges. In fact it is in the exercise of these inestimable privileges that its real sovereignty consists. Parliament does not derive the rights from any authority higher than itself, for it itself is the highest authority.

But there can be no comparison between the House of Commons "the Mother of Parliamentary Institutions" and an Indian Provincial Council. The latter is a creation of the former and can have, therefore, no inherent rights of its own. And the extent to which it comes to enjoy such powers and privileges independently of Parliament is a measure of the sovereignty it will have come to exercise.

In the meanwhile important matters with regard to the Councils have been laid down in the Act itself or in Rules made under the Act. The Rules are as much binding as the Act itself, for they were either made with Parliamentary sanction or subsequently ratified by Parliament. Thus in the matter of the *Composition* of the Councils, the Act lays down the *minimum* strength of the Councils and the proportion and of elected and nominated members.

Regarding *Sessions*, the Act requires the Governor to fix the time and place of holding the sessions of the Council and he has the power to prorogue it. The normal life of a Council is three years though it may be dissolved sooner by the Governor. In that case he must call a fresh Council within six months of the dissolution of the old Council.

*Presidency of the Councils**.—In the old Councils the head of the Administration *i.e.*, the Governor or Lieutenant-Governor was the President. This was quite in keeping with the historical fact that the legislative Council was an expansion of the

* Read S. 72 C of the Act.

Executive Council. But the Councils have now become assemblies of legislators and their new role required a corresponding change in their President. By the Governor ceasing to be a member of the Legislative Council (though he has the right of addressing it and of requiring the attendance of members for that purpose), he has been withdrawn into a convenient Olympian height from which he can watch and control, so far as seems advisable or possible, the proceedings of the Legislature."

The Councils also have benefited by the absence of the Governor. The presence of the Head of the Province in the Council had a stifling influence upon the Honourable Members who thus could not make full use of their none-too-wide powers of putting Questions or moving Resolutions. If therefore the Councils were to develop the freedom and dignity of parliamentary bodies as in other countries, they had to be removed from the stunting influence of the presence of the Governor at their deliberations.

The Joint Committee considered carefully this question. They were of opinion that the Governor should not preside, and they advised that, for a period of four years, the President should be appointed by the Governor. Wherever possible it would be a great advantage if some one could be found for this purpose who had had parliamentary experience. The Legislative Council should itself elect a Deputy President, and at the end of four years the nominated President would disappear and the President and Deputy President would be elected by the Council. The Joint Committee attributed the greatest importance to this question of the Presidency of the Councils. "It will, in their opinion, conduce very greatly to the successful working of the new Councils if they are imbued from the commencement with the spirit and

conventions of parliamentary procedure as devised in the Imperial Parliament."

(90) V—GENERAL VIEW OF BUSINESS AND PROCEDURE IN THE COUNCIL.

To get a complete view of procedure in the Council reference must be made to three sources : to section 72-D (6) and (7) of the Act, to Rules made under that Section, and to the Standing Orders of the Council. The Rules were in the first instance framed by the Governor-General in Council with the sanction of the Secretary of State in Council, and then approved of by Parliament. They cannot be repealed or altered by the Indian Legislature or by the Provincial Legislature. The Rules provide "as to the persons to preside over meetings of the Council in the absence of the President and Deputy President, to the preservation of order at the meetings, for quorum, and for the asking of questions on and the discussion of any subject specified in the rules."

Thus at the commencement of each session of the Council is elected a panel of four chairmen any one of whom presides over the Council in the absence of the President or Deputy President. The President decides all points of order which may arise and his decision is final. He may even ask a member to withdraw from the Council if the member's conduct appeared to him to be grossly disorderly ; or finally he may suspend the sitting of the Council for a specified time in the case of grave disorder arising in the Council.

Such matters as are not provided for in the Rules are provided for by the Standing Orders. The first Standing Orders were made by the Governor-General in Council with the approval of the Secretary of State, but they can be amended

by the local Legislature. Ten days' notice, with a draft of the proposed amendment must be given, and leave will be given to move the amendment if 30 members favour it. After the leave is given the draft amendment is referred to a Select Committee of ten including the President, the Deputy President and one of the panel of four chairmen.

Much depends upon the way in which the time of the Council is allotted to the consideration of the business before it—both official and non-official. It is a recognized principle that in this matter Government has a preponderating voice. In the Provincial Council, for instance, the Governor allots days for the business of non-official members and on those days their business has precedence. When non-official business has precedence, Bills have precedence over motions to amend the Standing Orders, and the latter over Resolutions, though the President has the discretion of giving priority to any item of such business.

Nothing brings out more clearly the responsible character of the Councils—contain as they do members from rural areas and from the backward classes—than the permissive use of the vernaculars in them. As Mr. Curtis says "In India the official and political classes both incline to think as though the progress of India towards Responsible Government depended on training Indians to the work of Ministers, Legislators and Officials. But it really depends upon training electorates to a real understanding of the questions at issue, and to a habit of recording conscious decisions upon them. Such training will not begin in any real sense except in so far as provincial business is transacted and discussed in a language the people at large understand."

(91) FUNCTIONS OF THE COUNCILS.

Having considered the constitution of the Council and its business and procedure, let us proceed to the Functions of the Council. They can be conveniently grouped under four heads.

- | | |
|-----------------------------|------------------|
| (1) Interrogatory. | (3) Legislative. |
| (2) Deliberative. | (4) Financial. |
| (a) Resolutions. | |
| (b) Motion for adjournment. | |

(i) *Interpellations*.—The right of asking questions was first conferred by the Act of 1892 and extended by the Act of 1909. But in the old Councils many questions were disallowed and the information supplied was often of no value. This right of putting questions is generally regarded as a powerful weapon in the hands of the members for checking the day to day acts of the Executive.

No question can be asked in regard to the following subjects :—

- (i) Any matter affecting the relations of His Majesty's Government or of the Government of India, or of the Governor or Governor-in-Council, with any foreign state.
- (ii) Any matter affecting the relations of any of the foregoing authorities with any Prince or Chief under the Sovereignty of His Majesty, or relating to the affairs of any such Prince or Chief, or to the administration of the Territory of any such Prince or Chief.
- (iii) Any matter which is under adjudication by a Court of Law having jurisdiction in any part of His Majesty's dominions.

The President's decision on the point whether any question is or is not within the above restrictions is final. Any member may put a supplementary question for the purpose of

elucidating any matter of fact regarding which an answer has been given. Ten clear days' notice is required for the asking of a question. A period of one hour is made available for the asking and answering of questions at every meeting of the Council.

(2) *Deliberative Functions.*—(a) *Resolutions* :—The right of moving Resolutions was regarded, even in the old Councils, as a valuable means of bringing the policy of Government more in accord with popular views and of ventilating popular grievances. Fifteen days' notice is required for a Resolution which must be clearly and precisely expressed and raise a definite issue. Amendments to a Resolution (for which a day's notice has been given) may be moved with the consent of the President. Every Resolution is in the form of specific recommendation addressed to the Government, and the same restrictions which apply to the subject matter of questions also apply to the resolutions.

It is important to understand why a Resolution cannot but be purely recommendatory in the present stage of the Councils. Even an all powerful body like the House of Commons does not make use of Resolutions to *control* the Executive. It has other methods of doing it e.g., a debate on the Address, interpellations, motions to adjourn, budget debates or, finally, motion of no confidence. The result of pressing a Resolution to division with a view to defeat Government would certainly lead, in England, to a change of Government. In India, however, we have, in the province, the Governor-in-Council who is irremovable by a popular vote. There is no constitutional means of making a Resolution binding upon him.

(b) *Motion for adjournment*.—This was a new feature of the Councils. In parliamentary countries motion for adjourn-

ment is a means for raising debate upon a question of urgent public interest. The Standing Orders require that leave to make a motion for adjournment for the purpose of discussing a resolution on a *definite* matter of *urgent public importance* must be asked after questions and before the business of the day is entered upon. Leave will be given if more than thirty members are for it. This right is subject to the following restrictions.

- (i) Not more than one such motion can be made at the same sitting.
- (ii) Not more than one matter can be discussed on the same motion, and the motion must be restricted to a specific matter of recent occurrence.
- (iii) The motion must not revive discussion on a matter which has been discussed in the same session.
- (iv) The motion must not anticipate matter which has been previously appointed for consideration, or with reference to which a notice for motion has been previously given.
- (v) The motion must not deal with matter on which a resolution could not be moved.

(3) *Legislative.—Procedure* :—We shall only consider here the procedure which a Bill has to follow in the Council. The Rules under the Act provide that a Bill might be published in the Official Gazette although no motion has been made for leave to introduce it. A private member must give notice to introduce a Bill, of fifteen days if the Bill referred to a transferred subject and of a month if the Bill referred to the reserved subject.

After leave of the Council has been obtained, the Bill is introduced on any subsequent day available for business of the kind.

After a Bill has been introduced, the Bill with the statement of Objects and Reasons is translated into the vernaculars and published in the Gazette.

Every Bill must be read three times, and if the motion of any reading is not carried, it is to be regarded as dropped, and cannot be introduced within a period of six months from the date of rejection.

First Reading.—On the First Reading the principle of the Bill and its general provisions may be discussed; at this stage the detailed provisions cannot be discussed or any amendments moved.

If the First Reading of the Bill is passed, (a) it is read a second time either at once or on some future day to be then stated, or (b) referred to a Select Committee or, (c) published for the purpose of eliciting opinion on it within a specified interval. The Select Committee must report upon a Bill referred to it within two months. After the presentation of its Report the Bill (a) is read a second time either at once or on some date in future to be then stated or, (b) recommitted to the Select Committee for further consideration with or without instructions.

Second Reading.—At the time of the Second Reading of the Bill the President submits it to the Council clause by clause. Amendments, for which seven clear days' notice is given, are moved at this stage. If no amendments are made the Bill may be read *third* time at once. But if an objection is made when the Bill is being read clause by clause, the Bill cannot be read the third time at the same meeting, but must be brought in again on some subsequent day. At this stage only verbal amendments can be moved. After the third reading the Bill is said to have passed and it is then signed and certified by the President, and submitted to the Governor by the Secretary, Legislative Department, for his assent.

(4) *Financial*.—We may postpone the consideration of the Budget procedure to the next Chapter.

CHAPTER XVII.

DYARCHY.

(92)

I—MEANING OF DYARCHY.

Provinces the Domain of Responsibility.—The provinces are the domain where the first substantial steps towards responsible Government were to be taken. As Mr. Montagu said in the House of Commons* “ The only possible way of achieving devolution and making the unit responsible for the management of its own affairs is to make the government of that unit responsible to the representatives of the people. Now in order to realize Responsible Government and in order to get devolution you must gradually get rid of government by the Agents of Parliament and replace it by Government by the Agents of the representatives of the people. In other words you have to choose your unit of Government and you have got in that unit to create an electorate which will control the government. Now under present circumstances this unit cannot be the one for local self government....The Reforms of Lord Morley have emphasized the importance of the provincial Councils and these latter have awakened the appetite for responsible Government. We must, therefore, go to the provinces as the units of responsible Government.” In this form of Government administration is carried on by Ministers. The Ministers must have the confidence of the

representatives of the people in the Council. Their responsibility to the members of the Council (and through them to the electorates) consists in their being liable to be dismissed as soon as confidence in them disappears. In a Parliamentary constitution this responsibility can be enforced by various methods e.g. vote of censure, vote of non-confidence, reduction in the salaries of the Ministers, snap divisions, finally withholding of supplies, etc.

Now though the idea of Responsible Government is quite familiar to the Western mind, it is an exotic in India. Hence it has to be introduced under special conditions. The Authors of the Reforms, therefore, took two precautions against possible dangers of trying this form of government : (1) In the first place they excluded altogether the Central Government from this experiment ; and (2) even within a province, only a part of the administration was made responsible.

Meaning of Dyarchy.—The reasons that were alleged for this over cautious policy were the backwardness of the people in education and the prevalence of religious or communal differences ; at the same time substantial responsibility had to be given forthwith if the Reforms were to have any value. These contrary objects were accomplished by the device of *Dyarchy i.e.*, by making a division of the functions of provincial Government between those which are to be made over to popular control and those which for the present must continue to remain in official hands *i.e.*, between *transferred* and *reserved* subjects. The Governor-in-Council is in charge of the Reserved subjects, and the Governor acting with the Ministers of the Transferred subjects. The division of the sphere of Government between two authori-

ties, one amenable to Parliament and the other responsible to the electorates is known as Dyarchy.

Division of Provincial Subjects into "Reserved" and "Transferred".—The guiding principle of this division as laid down in the Montford Report was this : " to include within transferred list those Departments which afford most opportunities for local knowledge and social service, those in which Indians have shown themselves to be keenly interested, those in which mistakes that may occur though serious would not be irremediable, and those which stand most in need of development. But Departments primarily concerned with law and order, and matters which vitally affect the well-being of the masses who may not be adequately represented in the new Councils, such as the question of land-revenue or tenant rights should not be transferred."

The List of provincial subjects for transfer as drawn up by the Functions Committee and as finally accepted is given in the Appendix. There was a great deal of discussion regarding the transfer of Education and the reserving of Land Revenue and their final treatment should be carefully noted.

(93) II—STRUCTURE OF THE PROVINCIAL EXECUTIVE.

To turn now to the two halves of the provincial Executive : the Governor-in-Council, and the Governor acting with his Ministers. There has been no change with regard to the former. The maximum of four Councillors under the old Act has been retained ; but the Joint Committee remarked. "In view of a large part of the administration being transferred to Ministers, the normal strength of an Executive Council especially in the smaller provinces, need not exceed two Members, of whom only one need have been in the service

of the Crown in India for at least twelve years, the other being, by convention, an Indian ; but if in any case the Council includes two Members with service qualifications, neither of whom is by birth an Indian, it should also include two unofficial Indian Members." The Executive Councillors are not responsible to the provincial Legislature (in the sense that they could be removed from office by it). They are appointed by His Majesty, their pay is fixed by Schedule under the Act of 1919 ; their period of service is for five years. Thus neither their appointment, tenure of office, or pay depends upon the vote of the Council.

The Ministers.—They are to be nominated by the Governor from among the elected members of the Provincial Council and to hold office during his pleasure. Their salary is to depend upon the vote of the Provincial Legislature.

As a matter of fact in the Provinces of Bengal, Bombay and Madras four Executive Councillors and three Ministers, in Bihar and Orissa three Executive Councillors and two Ministers, and in the remaining provinces two Councillors and two Ministers were appointed.

Before the Reforms the whole administration was carried on, even in the larger provinces, by an Executive Council of *three* members. It is true that the Reforms made the administration more complex. Also the protracted sessions of the Council and its thirst for information added to the work of the Executive. But even then it was generally felt that the administration had become top-heavy and expensive and the question was frequently raised in the Indian Legislature. Government is now considering if the number of Executive Councillors could not be reduced. As for the number of Ministers, it must depend upon the vote of the Council.

(94)

III—DYARCHY IN OPERATION.

Relations of the two halves of Government.—We have next to consider how the Executive—half official, half popular—works in practice.

That the problem was full of difficulties goes without saying. It depended for its solution upon two axioms : (1) that the ordinary agency of administration will serve with equal loyalty and honesty the two halves of Government, and (2) that the Governor will be the link between the two halves. In fact the over-shadowing influence of the Governor over the two halves has been at once the cause of the success and failure of Dyarchy. Not only is he responsible for the distribution of departments among his Councillors and Ministers, but he makes a number of "Rules for Executive Business" which are kept strictly confidential and which are equally binding upon both halves of Government. Again the permanent heads of Departments—the various Secretaries—have direct access to the Governor, and they keep him closely informed of what ever is going on in each Department. It is by means of such 'unseen' strings that the Governor manages to yoke the Councillors and the Ministers to the chariot of provincial administration and to drive it.

But we shall explain some of the *outward* measures that have been prescribed for the Governor to keep the two halves together.

It should first be remembered that the two halves of Government are responsible to two different masters for two distinct fields of administration and the responsibility of each half for its own field is to be kept distinct. The people must not be kept in doubt as to what acts are done by the Governor on the advice of his Executive Council and what act :

done by him on the advice of his Ministers. Any confusion of responsibility would not only be unfair to the Councillors and the Ministers but it would prevent the electorates from judging about the acts or policy of their Ministers in the Council. Thus Responsible Government would lose its real educative value which consists in the ability to form accurate judgments about men and measures.

But in spite of this distinctness of responsibility, the two halves must have *one* policy. They should be brought together through the Governor. He is *personally* responsible for the proper administration of his entire province. He is the keystone of the arch of provincial Government. The Joint Committee thus envisaged his part in Dyarchy. The Committee were alive to the difficulties and dangers of "Dyarchy," but they saw no reasons why the relations of the two halves should not be harmonious and naturally advantageous. They regarded it as of the highest importance that the Governor should foster the habit of free consultation between both halves of his Government and indeed that he should insist upon it in all important matters of common concern. He will thus ensure that the Ministers will contribute their knowledge of the people's wishes and susceptibilities and the Members of his Executive Council their administrative experience to the Joint wisdom of the administration." In another place of the Report the Committee gives a picture of the manner in which they thought that the Government of a province should be worked. "There will be many matters of administrative business, as in all countries, which can be disposed of departmentally. But there will remain a large category of business, of the character which would naturally be the subject of Cabinet consultation. In regard to this category the Committee conceive that the habit should be

carefully fostered of joint deliberation between the members of the executive council and the ministers, sitting under the chairmanship of the Governor. There cannot be too much mutual advice and consultation on such subjects." But this mutual consultation should not be allowed to obscure the responsibility of each half of Government for its own field of administration and it will be for the Governor to decide upon debatable questions of the jurisdiction of the two parts of administration.

Governor to define spheres of jurisdiction.—Seeing that the Governor is the pivot of Dyarchy we shall now proceed to consider the special powers with which he has been invested to enable him to discharge his responsibility both with respect to Reserved and Transferred subjects.

An initial difficulty will be about the jurisdiction of two halves of the Government. Though careful lists of reserved and transferred subjects have been drawn up, it will not be always clear whether a particular question belonged to one or the other half of Government. "It will not always, however, be clear otherwise than in a purely departmental and technical fashion, with whom the jurisdiction lies in the case of questions of common interest. In such cases it will be inevitable for the Governor to occupy the position of an informal arbitrator between the two parts of his administration ; and it will equally be his duty to see that a decision arrived at on one side of his government is followed up by such consequential action on the other side as may be necessary to make the policy effective and homogeneous."

Devolution Rule 9 accordingly provides that in the case of disagreement between the Executive Councillors and Ministers regarding jurisdiction, "it shall be the duty of the Gover-

nor, after the consideration of the advice tendered to him, to direct in which Department the decision as to such action shall be taken ; provided that, in so far as circumstances permit important matters on which there is such a difference of opinion, be considered by the Governor with his Executive Council and his Ministers sitting together."

(95) IV—ALLOCATION OF FUNDS BETWEEN THE
TWO HALVES.

Joint Vs Separate Purse.—Turning next to his financial responsibility in connection with *both* subjects. This is a problem of allocation of funds between the two halves. The reserved subjects, vitally concerned with the peace and tranquility of the province, must be guaranteed sufficient revenue for efficient administration and this in spite of the possible opposition of the Council. On the other hand, the transferred Departments of Education, Sanitation, etc. crying for and capable of almost unlimited improvement must not be starved on the specious plea of the more pressing needs of the reserved subjects. Such is the problem before the Governor.

The Montagu Chelmsford Report proposed that the allocation of funds between the two halves should be considered by the Government as a whole ; provincial contributions and Interest (which are a first charge upon provincial revenue) having been provided for, the supply of the *reserved* subject should have a priority ; then the needs of the *transferred* subjects should be taken into account ; and if funds be insufficient, the *Ministers* and they alone should face the Council with proposals of fresh taxation.

Thus though the M. C. Report favoured a "Joint Purse" for the province, it sacrificed the transferred subjects which were made to remain satisfied with what was left after the reserved subjects had had their fill; and it cast upon the Ministers the disagreeable necessity of proposing additional taxation. The Government of India, in their celebrated Despatch of 5th March 1919, proposed a "*Separate Purse*" for each half of Government. In addition to the defects mentioned above, they argued that, (a) under the Joint Purse, it was not impossible for Ministers to starve the reserved subjects by refusing fresh taxation, and by insisting upon a certain revenue for their own departments; (b) the Joint Purse had the incurable fault of being impracticable. It would cause endless friction in the division of the provincial balances, of the proceeds of fresh taxation, in the raising of loans, and in paying interest for them; (c) further the Joint Purse would not give any incentive to either half to improve its resources. Under the pooling system, any improvement which either half of Government can effect goes into hotchpot, and there is no direct advantage from it, possibly no advantage at all."

The rival scheme of "*Separate Purse*" proposed by the Government of India, presupposed a complete separation between the resources of the two halves of Government, each having its own balances, revenues, powers of taxation and of borrowing, and a separate budget. It was claimed to be free from the defects of the Joint Purse; but its greatest merit was said to be that it would remove the "*official*" Government from the *undue* influence and *control* of the Ministers, by depriving the latter of any opportunity to meddle with the "*budget*" of the Reserved half. Lord Meston—the then Finance Member of the Government of India—argued that the success of the new experiment of

Dyarchy required that each half of government should have its own work and should be allowed to do it unfettered by control exercised by the other half; and the contention of the Government of India was that the Joint Purse would place in the hands of the popular half of Government through their handling of the purse-strings a very large measure of control over the policy in regard to subjects which were not under their administrative control and consequently for which they were not responsible. It was feared that if at the time of the preparation of the Budget, there was no automatic barrier between the two classes of revenue like the one which the Separate Purse provided, the popular half would encroach upon the revenue of the other and that the Governor would not be able to prevent this encroachment.

Such were the agruments for and against the Joint Purse brought forward by the Government of India. Now it became sufficiently clear in the course of the controversy that some scheme of allocation of revenues between the two halves of Governement had to be made. As the division between the "Reserved" and "Transferred" subjects was not made on fiscal considerations, the assignment of the revenues accruing under reserved subjects to the reserved half, and under transferred subjects to the transferred half was absurd. The transferred subjects in any case required to be subsidized by the reserved subjects. Thus the real issue between the Joint and the Separate purse did not at all turn upon financial grounds. The problem of distributing a limited revenue between various items of expenditure of more or less urgency—and usefulness has to be solved by all governments, as it has to be solved by all private individuals also. A reasonable man so distributes his income as to get the maximum benefit

out of each item of expenditure ; and given reasonable Councillors, reasonable Ministers and a reasonable Governor, it was difficult to see why the Joint Purse should prove unworkable.

Dicium of the Joint Committee.—Such was the view taken by the Joint Committee. They said that they had given much attention to the difficult question of the principle on which the provincial revenues and balances should be distributed between the two halves of Government. "They are confident that the problem can readily be solved by the simple process of common sense and reasonable give and take, but they are aware that this question might in certain circumstances, become the cause of much friction in the provincial government, and they are of opinion that the rules governing allocation of these revenues and balances should be so framed as to make the existence of this friction impossible. They advise that if the Governor, in the course of preparing either his first or any subsequent budget, finds that there is likely to be serious or protracted difference of opinion between the Executive Council and his Ministers on this subject, he should be empowered at once to make an allocation of revenues and balances between the reserved and transferred subjects which should continue for at least the whole life of the existing legislative Council. The Committee do not endorse the suggestion that certain sources of revenue should be allocated to reserved, and certain sources to transferred subjects, but they recommend that the Governor should allocate a definite proportion, say by way of illustration, two thirds to reserved and one third to transferred subjects, and similarly a proportionate though not necessarily the same fraction of the balances. If the Governor desires assistance in making the allocation, he should be allowed, at

his discretion, to refer the question to be decided to such authority as the Governor-General shall appoint. Further the Committee are of opinion that it should be laid down from the first that, until an allocation has been made by the Governor, the total provisions of the different expenditure heads in the budget of the province for the preceding financial year shall hold good."

Devolution Rules about Allocation of Funds.—Effect has been given to this dictum of the Joint Committee by Devolution Rules made under the Act which are to the following effect. They first lay down that "expenditure for the purpose of the administration of *both* reserved and transferred subjects shall be a charge on the general revenues and balances of the province;" that their distribution between reserved and transferred subjects shall "be a matter for agreement" between the two halves; that the Governor, if he is satisfied that there is no hope of agreement between the two halves within a reasonable time, may "by order in writing make the allocation by specifying the fractional proportions of the revenues and balances to be assigned to each half; that the Governor may refer the matter to an authority to be appointed by the Governor-General in this behalf on the application of the Governor; every such order to remain in force for a period specified in the order (which will not be less than the duration of the then existing Council, and not exceed by more than one year, its duration;) that if an increase of revenues accrue during the period of the order on account of the imposition of fresh taxation, that increase, unless the Legislature otherwise directs, shall be allotted to that part of Government by which the taxation is initiated. Regarding proposals of borrowing or taxation, they will be considered "by both halves of Government sitting together;" but the decision shall

thereafter be arrived at by the Governor-in-Council, or by the Governor and Ministers, according as the proposal originated with the former or the latter.

Every contingency has thus been provided for. When the two halves of Government fail to agree and when the Governor also has failed to allot the moneys, the budget is to be prepared on the basis of the budget of the year about to expire and under *no* circumstances will the wheels of administration be brought to a standstill because of difficulties in the allocation of funds.

Advantages of the Joint Purse.—Sir Sankaran Nair was from the first a great opponent of the Separate Purse and an advocate of the Joint Purse. The former, he said, by depriving the popular half of any real voice in the settlement of the budget as a whole, would substantially reduce the value of the Reforms. The Joint Purse, on the other hand, would minimize the drawbacks of the dual system of Government introduced in the province, and give both halves of Government opportunities of sympathetically influencing each other's discussions to the advantage of both, and of the people of the Province. The Governor too will be in a better position to discharge his duties as head of the whole Government and promote friendly relations between the two halves. The knowledge that Ministers with their responsibility for transferred subjects have also been a party to the allotments made for reserved subjects is calculated to induce in the Legislative Council a conviction of the necessity of those allotments and to minimize the chances of their seeking to cut them down. This will be of great moral value as it will curtail the necessity of the Governor's making use of his power of certification which cannot but cause friction and conflict between him and his Executive Council on the one hand and the

Ministers and the Legislative Council on the other. The financial disposition of each year can be made with reference to the particular requirements of that year, there will be a much-needed and most useful element of elasticity imparted to the financial arrangements, and when a proposal of fresh taxation is made in the Council in these circumstances, the Legislative Council will easily persuade itself to accept it and support Government than it can be expected to do under a system of the " Separate Purse."

But the Devolution Rules seriously detracted from the advantages of the Joint Purse by keeping the port-folio of finance in the hands of a member of the Executive Council. The Ministers thus had to look up to him and his Department for all schemes of expenditure. In the financial powerlessness of the Ministers is to be found the chief cause of the failure of Dyarchy.

(96) V—BUDGET IN THE COUNCIL.

By the " Budget" is meant the statement of estimated revenue and expenditure of the financial year. We may distinguish four operations in connection with it. (1) Preparation of the budget ; (2) the voting of the budget ; (3) the execution of the budget ; (4) the enforcing of accountability.

(1) *Preparation of the Budget.*—As the financial year in India begins on the first of April, operations in connection with the budget have to begin as early as the preceding September. Various stages have to be gone through. Heads of Offices prepare estimates for expenditure which are then scrutinized by special controlling officers, by the Accountant's Department, and then by the Finance Department. Any new items of expenditure are scrutinized by the Finance Committee of the Legislature. The estimates as now revised and corrected are then considered collectively by the Government, and finally submitted to the Legislature.

(2) *Voting of the budget.*—The functions of the Council with respect to the Budget have been importantly enlarged under the Reforms. Formerly it could only hold a general discussion upon it or move resolutions which were purely recom-mendatory. Now the Council *votes* upon the budget item by item, as all parliamentary bodies do. After the Budget has been presented to the Council by the Finance Member on the appointed day, it proceeds to deal with it in two stages : (a) general discussion and, (b) voting of demands for grants. On a day appointed by the Governor subsequent to the day on which the Budget is presented, and for such time as the Governor has allotted for this purpose, the Council discusses the budget as a whole or any question of principle involved in it. At this stage no motion is moved, nor is the budget submitted to the vote of the Council. At the end of the discussion the Finance Member gives a general reply to the debate.

The second stage begins with the voting of grants. A separate demand is made in respect of the grant for each Department of Government. Demands affecting reserved and transferred subjects are shown separately. Not more than *twelve* days can be allotted by the Governor for the dis-cussion of the demands and not more than *two* days for the dis-cussion of a single grant.

The Council cannot make motions to increase or alter the destination of a grant. Only the Executive Government can do that. But the Council can move motions either to omit or reduce any grant or any item in the grant.

Special precautions.—Now let us consider the precautions that have been taken to get over the difficulties to which this procedure may give rise. (a) In the first place certain charges

of a special or recurring character, mentioned in Section 72D (3) e.g., provincial contributions, interest and sinking fund charges, salaries of certain officials, judges etc., are exempt from submission to the vote of the Council ; (b) The Governor has the power to authorise such expenditure as may be in his opinion necessary for the safety or tranquility of his province.

If the grant related to *reserved* subjects, and if it is reduced or not assented to by the Council, and if the Governor *certifies* " that the expenditure provided for by the demand is essential to the discharge of his responsibility for the subject " it can be restored. The Joint Committee made it perfectly clear that this power of restoration was real and its exercise should not be regarded as unusual or arbitrary. " Unless the Governor has the right to secure supply for those services for which he remains responsible to Parliament, that responsibility cannot justly be fastened upon him."

If the grant related to *transferred* subjects, and if it was reduced or refused by the Council, the Governor, if he was so advised by the Ministeres, would be justified in resubmitting the demand to the Council for a review of their former decision.

Generally of course the opinion of the Council in the matter of transferred expenditure will be much more decisive than that regarding reserved subjects.

With regard to Transferred subjects, the Governor has the right, in cases of *emergency* to authorise such expenditure as may in this opinion be necessary for the carrying on of any department.

Cases of the restoration of grants that were either refused or reduced by the Councils were not rare. But on account of the tactics of the Swaraj Party Members in the Central

Provinces and partly in Bengal, the Governors of those provinces were obliged to resort on a large scale to one or the other provisions of the Act to carry on administration.

(97) VI—GOVERNOR'S POWERS WITH REGARD
TO LEGISLATION.

We now turn to consider the power of the Governor with regard to *Legislation*, which is both positive and negative.

Essential Legislation—(*Read S. 72-E.*)—In as much as the Governor in-Council is responsible to Parliament for the reserved half he must have adequate power to secure the necessary legislation. As the Councils have been greatly enlarged and as they contain an overwhelming elective majority every Government Bill may not pass. The M. C. Report discussed various alternatives for securing “essential” legislation e.g., getting the particular Bill (opposed in the local Council) passed by the Governor-General-in-Council, or by the Governor General, or by the Governor in Council, or by the Governor. In the end of the M. C. Report recommended the use of a “Grand Committee.” If a Bill failed to pass in the Council, the best course for Government would be to drop it altogether; but if the Governor thought the Bill “essential” then he was to refer it to the Grand Committee of the Council which was so composed as to have a majority of *nominated* members and which, therefore, would not oppose the Bill. But this proposal as to Grand Committee was totally rejected by the Joint Parliamentary Committee. They did so because in their opinion the Grand Committee did not give the Governor the power of securing legislation in a crisis in respect of those matters for which he is held responsible, and because in respect of ordinary legislation about reserved subjects it perpetuated the system of securing legislation by

what is known as the "official bloc" which was the cause of great friction and heartburning. The responsibility for legislation on reserved subjects is with the Governor-in-Council, and when the Official bloc has been put into operation, it has been put into operation by him, and is merely an indirect way of asserting his responsibility. The Committee thinks it much better that there should be no attempt to conceal the fact that the responsibility is with the Governor-in-Council, and they recommend a process by which the Governor should be empowered to pass an Act in respect of any reserved subject, if he considers that the Act is necessary for the proper fulfilment of his responsibility to Parliament. He should not do so until he has given every opportunity for the matter to be thoroughly discussed in the Legislative Council, and as a sensible man he should, of course, endeavour to carry the legislative Council with him in the matter by the strength of his case. But, if he finds that cannot be so, then he should have the power to proceed on his own responsibility.

Effect has been given to this recommendation of the Joint Committee by 72-E which declares a Bill (rejected by the Council) to have passed on the Governor certifying "that the passage of the Bill is essential for the discharge of his responsibility for the subject."

As a safeguard against the abuse of this *affirmative* power of legislation, every such Act has to be reserved, an authentic copy being sent to him, by the Governor-General for the signification of His Majesty's pleasure, who may be advised by the Secretary of State, and the Act has to be laid before both Houses of Parliament. Provision has been made in the Act, however, for the avoidance of delay in case of a grave emergency by giving the Governor-General power to assent

to the Act without reserving it, though this of course does not prevent subsequent disallowance by His Majesty in Council.

Non-essential legislation.—To turn now to the Governor's powers with regard to non-essential legislation. Relaxation of "previous sanction" will encourage the introduction of many Bills in the Council, and they may be amended in a manner which the Governor may not approve. In such cases, power of *certification* has been given to the Governor under 72-D (5) which should be carefully distinguished from the certification procedure of affirmative legislation mentioned above. In the former case a Bill or any clause or amendment thereof (introduced but *not* passed) certified by the Governor as affecting "the safety or tranquility of his province, or any part of it or of another province" cannot be proceeded with.

A Bill may be not only introduced in the Council but passed by it. Then the Governor has either to assent to it or veto it. A frequent use of the veto-power is undesirable. The Governor can resort to an intermediate procedure of *return and reservation*—under S. 81 A (a). He may *return* such a Bill for reconsideration with any amendments that he may recommend or, (b) he may *reserve* the Bill for the consideration of the Governor-General. Reservation is either compulsory or optional according to rules mentioned below. (c) Within six months of such reservation he may again return the Bill for *further* reconsideration, with the consent of the Governor-General. A Bill thus reaffirmed with or without amendments, may be again presented to the Governor; (d) If a Bill, reserved for the consideration of the Governor-General, is not assented to by him within *six* months, it lapses, unless it has been, in the meanwhile, returned to the Council for reconsideration.

Reservation is *compulsory* for Bills (not previously sanctioned by the Governor, but passed by the Council) containing provisions (a) affecting the religion or religious rites of any class of British subjects in British India ; (b) regulating the constitution or functions of any university ; (c) having the effect of including within a transferred subject matters which have hitherto been classified as reserved subjects ; (d) providing for the construction or management of light or feeder railways or tramways ; (e) affecting the land revenue of a province in the matter of period of settlement, or pitch of assessment, or modifying materially the general principles of land-revenue assessment. Reservation is *optional* in the case of a Bill which appears to the Governor (a) to affect any matter wherein he is specially charged under his Instrument of Instructions, (b) to affect any central subject, (c) to affect the interests of another province.

A Bill after it has been assented to by the Governor and presented to the Governor-General for *his* assent or veto, may be reserved by *him* for the signification of His Majesty's pleasure.

The procedure of reservation enables the Governor to ascertain the views of the Governor-General on important legislative projects, and the Governor-General also has the opportunity of examining the Bill at an intermediate stage.

(98) VII—GOVERNOR'S POWERS WITH REGARD TO THE ADMINISTRATION OF TRANSFERRED SUBJECTS.

Finally we come to the duties of the Governor with regard to the administration of *transferred* subjects. During the transitional period of Dyarchy, he is much more than the mere constitutional head of the Province. He is responsible

for the appointment of Ministers who hold office during his pleasure. But he cannot fix the pay of the Ministers which is to depend upon the vote of the Council. The Joint Committee say : "Ministers who enjoy the confidence of a majority in their legislative Council will be given the fullest opportunity of managing that field of Government which is entrusted to their care. In their work they will be assisted and guided by the Governor, who will accept their advice and promote their policy whenever possible. If he finds himself compelled to act against their advice, it will only be in circumstances roughly analogous to those in which he has to override his Executive Council—circumstances which will be indicated in the Instrument of Instructions."—The Instrument says "In considering a minister's advice and deciding whether or not there is sufficient cause in any case to dissent from his opinion, you shall have due regard to *his relations with the Legislative Council* and to the wishes of the people of the Province as expressed by their representatives therein."

The Joint Committee anticipated that the Ministers would generally act together. The experience of responsible Government in England teaches us that it leads to the cabinet system. "It should be recognised from the commencement that Ministers may be expected to act in concert together. They probably would do so; and in the opinion of the Committee it is better that they should do so."

Two principles emerge from the foregoing views of the Joint Committee : that the Ministers should have the confidence of the majority in the Council and that they should act together. It cannot be said that the experience of Dyarchy during its first three years was in keeping with these

principles. This was due partly to the novelty of the whole experiment of Dyarchy, partly to the lack of experience of representative Government on the part of many members of the Councils, and partly to the unwillingness of some provincial Heads to give a fair trial to Dyarchy. Thus there was no formation of parties in the local Councils on recognised *political* grounds. Members formed themselves into groups on *communal* grounds, and naturally the Governor, in making appointments of the Ministers either rewarded outstanding merit or tried to satisfy the claims of different communities. Only in Madras, it would seem, the Governor took the strictly constitutional course of inviting the Leader of the dominant Non-Brahmin Party to form a ministry. The position of Ministers appointed on either consideration was none-too-strong in the Council. The capable Ministers had no following in the Councils, and what I may call "the communal" Ministers failed to inspire and lead members of any but their own communities. The result was that the Ministers came to depend more upon the support of the Governor than upon the vote of the Council and to that extent Responsible Government was shorn of its real value.

Things might have been expected to improve in the recently elected Councils. The tendency towards the formation of parties on political and communal grounds was strong. But an unexpected twist to the political situation deprived the Councils of all their usefulness. In the newly elected Councils, in those provinces where the Swarajists had a majority, (the Central Provinces and Bengal), the respective provincial Heads invited the leaders of those majorities to form ministries but the leaders refused to accept the responsibility of their dominant position.

Nor was the second principle namely of collective responsibility put into practice. In some provinces indeed, e.g., Bombay, it was openly asserted that not only Joint deliberation between the two halves of Government was a rarity but even the Ministers were not encouraged to pursue a common policy. The Ministers were treated as heads of Departments than as responsible Ministers of the Council. One reason why the principle of Dyarchy fell into disrepute was the failure on the part of some provincial Heads to encourage joint deliberation and collective responsibility.

Dwelling upon the relations between the Governor and the Ministers, the Committee say "The Committee are of opinion that the Ministers selected by the Governor to advise him on transferred subjects should be elected members of the Legislative Council, enjoying its confidence and capable of leading it. A Governor will have the ordinary constitutional right of dismissing a minister whose policy he believes to be either seriously at fault or out of accord with the views of the legislative Council. In the last resort the Governor can always dissolve his legislative Council and choose new ministers afresh after a fresh election; but if this course is adopted the Committee hope that the Governor will find himself able to accept such views as his new ministers may press upon him regarding the issue which forced the dissolution."

Political events in India during the last three years have given rise to strange constitutional problems. The Swarajists, (in C. P. for instance) by successfully carrying motions for the reduction of the salaries of Ministers to a nominal sum, showed their want of confidence in them, with the result that the Governor could not persuade any members of the Council to become his Ministers, and had to resort to exceptional powers under the Act. Thus instead of a series of crises

arising between the official half on the one hand, and the Ministers and the Council on the other (the kind of conflict anticipated and provided for by the Joint Committee), we have the spectacle of a dominant party in the Council making "Dyarchy" impossible by driving out of office ministers and by throwing out the budget.

Cases of individual ministerial resignations had occurred in the past but there was no difficulty in filling up the vacancy. But on account of the obstructionist policy of the Swarajists, resort had to be had to the "Transferred Subjects (temporary administration) Rules." They provide that in cases of *emergency* when owing to a vacancy, there is no Minister in charge of transferred subject, the Governor (a) shall, if another Minister is available and willing to take charge of the subject, appoint such minister to administer the subject *temporarily* or, (b) may, if the vacancy cannot be provided for in the manner aforesaid, *himself*, temporarily administer the subject. The Governor has to certify in writing that an emergency has arisen and forward a copy of the certificate to the Governor-General in Council for information. It is *temporary* administration in an *emergency* by the Governor in *person* that must be carefully noted. The *Governor-in-Council* has nothing to do with the transferred subject. Nor can he retransfer transferred subjects to the reserved category. The power of transfer in any case is a confession of the failure of Dyarchy and reversion to the one-man rule of the pre-Reforms days.

It will be observed that this is a *temporary* arrangement. If the ministerial vacancy or vacancies are likely to last long, Rules provide that "the Governor-General in Council may, by notification in the *Gazette of India*, with the previous

sanction of the Secretary of State in Council, revoke or suspend for such period as he may consider necessary the transfer of any provincial subject in any province, and upon such revocation, or during such suspension, the subject shall not be a transferred subject."

(99) **VIII.—GOVERNOR AND THE SERVICES.**

But the difficulties of Dyarchy are not confined only to the Council chamber. The position of the Public Services has been profoundly altered under the Reforms. So far as the transferred Departments are concerned the Services (*a*) must serve under Indian Ministers, and (*b*) instead of initiating policies, must carry out the policies of the Ministers and the Council. Many members of the Services looked with disfavour upon the Reforms not only because their personal position and prospects would be adversely affected by them, but also because they doubted the wisdom of the change. The duty of keeping the servants satisfied has been cast upon the Governor. "The Committee think that every precaution should be taken to secure to the public servants the career in life to which they looked forward when they were recruited. If friction occurs, a readjustment of persons and places may often get over the difficulty, and the Governor must always regard it as one of his most important duties to establish a complete understanding between his Ministers and the Officers through whom they will have to work."

Section 96-B of the Act and Rules made thereunder safeguard the interests of public servants. Servants appointed by the Secretary of State who do not get satisfactory redress of their grievances from their official superiors are to complain to the Governor and obtain justice. Again, no order adversely affecting the emoluments or pensions, no order of formal

censure, or of effecting the transfer of officers can be passed without the personal concurrence of the Governor. The Instrument of Instruction issued to the Governor upon his appointment emphasizes his duties in this connection.

It happened however that even in spite of all these precautionary measures, many public servants could not continue their service under the changed environment of the Reforms. The Joint Committee was not unprepared for this result of the Reforms. "But if there are members of the service whose doubts as to the changes to be made are so deep rooted as they feel they cannot usefully endeavour to take part in them, then the Committee think it would only be fair to those officers that they should be offered an equivalent career elsewhere, if it is in the power of His Majesty's Government to do so, or in the last resort, that they should be allowed to retire on such pension as the Secretary of State in Council may consider suitable to their period of service." Such Rules were made by the Secretary of State in Council on 15th January 1924. It would seem that as many as 337 Officers of the All-India Services prematurely retired from service by the end of December 1923 "in view of changes in the conditions of service occasioned by the Government of India Act of 1919."

On the other hand the Ministers complained of their absolute lack of voice in the appointment of or control over their Servants in the transferred Departments. The whole position was carefully considered by the Lee Commission whose Report is given in a subsequent section.

(100) IX.—LINKS BETWEEN THE EXECUTIVE AND THE LEGISLATURE.

The Reformed Councils cannot be said to have fully served their purpose if they did not afford ample opportunities to the Members to get an insight into the details of administra-

tion and the intricacies of parliamentary procedure. Not only would this make their criticism at once sober and effective, but it would train at least some of them to fill with distinction the role of ministers in course of time. S. 52 (4) provides one method of bringing this about. It gives the Governor the discretion of appointing from among the non-official members of his Council, *Council Secretaries* who hold office during his pleasure and discharge such duties in assisting Members of the Executive Council and the Ministers as he may assign to them. The pay of the Council Secretaries, however, is to depend upon the vote of the Council. Their position is analogous to that of Parliamentary Under Secretaries in England. But this power was not much used in practice. Only in two or three provinces e.g. Madras, Central Provinces, and the Punjab, it would seem, such appointments were made. Perhaps the association of such non-official members with administration is not quite easy during the present transitional period.

We may also refer to the appointment of *Standing Committees* as serving the same purpose. The Joint Committee said "It may often greatly assist the political education of India if standing committees of the legislative bodies are attached to certain Departments of Government." In most Provinces *Standing Finance Committees* which perform important advisory functions in connection with new schemes of expenditure are appointed. In one or two Provinces e.g., Bengal and the Punjab, such Standing Committees were appointed in association with almost every Department of Government.

In the case of Legislation, the practice of referring a Bill, after its first reading to the *Select Committee*, has become too general to require more than a passing reference.

(101) X.—CONTROL OVER PROVINCIAL EXPENDITURE.

Official control.—There is one particular aspect of Administration namely the Financial where the Council has to be most vigilant. This is all the more necessary on account of the relaxation of official control over provincial expenditure in transferred subjects. The place of official control is to be taken by popular control in the Legislative Council. We shall examine separately the control exercised by the official agency and by the popular agency over provincial expenditure. We may consider that control under the following heads.

- (a) Control by the Secretary of State in Council.
- (b) Control by the Governor-General in Council.
- (c) Control by the Finance Department of the Province.
- (d) Control by the Audit Department.

Control by the Secretary of State in Council.—This control will vary according as the subject is transferred or reserved. Regarding expenditure over *Reserved Subjects*, the Joint Committee thought it unnecessary and undesirable to prescribe by statutory rules under the Act of 1919 the extent to which the Secretary of State in Council was to delegate his powers of control to the Provincial Government. But in purely provincial matters where the Provincial Government and Legislature were in agreement regarding the desirability of incurring expenditure on them he may allow the Governor in Council to dispense with his previous sanction if he so desires. But all such delegation must be by executive orders of the State Secretary and not by Rules under the Act.

It is otherwise with regard to the *Transferred subjects*. In connection with them the Joint Committee rightly drew attention to the intention of the Act of 1919 that such expenditure should be, with the narrowest possible reservations, left

within the exclusive control of the Provincial Legislature. But though the widest freedom is desirable the Secretary of State in Council must have some control—though defined by rules under the Act—over expenditure on transferred subjects which is likely to affect the prospects or rights of the all-India services which he recruits and controls, or the purchase of stores in the United Kingdom. In all such cases of expenditure, the *previous sanction* of the Secretary of State in Council is required.

Control by the Governor-General in Council.—He has no independent powers of control now left to him. This is particularly true of *transferred* subjects. Regarding *reserved* subjects, all applications for the previous sanction of the Secretary of State in Council are in the first instance to be made to the Governor-General in Council who may either agree with them or disagree with them. In all cases the provincial applications have to be forwarded to the Secretary of State in Council.

In the Chapter on Provincial Devolution we have already considered the position of the Finance Department and of the Audit Department.

Popular Control: The Committee on Public Accounts.—We then come to the control to be exercised by the Legislature. The enlarged power of voting upon the budget is a way of establishing this control. But as the budget-discussion lasts only for some days, the Council ought to have some means of watching the financial doings, of the executive throughout the year and of getting rectified any irregularity in or departure from a strict adherence to the budget arrangements that it might come across. For this purpose in each Council, at the commencement of the financial year, a *Committee on Public Accounts* is appointed. Its object is “to deal with

the Audit and Appropriation accounts of the Province and such matters as the Finance Department may refer to the Committee." Two thirds of the Members of this Committee are appointed by the Non-official members of the Council, the remaining being nominated by the Governor. The Finance Member is the Chairman of the Committee. It is the duty of the Committee to satisfy itself that the money voted by the Council was spent within the scope of the demand granted by the council. It is also the duty of the Committee to bring to the notice of the Council every departure from the budget arrangement which it may have detected or which the Finance Department may bring to its cognizance. This *Committee on Public Accounts* should be distinguished from the *Standing Finance Committee* which deals with new scheme of expenditure. The Finance Committee deals with *projects* of expenditure, the Committee on Public Accounts deals with expenditure *after* it has been incurred.

(102) XI—CONTROL OVER ADMINISTRATION.

In the Chapter on Provincial Devolution we saw how the control over provincial administration was relaxed. But the Provinces cannot be made quite independent of the Central Government so long as the latter is held responsible to Parliament for the whole of India. The control of the Secretary of State, therefore, must continue, though to a defined and diminished extent. The Joint Committee came to the conclusion that "there was no necessity of disturbing the then existing state of relations, except to the extent to which the Secretary of State relaxes his powers of direction and control over local Governments. To that extent the Government of India also will withdraw from intervention; but India is not yet ripe for a true federal system and the Central Government cannot be relegated to the functions of

mere inspection and advice. The Committee trust that there will be an extensive delegation, statutory and otherwise, to provincial Governments of some powers and duties now in the hands of the Government of India ; and they trust also that the control of that Government over provincial matters will be exercised with a view to preparing the provinces for the gradual transfer of power to the provincial Government and Legislature.”

Now having regard to the circumstance that provincial matters will be henceforward of two kinds—reserved and transferred —it is necessary to examine further the purposes for which the Central Government might interfere with them, for it is evident that the occasion and extent of intervention must depend upon whether the particular subject was reserved or transferred.

In the case of *transferred* subjects, the Government of India and the Secretary of State can interfere only on *specific* occasions. Thus Devolution Rule 49 lays down “ the powers of superintendence, direction, and control over the local Government of a Governor's province, vested in the Governor-General in Council under the Act shall, in relation to transferred subjects, be exercised only for the following purposes :—

- (1) To safeguard the administration of Central Subjects.
- (2) To decide questions arising between two provinces, in cases where the provinces concerned fail to arrive at any agreement
- (3) To safeguard the due exercise and performance of certain powers and duties imposed upon the Governor General in Council by the Act, or by Rules made thereunder.

The case for *Reserved* subjects is not so simple. Here the intervention cannot be limited to specified occasions. The general principle is “ that an official provincial Government must remain amenable to the Government of India, the

Secretary of State, and Parliament in matters in which it is not amenable to the local Legislature." The Joint Committee accordingly laid down : "The relations of the Secretary of State and of the Government of India with provincial Governments should, in the Committee's judgment, be regulated by similar principles, so far as the reserved subjects are concerned. It follows, therefore, that in purely provincial matters which are reserved, where the Provincial Government and Legislature are in agreement, their view should ordinarily be allowed to prevail, though it is necessary to bear in mind the fact that some reserved subjects do cover matter in which the Central Government is closely concerned." Commenting upon the rules made to give effect to this principle, the Joint Committee say : "The Committee consider that no statutory divestment of control, except over the transferred field, is either necessary or desirable. It is open to the Secretary of State to entrust large powers, administrative and financial to the Governor-General in Council and the Provincial Governors in Council ; and he will no doubt be largely influenced in deciding whether or not to require reference to himself in any given case or whether to interpose his orders where reference has been made, by the attitude of provincial public opinion as expressed in the provincial legislative council. But these matters cannot be regulated by statutory rules and any authority which the Secretary of State may decide to pass on to the official Government in India will be a mere delegation of his own authority and responsibility, for the discharge of which in relation to the Central and Reserved subjects he must remain accountable to Parliament."

With regard *both* to transferred and Reserved Subjects the Provincial Governments must supply information and returns in the form required by the Central Government.

CHAPTER XVIII.

RESPONSIBILITY TO PARLIAMENT.

(103)

I—INTRODUCTORY.

In the last section of the last Chapter we considered how and why a certain degree of control will be exercised over provincial administration by the Government of India and the Secretary of State. The reason was that the Central Government and the Secretary of State were still responsible to Parliament for their administration. The essential responsibility to Parliament and not to the Indian Electors is the key note of the changes—or of the absence of change—in the Government of India and the Secretary of State in Council. All modifications (or their absence) in the old order can be shown to be implicit in this fundamental principle of responsibility to Parliament.

The reason for this cautious policy was mentioned in the *Third Formula* in the M. C. Report and was thus enlarged upon by the Joint Committee : “ The problem enunciated by the Announcement of 20th August 1917 was to design the first stage in a measured progress towards Responsible Government. Any such stage, if it is to be a real advance, must, as the Committee conceive it, involve the creation of an electorate, and the bestowal of some share in the work and responsibilities of Government on those whom the electorate chooses to represent its interests. In the present circumstances of India, the electorate must at the outset be small

and the administrative experience of its representatives must be limited. Before, therefore, the policy of His Majesty's Government can be fulfilled the electorate must grow and practical experience in the conduct of public affairs be enlarged. During this period the guardianship of the peace of India cannot be withdrawn from the care of the official agency which Parliament at present charges with the duties of the administration, and the Committee regard it as an essential feature of the policy of His Majesty's Government that, except in so far as he is released from responsibility by the changes made under this Bill, the Governor-General in Council should remain in undisturbed responsibility to Parliament and fully equipped with the necessary powers to fulfil that responsibility.

But from the beginning the people must be given an opportunity, and all political wisdom points to its being a generous opportunity, of learning the actual business of government and of showing, by their conduct of it, to some future Parliament that the time has come for further extension of power."

This dictum of the Joint Committee has led to two peculiarities in the reorganization of the Central Government after the Reforms : The absence of Dyarchy or Dualism in the executive, and (2) a bicameral legislature.

The generous opportunity spoken of in the last sentence of the paragraph has been given in two directions : appointment of more Indians to the Executive Council and the enlargement of the Central Legislature.

(104) II—THE EXECUTIVE COUNCIL.

(Read § 36-§ 43). We considered in an earlier section the strength and working of the Executive Council before the Re-

forms. It consisted of six Ordinary Members and one extraordinary Member. On account of the growth of centralization a host of officials worked under the Members of the Council. The phalanx of Secretaries, Joint Secretaries, Additional Joint Secretaries, Deputy Secretaries, Additional Deputy Secretaries, Under Secretaries &c., of each Member had added enormously to the size of the Imperial Secretariat. Some reductions were made as a result of the process of Provincial Devolution, and further reductions were urged by the Retrenchment Committee of Lord Inchcape. That Committee suggested a regrouping of Departments more in keeping with the Reformed regime and at the same time less costly. One of the last official acts of Lord Chelmsford had been the preparation of a scheme of such redistribution of portfolios. But it was given effect to, with modifications, by Lord Reading. The departments of Education, Health, Revenue and Agriculture were reconstituted into one Department of Education, Health and Land. Similarly the Department of Industries (created in 1921 on the recommendation of the Indian Industrial Commission) and Public Works Department were reconstituted into the Department of Industries and Labor. The Departments of Foreign and Political affairs, Army, Home, Law, Finance, continue as before. A Department has been created for Railways and Commerce. The division of functions into central and provincial, and the process of Devolution shifted the burden of administration from the Central to the Provincial Governments. The Executive Council had to be reconstituted so as to make it suitable for the administration of Central Subjects, and at the same time so as to introduce more Indians into it. The strength of the old Executive Council was restricted to *six* ordinary members of whom *three* were required to be men of

10 years' service under the Crown in India, one was required to be a barrister of five years' standing and only one was by convention an Indian. The Joint Committee accordingly recommended that the limitation on the number of Councillors should be removed, that only three of them should have service qualifications and that the legal qualifications required for the fourth Member may be gained in India as well as in the United Kingdom and that not less than *three* Members of the Council should be Indians. The Committee also pointed out that the Members of the Council drawn from the ranks of the public servants will, as time goes on, be more and more likely to be of Indian rather than of European extraction.

The concession as regards legal qualifications means that eminent Indian pleaders and Advocates can become Executive Councillors even though they were not Barristers. But though the number of Indians has been increased they are in no way comparable to the "ministers" in the provincial executives. They are responsible to Parliament and not to the Indian Legislature.

Leave of Absence.—The other provisions regarding the working of the Governor-General in Council continue the same as before. In one respect, however, the provisions were found to be extremely out of date—namely in the matter of leave of absence to the highest officials in India e. g. the Viceroy, the Commander in-Chief, the Governors, Members of the Executive Council etc. These Officers cannot go Home on leave, during their tenure of office, unless they resigned. This restriction was imposed at a time when the means of communication between India and England were slow and when the officials could not afford to be away from their

service, on account of the unsettled state of the country. But things have now vastly improved ; communications have become rapid and convenient ; administration has been well-established ; above all there are positive advantages in the *personal* exchange of views between the Home Authorities and the Government in India. Nothing, indeed, could be a better proof of the closest dependence of Indian affairs upon the trend of politics in England, and of the responsibility of the Official Executive in India to the Secretary of State in England than the necessity that should have been felt of change in the rules of leave of absence. A Bill to that effect has been passed by the Houses of Parliament. Lord Harris, the ex-Governor of Bombay, characterized the absence of such rules as an anachronism and Lord Curzon—an ex-Viceroy—termed the absence of the means of personal conference and consultation with the Heads of the Home Government an absurdity, all the more glaring on account of the rapid changes that are going on in England. For instance during the three years of office of the present Viceroy there have been as many changes the ministry in England—the Coalition giving place to the Conservative, and the latter making room for the Labour Government. The new rules of leave of absence, therefore, are a striking evidence of the closer relations between the Home authorities and the 'Official' part of Government in India.

(105)

III—THE INDIAN LEGISLATURE.

The second method by which a 'generous' opportunity was given to Indians to learn the business of Government (and by no means as a step towards responsible government) was the enlargement of the Indian Legislature. Under the Reforms of Lord Morley the Governor-General's Council was

so constituted in its executive and legislative character "as to ensure its constant and uninterrupted power to fulfil the constitutional obligations that it owes and must always owe to His Majesty's Government and to the Imperial Parliament." This meant an Official majority in the Indian Legislative Council. But the experience of the disadvantages of an official majority was so patent that the authors of the M. C. Report came to the definite conclusion that no Council the composition of which was conditioned by the necessity of maintaining an official majority would possibly be truly representative of the interests of the entire country. At the same time the responsibility of the Government of India to Parliament was to be kept unimpaired.

Thus the two postulates about the constitution of the Indian Legislature were : (1) There ought to be a substantial elective majority in the Legislature ; (2) and at the same time the Legislature must not be in a position to withhold such funds or to obstruct the passage of such laws as the Governor-General in Council should think essential for the discharge of his responsibility to Parliament.

These apparently irreconcilable conditions were met by the creation of a *bicameral* legislature for India. In most Western countries the legislatures have two Chambers—the Upper and the Lower—and there are great advantages in having two Houses : A better representation of all the interests in the country—particularly those of capital, land, nobility of birth etc.—is secured and the Upper Chamber serves the additional useful purpose of being a 'brake' upon hasty or erratic legislation in the Lower or democratic House.

The M. C. Report, therefore, recommended that there should be two Chambers in the Indian Legislature—The

Indian Legislative Assembly as the lower Chamber and the Council of State as the upper Chamber. But the M. C. Report did not propose to give to the Council of State the full status of an upper Chamber. It was to be merely a chamber that could be brought into effective play for the purpose of passing, on the strength of its official majority, what the Government of India thought to be essential legislation. It was to play the kind of part which the proposed "Grand Committee" was to play in the Provincial Council. Now we have already examined the considerations that led to the rejection of the Grand-Committee procedure in the local Councils. The same considerations urged the Joint Committee to oppose the idea of using the Council of State for securing, on the strength of its official majority, essential legislation.

If not a Grand Committee, what then was to be the status of the Council of State in relation to the Legislative Assembly ? To answer this question we must first of all consider the nature and extent of control which the Secretary of State will continue to exercise over the Government of India. It is obvious that if the principle of responsibility to Parliament was to be narrowly interpreted then the problem of the composition of the Indian Legislature loses half its difficulty and importance. That Legislature cannot be anything more than a mere recommending and registering body, and to the extent to which the Legislative Assembly was made stronger and more elective, to that extent the Council of State was required to be made a narrow and official Body as a counter poise to it. But if the Government of India were to enjoy as large a measure of independence as was yet compatible with their responsibility to Parliament, then the Indian Legislature may occupy an important and unique place under the Reformed regime and the Council of State need not be in that

case a mere glorified Grand Committee. Accordingly the official majority has been dispensed with in the Council of State though, of course, care has been taken to see that the forces that make for conservatism are far stronger in the Council of State than they are in the Legislative Assembly. In most matters the powers of the Council of State are co-ordinate with those of the Assembly. The Council of State is to be a true Second Chamber, its useful function consisting in compelling the Assembly to bestow more reflection and care upon legislative measures. For this purpose it was to be so formed as to secure the services of the best men and as to be invested with all the dignity and position of "a body of elder statesmen." It has been also described as a "correcting" Chamber.

Composition of the Council of State.—The Report proposed that the Council should consist of 50 members with an official majority. But in order to be a true Second Chamber its strength has been increased and the official majority has been dispensed with. It is to consist of 60 members as a *maximum*, of whom not more than twenty are to be officials, and at least thirty must be elected members. (§ 63 A of the Act).

Composition of the Assembly.—The Act (§ 63 B) laid down 140 as the *minimum* strength of the Assembly. This number may be increased by Rules made under the Act, provided at least $\frac{5}{7}$ of the members are elected members, and at least $\frac{1}{3}$ of the other (*i.e.*, nominated) members are non-officials. As a matter of fact the actual strength of the Assembly is 143 as shown in the accompanying table.

INDIAN ADMINISTRATION

Statement showing the Constitution of the Legislative Assembly, (excluding the President)

	NOMINATED MEMBERS.		ELECTED MEMBERS.						Total	Grand Total	Remarks.	
	Non-officials.	Official	Total.	Muslim.	Sikhs.	General.	European.	Land owners.	Indian Commerce.			
Govt. of India	12	..	12	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	12	* Including
Madras	2	2	4	10	3	..	..	1	1	16	20	one techni-
Bombay	2	4	6	7	4	..	..	1	2	16	22	cally nomi-
Bengal	2	3	5	6	6	..	..	1	3	17	22	nated seat
United Provinces	2	1	3	8	6	..	..	1	1	16	19	to be filled
Punjab	1	1	2	3	6	2	1	..	..	12	14	by nomina-
Bihar and Orissa	1	1	2	8	3	..	..	1	..	12	14	tion as the
Central Provinces	1	..	1	4*	1	..	..	1	..	..	6	7
Assam	1	..	1	2	1	..	..	..	1	..	4	result of an
Burma	1	..	1	3	..	..	..	..	1	..	4	election
Berar (C. P.)	..	2	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	held in
Ajmer	..	1	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	Berar.
Total	25	15	40	51	30	2	7	9	4	103	143	

THE INDIAN LEGISLATURE

341

Statement showing the Constitution of the Council of State, (excluding the President)

	NOMINATED MEMBERS.		ELECTED MEMBERS.						Grand Total.
	Non-officials.	Officials.	Total.	Muslim.	Sikh.	Europerian Commerce.	Total.		
Government of India	12	..	12	..	..	..	12
Madras	1	1	2	4	1	..	5
Bombay	1	1	2	3	2	..	6
Bengal	1	1	2	3	2	..	6
United Provinces	1	1	2	3	2	..	5
Punjab	1	2	3	1	1	..	3
Bihar and Orissa	1	..	1	2½	1	..	3½
Burma	1	..	..	1	2
Central Provinces	2	..	..	..	2
Assam	1	½	½	..	1
Delli	1	..	1	..	..	..	1
Total	..	19	6	25	20	10	1	3	59

(106) IV—CONSTITUENCIES AND FRANCHISE.

From an account of the composition of the two Chambers of the Indian Legislature we pass on to consider the method of appointment of the members. The method of indirect election that obtained in the old Indian Legislative Council was rejected. The Government of India rightly observed that the work of the Central Legislature required a wider outlook and higher standard of intelligence than could be provided in the provincial councils. The members of the Assembly must therefore be drawn from a wider electorate with a higher franchise. Thus in the place of the *district* (which is a convenient constituency for the local Council), a *Division* (which is a group of districts) has been substituted for the Assembly and the franchise has been correspondingly raised. The franchise is shown in the table given for the Bombay Council. The representation of the Bombay Presidency is as follows.

Name of Constituency.	Class of Constituency.	Extent of Constituency.	No. of Members
1. Bombay City (Non-Mahomedan)	Non-Mahomedan urban.	City of Bombay.	2
2. Sindh (Non-Mahomedan).	Non-Mahomedan Rural.	Sindh	1
3. Bombay—N.D.	"	N. D.	1
4. Bombay C. D.	"	C. D.	2
5. Bombay S. D.	"	S. D.	1
6. Bombay City .. Mahomedan Mahomedan.	Mahomedan urban.	City of Bombay.	1
7. Sindh Mahomedans.	Mahomedan Rural.	Sindh	1
8. Bombay Europeans.	European	Bombay Presidency.	2
9. Indian Merchants' Chamber and Bureau.	Indian Commerce.	Non-territorial.	1
			12

List of constituencies entitled Sind (Mahomedan)	{	I	representation in <i>rotation</i> <i>N.B.</i> —The first consti- tuency in the bracket elects at the 1st, 3rd and 5th elec- tion, and the second consti- tuency at every even election
Northern D. Mahomedan			
C. D. Mahomedan			
S. D. Mahomedan			
Sind Jagirdars & Jamindars			
Gujrat & Deccan Jagirdhars			
Bombay Mill Owners			
Ahmedabad Mill Owners		I	
			—
			4

The constituencies for the *Council of State* are even more extensive than those for the Assembly and the franchise higher still. The following scheme of allocation of Members for the Bombay Presidency will serve as an example.

Constituency.	Description.	Extent.	No. of Mem- bers
Bombay (Non- Mahomedan)	Non-Mahome- dan.	Presidency ..	3
Mahomedans ..	Mahomedan ..	Presidency exclu. Sind.	1
Sind Mahomedan	Mahomedan ..	Sind ..	1
Chamber of Com- merce.	European ..	Non-Territo- rial.	1
			—
			6

It will be seen that both in the case of the Assembly and of the Council of State the principle of Communal representation has been admitted.

It is always a difficult problem to devise a scheme of franchise that would give to the Upper Chamber members who represent interests sufficiently different from those represented in the Lower Chamber. This difficulty is not confined to India. In all Western countries that have got a bicameral legislature precautions are taken to sufficiently differentiate between the two Houses. In England, for instance, the Upper House is the House of Lords representing the hereditary landed aristocracy in the country. In America, on the other hand, the Senate (the Upper House) represents the individual States and is thus constituted upon the Federal principle.

In the Council of State neither the principle of heredity nor of federation has been adopted. A possible alternative of the representation of the Rulers of Native States was rejected, firstly on the ground that they had recently formed a separate Chamber of their own, and secondly on the ground of keeping the affairs of *British* India separate from those of the Native States. In the end, diversity of composition was secured by keeping the franchise sufficiently high to secure the representation of the Land Holders—the hereditary aristocracy—of India, and the Capitalists—The mercantile aristocracy. The franchise is also based upon special *personal* qualifications e.g. past or present membership of a Legislative Body; past or present tenure of office on a Local Authority; e.g., President or Vice-President of Municipality or District Board; past or present University distinction; e.g., Honorary or Ordinary Fellow of the University, the tenure of office in a Co-operative Banking Society (e.g. Chairmanship) the holding of a title for literary merit e.g., Mahamahopadhyaya and Shams-ul-ulma. The table on page 286-87 will give an idea of the varying franchise as based upon evidence of

- Income for the local Council, for the Legislative Assembly and for the Council of State.

(107)V—POINTS OF DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE COUNCIL OF STATE AND THE ASSEMBLY.

The differential franchise for election to the two Chambers is not the only point of contrast between them. Thus in the matter of *duration*, the council of State sits for *five* years, but the Assembly for *three* years. This secures a proper check over violent changes in the Indian Legislature, makes for continuity of policy and by making the Members of the Council independent of their constituencies augments their authority.

(2) *Presidency*.—The President of the Council is appointed by the Governor-General from amongst the members of the Council and he will generally be an official. The first President of the Lower Chamber, for the first four years, was appointed by the Governor-General. The Joint Committee recommended that the first President should be qualified by experience in the House of Commons and by a knowledge of Parliamentary procedure, conventions and precedents. The M. C. Reforms cannot be said to have fallen upon propitious times, but one of the few things in which they proved particularly fortunate was in the Legislative Assembly's having secured as its first President an eminent Parliamentarian like Sir Alexander Whyte. Subsequent Presidents of the Assembly will be elected by the Assembly and their pay will depend upon the vote of the Assembly.

(3) The title of Honourable is confined to the Members of the Upper House, those of the Lower House being styled M. L. A's, and those of the provincial Councils M. L. C's.

The powers of the two Chambers with regard to Legislation and Finance will be taken up in the following section.

(108) VI—FUNCTIONS OF THE INDIAN LEGISLATURE.

In considering these functions we shall follow the same plan of classification which was found suitable in the case of the Provincial Councils.

- (1) Interrogatory. (3) Financial.
- (2) Legislative.
- (4) Deliberative. { Resolutions
Motion to adjourn.

The procedure, in either chamber with regard to the putting of questions, the moving of resolutions, or of motions to adjourn, is very nearly the same as in the provincial Council and need not be gone over again. With regard to legislation and the Budget, however, important differences exist on account of the duality of the Indian Legislature, which, must be carefully explained.

Legislation.—The proposal to use the Council of State as an organ of Government legislation having been totally rejected, its powers are co-ordinate with those of the Assembly. A Bill, therefore, is normally deemed not to have been passed by the Indian Legislature unless it has been agreed to by *both* the chambers without amendments, or with such amendments as are acceptable to both. A Bill might be introduced in either chamber either by Government or, after due notice (one month), by a private member.

The normal procedure of legislation is as follows: A Bill passed by the originating chamber is sent to the other chamber and copies of the Bill are laid on the table at the next following meeting of that chamber. After the receipt of the copies

notice to take the Bill into consideration is given, and three days after, the Bill is taken into consideration. At this stage discussion is confined to explain the general provisions of the Bill ; but the details of the Bill are not further discussed. Then the Bill is generally referred to a Select Committee. After the receipt of the report of the Select Committee the Bill is again taken into consideration and passed without amendments (if possible), and a message to that effect is sent to the originating Chamber. After being passed by both the Chambers the Bill is submitted to the Governor-General for his assent.

To expedite the passage of a particular Bill, it may be (instead of being referred to the Select Committee of the originating chamber, and later on, again to the Select Committee of the other chamber) referred to a *Joint Committee* of both the chambers if they agree to resort to this procedure by a formal resolution. To such a Joint Committee each chamber nominates an *equal* number of members ; the Committee electing its own chairman.

It is essential to understand the exact meaning of this procedure by reference to a Joint Committee. It is merely a device which enables the chamber in which the Bill did not originate, to take part by its representatives, in a discussion on a Bill at a very early stage of its progress. Such a procedure is resorted to even in the British Parliament when a peculiarly technical or important matter is under consideration e.g. the Government of India Bill was thus referred to a Joint Committee of the two Houses. After consideration in the Joint Committee the Bill is again dealt with separately in each chamber as if it had been a Bill committed to and considered by its own Select Committee. The Bill, when passed by the originating chamber, then goes to the other

chamber and is there passed, amended or rejected in the usual way by that chamber. The Joint Committee procedure is thus merely a device to save time. It does not commit either chamber to what happened in the Joint Committee. Neither does it presuppose any difference of opinion between the two chambers.

But if there be such a difference of opinion, the two chambers may agree to have a *Joint Conference* "for the purpose of discussing a difference of opinion that has arisen between them." At a Joint Conference each chamber is represented by an equal number of members, and the time and place of the Conference are fixed by the President of the Council of State.

Should the Joint Conference fail to remove the difference, the originating Chamber, disagreeing with the amendments made by the other chamber, might again return the Bill to it intimating its disagreement with the amendments and proposing further amendments of its own. If these are not accepted by the other chamber and it insists upon its original amendments, it returns the Bill to the originating chamber with the intimation that it insists upon the amendments to which the originating chamber has disagreed. The originating chamber then may either report the fact of the disagreement to the Governor-General or allow the Bill to lapse.

At this stage it is, that is, when the Bill is *passed* by one chamber but not passed by the other within six months of its passage in the originating chamber, that the Governor-General can intervene to compose the difference between the two chambers. He can, at his discretion, refer the matter to a *Joint Sitting* of both the chambers. The President of the Council of State presides at this sitting. The members pre-

sent at a Joint Sitting may deliberate and then vote together upon the Bill as last proposed by the originating chamber, and upon amendments which have been proposed by one and not accepted by the other chamber. If such amendments are affirmed by a majority of the members present at a Joint Sitting, they are taken as carried, and the Bill also with the amendments, if similarly affirmed, is deemed to have been duly passed by *both* Chambers.

Budget Procedure.—To turn next to the Budget. The way in which budgets are prepared has been already described. In the case of the Government of India, the Accountant-General after examining the estimates as prepared by the Finance Department, issues what is called the 'First edition' of the Budget. It is then considered by the Government as a whole. A 'second edition' of the budget is then prepared containing all changes made by the Government.—The Budget is then ready for submission to the Assembly.

With regard to the procedure of the budget, attention should be paid to the following points. Voting of the budget; votable and non-votable demands; procedure with regard to Finance Bills; powers of the two chambers with regard to the budget; and the enforcing of accountability.

Voting of the Budget.—The Reforms have introduced the important principle of submitting the budget to the vote of the Legislative Assembly. The budget is presented to the Assembly and the Council of State on a day fixed by the Governor-General. It is presented simultaneously in both the Chambers, by the Finance Member in the Assembly, and by the Financial Secretary in the Council of State.

There is no discussion of the budget on the day on which it is presented. After about a week of the presentation of the budget, the Assembly enters upon the *First Stage* i.e., of a

general discussion, usually lasting for two days. Only the main principle, but not details of the budget can be discussed at this stage. The Governor-General has the discretion of abolishing the distinction between votable and non-votable expenditure for the purposes of a general discussion. He usually communicates his permission in the form of a message to the Assembly.

After the general discussion commences the *Second Stage* of the budget i.e., of voting of grants. A maximum of 15 days is allowable, though in practice not more than a week has been given. The discussion on any one demand is limited to two days. If the voting is not finished by a day previously fixed, the President is required to put forthwith at 5 P.M. on that day every question necessary to dispose of all the outstanding matters in connection with the demands for grants.

Non-votable items in the Budget.—Certain items, referred to in § 67A (3) of the Government of India Act are excluded from the vote of the Assembly. The alarmingly rapid growth of the military expenditure induced the Assembly to adopt a Resolution in January 1922 that the non-votable heads of expenditure also should be submitted to the Assembly. The wording of § 67A is slightly ambiguous and legal opinion in England had to be consulted. The upshot of the consultation was that though the Governor-General may, at his discretion, allow a *discussion* on non-votable items, no authority but that of Parliament could transfer expenditure from the non-votable to the votable class. About half the expenditure is votable and the remaining half is non-votable.

The Finance Bill.—In addition to the general discussion on the budget as a whole and the voting of grants, the Legis-

lature has also to consider the 'ways and means' i.e., the programme by which the Finance Member proposes to provide for the expenditure. It is the custom to embody all proposals of fresh taxation in a single Bill called the Finance Bill and leave to introduce it is obtained on the very day on which the budget is submitted to the Assembly. The Finance Bill has to follow the procedure of any other Bill. After leave to introduce it has been granted, there is a general discussion, and then the Bill is taken into consideration clause by clause and finally the schedules of taxes are considered in detail. A general discussion on the Bill as a whole finishes this part of the Budget. The Finance Bill is then sent to the Council of State whose powers are co-ordinate with those of the Assembly regarding Legislation.

As in all Parliamentary countries the Lower Chamber is, in all matters of finance, supreme. In case of conflict between the two Chambers the Upper must yield to the Lower Chamber in the end. Thus the Council of State cannot propose an amendment to the Finance Bill which is unacceptable to the Assembly. For a difference between the two chambers can be removed by one of two ways only viz., negotiation or by a Joint Sitting. But the latter falls out of question in the case of a Finance Bill, because the Governor-General can intervene and call a Joint Sitting for the purpose of solving the deadlock only after the lapse of six months after the failure of either chamber to pass a Bill. A Finance Bill cannot stand for such a length of time (for otherwise taxes can not be gathered) and therefore the Council of State must always assume a compromising attitude.

Powers of the two Chambers with regard to the Budget.—The Budget is presented simultaneously to the Upper Chamber which can hold a general discussion; but the voting of grants

is the special right of the popular Chamber alone. Similarly with regard to the Finance Bill, though it can be introduced in either chamber and the Council of State has the right of proposing any amendments, in practice the Upper Chamber must yield to the superior will of the Assembly.

Enforcing of accountability.—It is not enough that the Assembly merely pass the budget. It must see to it that the budget was strictly adhered to in practice. This is brought about by (a) the statutory position of the Auditor-General, (b) the institution of the Committee on Public Accounts, (c) strengthening of the Finance Department.

(a) *Independent Audit.*—Great importance is attached to an independent audit. In India the Auditor-General is appointed under § 96 (D) 1 of the Act. He is appointed by the Secretary of State in Council and holds office during His Majesty's pleasure. He is thus independent of the Executive in India.

(b) The Committee on Public Accounts of which the Finance Member is the chairman consists of not more than 12 members, of whom eight are elected by the Non-official members. It is to scrutinize the audit and appropriation accounts of the Governor General in Council with a view to satisfy itself that the money voted by the Assembly was spent within the scope of the demand granted by the Assembly.

(c) The Finance Department also has been given important powers to assist the Committee on Public Accounts. It is to the Finance Department that the Auditor-General submits his Report on the audit and appropriation account for being placed before the Committee.

This Committee on Public Accounts should carefully be distinguished from the Standing Finance Committee. The

difference between them was thus explained by the Hon. Mr. W. M. Hailey : the operations of the Committee on Public Accounts are of a *post mortem* nature, that is to say, it only deals with expenditure *after* it has been incurred. The Standing Finance Committee deals with *proposals* of expenditure *before* the expenditure is incurred.

(109) VII—SPECIAL POWERS OF THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL WITH REGARD TO LEGISLATION AND FINANCE.

Having considered the normal course of legislation and the budget in the Indian Legislature, we must now turn to the special powers of the Governor-General with regard to either of them, when he finds himself in conflict with the Indian Legislature. And first with regard to *Essential Legislation*—Either chamber may refuse leave to introduce a Bill or fail to pass a Bill in the recommended form. The Governor-General cannot always depend upon the 'Upper Chamber.' Nor would it be possible to secure the desired legislation by removing the differences between the two chambers in the manner mentioned above. He cannot depend upon the *Joint Sitting* of the two chambers—seeing that the Assembly will generally have a majority in that Joint Sitting. As the Joint Committee said "In all such cases the Governor-General in Council should be fully empowered to secure Legislation which is required for the discharge of his responsibilities ; but they think it is unworthy that such responsibility should be concealed through the action of a Council of State specially devised in its composition to secure the necessary powers. They believe that in such a case it would add strength to the Government of India to act before the world on its own responsibility." § 67 B of the Act lays down the procedure of affirmative legislation by certification and should be care-

fully read. "The Protection to Indian Princes Bill" furnished the first occasion to the Governor-General for the exercise of this power. This Bill was projected by Government to prevent the dissemination of books, newspapers &c., containing matter calculated to excite disaffection against the Princes or Chiefs of States in India. In the opinion of Government this measure became necessary after the repeal of the Press Laws, on account of the Treaties existing with the Indian States, and the Chamber of Princes also had urged the adoption of such a measure. But the Legislative Assembly took the unprecedented step of refusing leave for its introduction. The Governor-General then certified that the Bill was essential for the interests of British India, and recommended it to be passed in the form in which it was presented. It was passed by the Council of State; and despite efforts to secure a compromise with the Assembly, it became an Act without the assent of that chamber.

During the discussion on that Bill the President of the Assembly thus expounded the meaning of § 67 B. Ordinarily a Bill may be introduced in *either chamber*, though it must pass in *both chambers* and receive the *assent* of the Governor-General before it becomes an *Act*.

Now a Bill may (*a*) be given leave to be introduced and passed either in the (originally) proposed or (subsequently) recommended form; or (*b*) be given leave to be introduced but not passed in either form; or (*c*) not be given leave to be introduced at all.

Such a Bill, in every case, has to be sent to the other chamber. If the latter refuses leave to introduce, or fails to pass in the recommended form a Bill passed by the other chamber (*case a*), the Governor-General may certify that the

passage of the Bill is essential for the safety, tranquility, interests of British India or any part thereof, and thereupon the Bill becomes an Act of the Indian Legislature on the Governor-General's signing it, notwithstanding that it has not been consented to by *both* chambers.

If the Bill be one that has not been given leave to be introduced or has failed to pass in the recommended form (cases *b & c*), the Governor-General may certify that the passage of the Bill is essential for the safety, tranquility or interests of British India or any part thereof, and thereupon the Bill shall be laid before the other chamber and if it is consented to by that chamber in the form recommended by the Governor-General, it shall become an Act on the signification of the Governor-General's assent or if not so consented to, it shall be an Act on the Governor-General's *signing* it.

It will be seen that the Government of India Act desires the Governor-General to secure the assent of *one* chamber if not of both, though it gives him the power to pass a Bill, in the absence of the assent of either chamber, by signing it.

Every such Act made by the Governor-General must be laid before each House of Parliament for eight days and receive the assent of His Majesty in Council. This Parliamentary confirmation will be a check upon an extensive or improper use of this power of autocratic legislation. In a state of emergency (e. g. in the case of a Finance Bill), however, an Act may come into operation forthwith, subject to disallowance by His Majesty in Council.

Proceeding to consider the case of *non-essential* legislation—Here the first safe-guard lies in the requirement of 'previous sanction' which is necessary under Section 67 (2). For a Bill which has been introduced in the Legislature but which

the Governor-General thinks "affects the safety or tranquility of British India or any part thereof," a *certification* to that effect will secure its immediate withdrawal. The Governor-General can also 'return' such a Bill to the Legislature for reconsideration. It will be seen that the provisions are similar to those described in connection with the Provincial Councils.

The power of stopping legislation by means of certification should be distinguished from that of affirmative legislation by certification.

To turn to the case of *essential Funds*: Here the Governor-General in Council has been given the power of *restoring* grants that have been reduced or rejected by the Assembly. The power is quite similar to that of the Provincial Governor with regard to the same subject of essential funds and has been already considered in that connection.

The salt-tax controversy of 1923-24 throws light on the relative powers of the two Chambers and that of the Governor General. Proposal to raise the salt-tax from Re. 1-4-0 to Rs. 2-8-0 per maund was made in the Finance Bill. This doubling of the tax was negatived by the Assembly. The Finance Bill was sent to the Council of State and there passed, thus reversing the vote of the Assembly. The Bill was again introduced in the Assembly with the recommendation of the Governor-General that it be passed in the form in which it had emerged from the Council of State. But this motion was rejected. The Governor-General certified the Bill under sections 67 (B) of the Act and thus the salt tax was doubled.

Criticism.—Unfortunately the occasions on which these powers were invoked by the Governor-General were not few

during the short life of the Indian Legislature. "The Protection to Indian Princes Bill" was enacted by this power; the Salt-tax was doubled by the same procedure; and various demands that were reduced or rejected by the Assembly were certified and restored by the Governor-General. It is clear from the frequent exercise of such powers that the absence of responsibility in the case of the Government of India to the Indian people is not imaginary but *real*.

The Assembly's power over the purse is even more limited than that over legislation. Two restrictions have been imposed on that power. (a) On the analogy suggested by the Consolidated Fund Charges in the Imperial Parliament certain charges of a special or recurring nature set out in Section 67A of the Act, e.g., the cost of defence, debt charges etc. have been exempted from the vote. As already noted, the Assembly can only—and this at the discretion of the Governor-General—*discuss* this non-votable part of the budget. (b) And even with regard to the *votable* part, the Governor-General has been given the power of *restoring* any grant which was refused by the Assembly if he certifies that the grant is necessary for the fulfilment of his responsibilities for the good government of the country.

The Government of Lord Chelmsford were opposed to the principle of submitting the budget to the *vote* of the Assembly, as they could easily anticipate the difficulties that would arise if the demands refused by the Assembly were *restored* by the Governor-General. "We are profoundly unwilling to accept the untried restorative power. We believe that such a power could not possibly be used with the frequency that the situation will demand. If we admit that the Legislature may vote the budget, we recognise that the Legislature has nor-

mally financial control, and therefore, may shape the policy of the executive Government except on those extreme occasions when the latter calls up its last resources and overrules the Legislature. To grant such powers to an Assembly whose capacity in matters of Imperial importance is still quite unknown, would, in our opinion be quite unsafe.....A state of sustained hostility must ensue between the Executive and the Legislature unless—and this is in practice the more probable consequence—the normal control of finance, and therefore, of policy passes entirely to the Legislature. What we accept both as regards Reserved and Central Subjects is the *influence* of the Legislature, and what we definitely reject is this *control*. We undertake to weigh carefully the suggestions of the Legislature in regard and finance, and we hold that, in that Government which is the keystone, this is all that can be safely allowed in the initial decennial period.”

It cannot be said that this “Restorative power” has been used sparingly. The Joint Committee had indeed expressly laid it down that the power was *real* and was meant to be exercised ‘if and when necessary’. The Provincial Governors as well as the Governor-General have frequently used the power. The extreme financial stringency—in provincial and Central finance—that synchronised with the first Reformed Legislatures, the substantial portion of the budget that was altogether excluded from the vote of the Councils, and the frequency with which rejected demands were restored went a long way to bring the Reforms into disfavour. Public opinion was well pronounced on matters like the doubling of the Salt-tax, or the appointment of the “Lee Commission on the Public Services.” But in the one case the tax was ‘certified’ and then imposed, and in the other case the demand was restored. This last was definitely a case where the Assembly tried to shape the

policy of the Executive by means of its financial powers but it was not allowed to do so.

The manner in which the Executive allowed itself to be *influenced* by the Legislature was (1) firstly by accepting all-round *cuts* in the budget e.g. the 5 per cent. reduction in all departments in the Central Government ; or the cut of 60 lacs in the Bombay budget two years ago—and in many other cases ; (2) By appointing '*Retrenchment Committees*' in all provinces, the most celebrated of them being that under Lord Inchcape dealing with Central finance. The Reports of these Committees have brought out, in the most pointed manner, how everywhere expenditure has gone beyond reasonable limits, and the Reports have made radical proposals for economy. If only some of these proposals were acted upon considerable scope will have been given to the useful activities of the Councils. (3) By not restoring a demand, where no special principle was involved. e.g. the Assembly's refusal to grant money to Lord Lytton's Committee on Indian students to visit India. The Secretary of State did not press for the visit of that Committee. (4) by not imposing taxes opposed by the Council e.g., the Stamp Duty in the Bombay Council. (5) By accepting Resolutions suggesting important economies or improvements in Finance e.g., Separation of Railway Finance from the rest of the Indian budget, the Fiscal Policy, the Frontier Policy, etc.

In fact the root cause of the failure of the Reforms to satisfy the people will be found in their financial provisions. A proper redistribution of the burden of taxation between Imperial, Provincial and Local authorities—is the *sine qua non* of the success of Responsible Government in India, and no Committee can do more useful work in that direction than the one recently appointed to investigate this question. It

is by far the most important Committee incidental to the working of the Reforms.

(109-A) TENDENCIES IN THE INDIAN LEGISLATURE.

It is important to understand why the Indian Legislature was given the bicameral form. It was felt to be anomalous to leave the autocracy of the Viceroy undisturbed when the powers of control of the Secretary of State were being relaxed and the provincial governments were being made more independent. But as the Central Government was not to be made responsible to the Legislature, only the latter was democratized, the Council of State acting as a check over the Lower Chamber.

But from the constitutional point of view, we get here an irresponsible legislature and an irremovable executive. Conflicts between them on matters of legislation and finance were inevitable and in the end the Viceroy, by his powers of certification, set at nought the Legislature. Though the repetition of deadlocks has contributed to the demand for the amendment of the Constitution, it has brought about a result on which Lord Meston makes this profound observation : "The purpose of the arrangement was clearly to habituate the executive, even in discharging their own responsibilities, to rely more and more upon the support of their legislatures, and less and less upon the support of the British Parliament accorded through the Secretary of State. Under the old dispensation, if a Viceroy proposed to introduce a new policy he had to persuade the Secretary of State of the necessity for it and of its wisdom ; he had also to get the Secretary of State's consent to the measures for financing it. Under the new dispensation the Secretary of State will be difficult to

persuade,* unless the scheme has first obtained the blessing of the Indian legislature. The Viceroy of the future will consequently tend, in increasing measure, to consult Indian opinion first, and to count on its support rather than on the academic approval of Whitehall or Westminster. In precisely similar fashion, the provincial Governors will come to lean on their local legislatures rather than on the Secretariats at Delhi. Thus, under a puzzling constitutional form, there is being effected a remarkable transference of power, or at least of influence so significant as to be barely distinguishable from power. Whether Parliament appreciated the extent to which it is divesting itself of authority over India, may safely be doubted. But it is in this undemonstrative fashion that the future polity of the British Commonwealth is being established."

(110) VIII—CLOSER RELATIONS BETWEEN THE EXECUTIVE AND THE LEGISLATURE.

Though Responsibility has not been introduced in the Central Government and thus though there are no 'ministers' in the Government of India provision was made to bring about closer relations between the Executive and the Legislature. The Executive Councillors are *ex-officio* members of one or the other Chamber of the Indian Legislature. The Act also allows the Governor-General to appoint from among the Members of the Assembly *Council Secretaries* to hold office during his pleasure and to discharge such duties in assisting the Members of his Executive Council as he may assign to them. A few such appointments have been made in the Provinces, but so far no appointment has been made in the Central Government. In fact, a Resolution recom-

* Ilbert and Meston 151-52.

mending such appointments was defeated in the Legislative Assembly. It would seem that the difficulties in the way of making such appointments, both from the point of view of Government and the non-official members in the Indian Legislature are great. That there are advantages in such appointments is clear; the Secretary gets administrative training; he relieves to some extent the permanent officials in the Secretariat; he serves to bring into closer contact the Government with the Assembly. But such Secretaries will be occupying an anomalous position in the Central Executive, particularly as there are no popular Ministers in that Executive. Such a Secretary will have to serve two masters: his own constituency and the political party, if any, to which he belongs on the one hand, and the Government into whose working he has been allowed to pry. There would be also difficulties about his pay. For all these reasons the Assembly did not accept the Resolution.

Finally there are the appointments of various *Standing Committees*. The Government of Lord Chelmsford were originally opposed to such Committees on the ground that they would impede business, induce delay, weaken the sense of responsibility of the executive, open the door to intrigue, and though avowedly advisory in character, will gradually come to engross the powers of the executive."

But in January 1922 the Assembly adopted a Resolution in favour of such Committees and they have since been appointed. They consist of 5 members, three being selected from panels of 9 members from the Assembly and two from the Council of State. They have been appointed to advise on subjects in the Home Department, the Commerce Department, the Department of Education Health and

Land, and the Department of Industries and Labour. Reference has already been made to the Standing Finance Committee attached to the Finance Department.

(111) IX—HOME ADMINISTRATION.

Principle of relaxation of Parliamentary Control. We have now seen how the essential responsibility of the Government of India to Parliament has been secured. But this will place the Secretary of State for India with respect to Indian Administration in a position quite different from that of the *pre Reforms* days. Reference has been made to the rigid control he exercised over that administration and the autocratic position he had come to occupy in his own Council and with respect to Parliament, and finally to the indifference of Parliament to Indian affairs.

Now the *Fourth Formula* of the M. C. Report laid down : “in proportion as the foregoing changes take effect, the control of Parliament and the Secretary of State over the Government of India and Provincial Governments must be relaxed.”

Sir James Brunyate distinguished between three methods by which power could be transferred from a higher to a lower authority namely, *Devolution*, *Delegation* and *Convention*.

Devolution.—Means a practically complete transference of power and responsibility together, such as is effected in the Provincial transferred subjects. In this case what Parliament surrenders is taken by the Provincial Councils. Here the Secretary of State cannot be held continuously answerable to Parliament in any effective sense. But, as already explained, as between the Secretary of State and the Government of India there can be no Devolution.

Delegation.—Consists in the transfer of power in minor matters to a lower authority ; as to an agent by the principal. It does not imply, in its nature, any corresponding shifting of responsibility lying on the transferer who continues to exercise ultimate control.

Considerable delegation of power had been effected even before the Reforms. Its necessity and widening were emphasized by the Reforms.

Convention.—In any case, however, the principle of delegation is of limited application. It must be supplemented by the third method namely Convention *i.e.*, a recognised and well understood practice, which is not hardened into Rules.

Section (19A) of the Act authorizes the Secretary of State to make Rules for 'regulating and restricting' the exercise of his powers of Superintendence, direction and control. It is evident that the occasion and extent of the intervention of the Secretary of State must depend upon whether a subject is central or reserved or transferred. In regard to the last alone *Devolution* is possible. A number of Rules (known as Devolution Rules) were framed under the Act and many of them have been mentioned in their proper place in the preceding pages of this book. In the transferred subjects—the control of the Governor-General in Council and of the Secretary of State has been restricted to specified purposes and within the narrowest possible limits. The Secretary of State can intervene (1) to safeguard the administration of central subjects ; (2) to decide questions between two provinces, failing an agreement between them ; (3) to safeguard Imperial interests ; (4) to determine the position of the Government of India in respect of questions arising between India and other parts of the British Empire ; (5) to safeguard the due exercise and performance of any powers and duties

possessed by or imposed upon the Secretary of State in Council under or in connection with action relating to the office of High Commissioner, the control of provincial borrowing, the regulating of the Services, the duties of the Audit Department and certain other rules.

In regard to the Central and Reserved Subjects, for which the Government of India and the Secretary of State are still responsible to Parliament, the Joint Committee, after the most careful consideration, came to the conclusion that no *Statutory* specification of purpose could be made; but in practice the *conventions* which now govern these relations may wisely be modified to meet fresh circumstances caused by the creation of a Legislative Assembly with a large elected majority. In the exercise of his responsibility to Parliament which he cannot *delegate* to any one else, the Secretary of State may reasonably consider that only in exceptional circumstances should he be called upon to intervene in matters of purely Indian interest where the Government and Legislature of India are in agreement"—and so also in the case of unanimity between a provincial Government and Legislature. An important instance of such a convention is with regard to the fiscal policy of India, to which reference will be made in the next Part of this Book.

Separation of the Agency and Political Functions of the Secretary of State.—Let us next consider the effect of these new relations upon the Secretary of State in Council. As the successor of the Court of Directors and the Board of Control he had come to discharge two distinct kinds of functions—Some were purely of an agency—nature e.g., raising of loans, incurring capital expenditure, purchase of stores for the Government of India, payment of pensions etc.; his other functions comprised correspondence with

India and the exercise of Superintendence, direction and control of the Indian administration.

High Commissioner for India.—Now a clear separation of the agency functions from those of a political complexion is one of the first results of the Reforms. The purely agency functions have been transferred to a High Commissioner for India. Sir William Meyer was the first High Commissioner and the present incumbent of the office is the distinguished Indian Sir Dadiba Dalal. It is no figure of speech to say that the appointment of the High Commissioner for India in London is the outward visible sign in London of the new status of India, approximating her to that of the Dominions. The other Dominions have similar accredited High Commissioners in London and they are a symbol of their independent status. The High Commissioner is a servant of the Government of India and has little to do with the Secretary of State. His pay is paid out of Indian revenues. A number of sundry functions e.g., those relating to the Stores Department, the Indian Students' Department, the training of probationers to the Civil Services, passages, purchase of quinine etc. have been made over to him.

The India Council.—The Secretary of State in Council will henceforward be confined to his proper political function of supervising the Government of India. Now it cannot be said that in the discharge of such functions the India Council (*i.e.*, of the Secretary of State) had played, even before the Reforms, any glorious part. They merely entailed reduplication of work, delay, and a close restriction of the powers of the Government of India. Reference has been made to its method of working through Committees, its weekly meetings etc. The procedure was prescribed by the Act of 1858, and though conditions had entirely changed since then, nothing

had been done to adapt the procedure to the changed circumstances.

Lord Crewe's Committee that was specially appointed to inquire into the Home Administration of India came to the conclusion that there was no constitutional function of the Secretary of State in Council which could not equally well be discharged by the Secretary of State. They therefore recommended the abolition of the Council. This radical proposal was quite in keeping with the Indian point of view—for even the late Mr. Gokhale had said in his 'political testament' that the Council should be abolished and the position of the Secretary of State approximated to that of the Secretary of State for the Colonies.”*

Thus though the case for the abolition of the Council was sufficiently strong, the idea of doing away with a body of more than 60 years' standing was too radical to be accepted by British politicians. It was opposed by authorities on the Indian Constitution like Sir Courtenay Ilbert whose recent death every student of Indian Constitution must lament, and actual administrators like Mr. Austen Chamberlain. The Joint Committee also was not in favour of abolition. “They think that at any rate for some time to come, it will be absolutely necessary that the Secretary of State should be advised by persons of Indian experience, and they are convinced that if no such Council existed the Secretary of State would have to form an informal one if not a formal one. Therefore, they think it much better to continue a body which has all the advantages behind it of tradition and authority.

But though the Council was thus suffered to continue as a *pis aller*, both its constitution and procedure were radically

* Keith Vol. II, 116.

altered. In reframing the constitution the chief object was to bring it into a more living contact with the rapidly changing conditions in India. This was done (1) by introducing more Indians in it, and (2) by shortening the period of service upon it. Similarly power has been given to the Secretary of State to frame rules for the transaction of business in the Council. Thus the necessary amount of elasticity has been introduced into the relation of the Secretary of State with the Parliament on the one hand, and with the Government of India on the other.

Position of the Secretary of State.—For it should not be forgotten that if the Reforms have from one point of view relaxed Parliamentary control over the Government of India, they have from another point of view strengthened that control. "Imperialism" and the Great War increased the interest of Parliament in the affairs of India, and the Government of India Act has thrown upon it responsibilities for the proper discharge of which it must maintain that interest without abatement.

With regard to the Secretary of State his immediate and personal dependence upon Parliament was emphasized in four or five ways. (1) His position as the constitutional head of the Government of India was brought into relief by the appointment of a separate High Commissioner for India. (2) The old myth of the India Council as a statutory check over the Secretary of State with its power of 'financial veto' was openly given up, and the Council was reduced to the status of what it had actually become, namely an advisory body. (3) His salary was transferred to the Home Accounts. Such a transfer was always demanded by public opinion in India, on the analogy of the salary of the Secretary of State for Colonies, on the ground of fairness to the Indian tax-

payer, that England, in justice, ought to bear, on Imperial considerations, what after all was a small sum compared with the enormous advantages she derived in diverse ways from India remaining a part of the British Empire, and finally on the ground that it would make the Secretary of State more amenable to Parliamentary criticism. Accordingly Parliament contributes the sum of Rs. 1,36,500 towards the India Office establishment—the sum including the Salary of the Secretary and the Parliamentary Under Secretary of State for India, and the administrative and political expenses of the India Office. As Ilbert observes, this important change brings the administration of India Office under the direct and recurrent criticism of Parliament, like that of other Departments of the British Government.*

(4) The power of disallowing Acts of the Indian Legislatures—Central, as well as Provincial—has been vested in His Majesty in Council by the Act of 1919. And he is to be advised in these matters by the Secretary of State.

Further the Secretary of State has been given extensive powers of making Rules under the Act, and in the exercise of this function he is required either to get Parliamentary sanction before the Rules are made, or Parliamentary ratification after they have been made.

(5) Before the Reforms India was outside the pale of party politics in Parliament. But an influential section of the Liberal and progressive elements in the House of Commons had always formed an informal Association to represent the claims of India. During the War the advantages of negotiating directly with one or the other Party—and particularly the Labour Party—were emphasized and Parliament itself felt the necessity of taking a continuous interest in

* Ilbert "Historical Survey" 137

Indian problems. The inestimable work which the Joint Committee had done in helping the passage of the Government of India Bill through Parliament obviously suggested the continuance of that method. The Standing Joint Committee does not possess any statutory functions. It has a purely advisory and consultative status. One important function of this Committee is the examination of Rules made under the Act of 1919.

(6) A further development in the same direction is the announcement that the present Secretary of State for India has formed a *Cabinet Committee* to consider Indian Affairs, with authority to consult members of the India Council and others. All these things are an evidence of the quickened interest of Parliament in Indian Affairs.

(112) X—RESPONSIBILITY OF PARLIAMENT.

The measures enumerated above will not, by themselves, enable Parliament to discharge its duties towards India. The Announcement of 1917 declared "that the time and manner of each advance (towards Responsible Government) can be determined only by Parliament upon whom responsibility lies for the welfare and advancement of the Indian peoples. Parliament proposed to discharge this duty by the appointment of a Parliamentary Commission after the expiration of 10 years from the passing of the Act." The Government of India Act with its novel device of Dyarchy in the provinces made the appointment of some such Commission inevitable. "Dyarchy" by its very nature was a transitional form of Government. It was a half-way house to Responsible Government. Sir Courtenay Ilbert compared it "to one of those caravansaries which would be run up rapidly for an Indian Prince to meet a temporary need, and

which could be easily removed or transformed when the need had passed.*

But this temporary structure would not satisfy Indians. Another metaphor would bring out the opposing points of view of looking at the Constitution. The present Secretary of State compared the Government of India Act to a sea worthy vessel and said that it should carry Indians across if only they would get into it and row. To this Pandit Motilal replied: It may be seaworthy but what we want is not only a sea-worthy vessel but a vessel big enough for our cargo, big enough to accomodate the millions of passengers that have to cross over from servility to freedom. (Debate in the Assembly on 10th March, 1924.)

The case for the appointment of a Commission for the revision of the constitution was thus put by Sir William Duke

'It seems certain that the working of a measure which is experimental in character, and even if completely successful will only have provided an instalment of the objects stated in its preamble, must in any case be brought under review, at no very distant date. There are obvious dangers in fixing that date in advance, particularly in case it should prove too remote. These objections should, however, be out weighed by the inducement to make the best of a system which must continue for a definite period, and by the patience which should result from the knowledge that there will be a certain and not too distant opportunity for consideration of the case for further advance.'

The warning here given of the danger of fixing a distant date for revision did not prove unfounded. Within two years of the passing of the Act, the Legislative Assembly passed a

* Ilbert and Meston 13.

Resolution (in September 1921) recommending that the Secretary of State, in view of the progress made by India on the path to Responsible Government, should get a re-examination or revision of the Act at an earlier date than 1929. But this Resolution came after the resignation of Mr. Montagu and the advent of the Conservative ministry to power under Mr. Bonner Law. The Secretary of State for India in that Ministry—Lord Peel—did not see the necessity of amending the Act so soon. He maintained that the Constitution of 1919 was sufficiently elastic, and that there was considerable room for progress within the structure of that Constitution without amending it. Again though the Indian Legislatures had given proof of their merits, the merits and capabilities of the electorate who are the last foundations of Responsible Government were not tested by time and experience. And finally, he argued, that the experience of six months was too limited to form a just estimate of the success or otherwise of the new provincial executives."

Three things happened in the meanwhile which brought the question of the revision of the constitution to the forefront. (1) The dissatisfaction with and open hostility to the Reforms on the part of a small section of the European element in the Public Services were openly avowed both in India and in England. Many were even prepared to retire from the Indian Service; and fewer English youths were forthcoming as candidates for recruitment. The question of the improvement of the prospects of the Public Services was pressed upon the Conservative Government which finally appointed the "Lee Commission" to go into that question. The appointment of this Commission was used as an argument in favour of reviewing the whole Constitution of India. (2) Then the Labour Party under Mr. Ramsay MacDonald

came to power in England. (3) In India, political parties, so far as entry into the Councils was concerned, assumed three forms. (a) There were the "No-changers" i.e., those who did not see any reason to change the Congress creed of boycotting the Councils; (b) then there was the growing party of the Swarajists who wished to enter the Councils with a view to 'wreck' the Reforms. (c) And finally there was the small party of those who had accepted the Councils from the very first. Soon after their entry into the Councils—Central and provincial—and finding themselves in sufficient strength in some of them the Swarajists followed the tactics of 'obstruction' and 'paralysation' of Government, by refusing to accept the responsibility of forming ministries, by making it impossible for the Governor to appoint other ministers, by throwing out the budgets, and by other means. In the Legislative Assembly, largely owing to the personal ability and astute leadership of, Pandit Motilal Nehru after the programme of "wrecking" the Reforms and "bringing the Government to their knees" had been gone through, the following Resolution was adopted: This Assembly recommends to the Governor-General in Council to take steps to have the Government of India Act revised with a view to establish full Responsible Government in India, and for the said purpose: (a) to summon at an early date a Representative Round Table Conference to recommend, with due regard to the protection of the rights and interests of important minorities, the scheme of a constitution for India; and (b) after dissolving the Central Legislature, to place the said scheme for its approval before a newly elected Indian Legislature and submit the same to the British Parliament to be embodied in a statute."

The mode of bringing about a change in the Indian constitution herein recommended is quite different from that con-

templated by the Government of India Act of 1919. The Resolution embodies the principle of "Self-Determination." But this is an ambiguous expression. It begs two questions in as many words, as pointed out by Mr. Curtis—whether the community in question is a separate political unit, and if so whether it is entitled to determine issues affecting other political units as well as itself. The question of Self-Determination does not arise so long as India remains an integral part of the British Empire.

The *Modus Operandi* of revising the constitution must be such as is acceptable to the British Nation and Parliament. As was well pointed out by Sir Shivaswamy Aiyer in the Debate in the Assembly, "there are two ways of achieving self-government: one is the persuasion of the British people, and the other is coercion. The latter is out of question. The intermediate step of obstruction or paralysation of Government is not likely to be successful. The powers of the Governor-General for certification and restoration are sufficient for all purposes. Under certain conditions, *where you have responsible Government*, obstruction is perfectly proper as a part of the game; but where we have still to get full responsible government, then we have to recognise the fact that the matter is in the hands of the British Nation, any policy of obstruction can only lead to one result and will give a tremendous set back to our progress."

In spite of the Resolution of Self-Determination that was passed in the Assembly, the Government of India were not prepared to press the Secretary of State for the amendment of the Act. They adopted a most cautious attitude. They did not even accept the suggestion of getting appointed a Royal Commission to go into the whole question. A Royal Commission is at once a recognized and authoritative method

of proceeding in such cases. And it was in no way inconsistent with the Government of India Act. It was made sufficiently clear that no Parliament can bind its successors, and even the present Parliament is perfectly competent to amend the Act if it wished to do so. But as Sir Malcolm Hailey said "Before His Majesty's Government are able to consider the question of amending the constitution, as distinct from such amendments of the Act as are necessary to rectify any administrative imperfections, there must be a full investigation of any defects or difficulties which may have arisen in the transitional constitution. Neither they nor we would be justified in considering changes to that constitution until they were in possession of the information which our investigations would place in their hands. If the proposed inquiry into the defects of the working of the Act shows the feasibility and possibility of any advance *within* the Act,—that is to say, by the use of the Rule-making power provided by Parliament under the Statute, we are willing to make recommendations to that effect. But if our inquiry shows that no advance is possible without amending the constitution, then the question of advance must be left as an *entirely open* and separate issue on which Government is in no way committed."

It is important to understand the provision of making Rules under the Act of 1919. A merit of the new constitution of India is its *elasticity*. This it owes to an extensive use of what has sometimes been called delegated legislation, not directly by Parliament, but by rules and orders made under an authority given by Parliament. Ever since Parliament has taken to legislating for India, this method has been extensively adopted in dealing with Indian subjects..... the reasons for adopting it being the impossibility of enabling or persuading Parliament to afford the time necessary for

the consideration of Indian details, and the importance of enabling alterations to be made without the passage of an amending Act. Nowhere has the policy of giving and using delegated power been carried farther than in the Act of 1919..... The subjects with which the rules deal are of great variety and importance. They include the constitution and procedure of the Indian legislatures, and the important subject of devolution, and many others.”*

A second reason why a great deal was left to be filled in by Rules was the *transitional* and *experimental* character of the new Constitution. It would be impossible to trespass upon “the overburdened and over-mortgaged time” of Parliament, as Mr. Montagu put it, to amend the *Act*, though a particular defect can be easily removed by change in Rules made under the *Act*.

But we must not be blind to the danger of delegating such extensive powers to the executive. Elasticity may be purchased at the high price of defeating the very object of the Constitution. It is true that the Rules are required to be laid before Parliament for sanction, but this safeguard may often prove useless. It has been complained that the Rules made under the *Act* have “whittled” down the liberal intentions of the *Act* of 1919. Hence the necessity of exploring all the possibilities of transferring power to the people by this process of Rule making. The Government of India were prepared to undertake this inquiry, though not prepared to recommend an amendment of the *Act* itself.

The “Departmental” Committee foreshadowed in speech of Sir W. Hailey was appointed under the chairmanship of Sir

* Ilbert and Meston 28-30,

Alexander Muddiman, the new Home Member, but its deliberations were kept secret. This Committee conducted a preliminary examination into the question and collected material for being placed before a larger Committee which is to consist of 12 members with a non-official majority.

Whatever be the findings of that Committee on the future of the Government of India Act, there is no doubt that it is by making the fullest use of the opportunities given by that Act,—in the Provinces and in the Central Government—and by the persuasion of Parliament as much as by the training of the Indian electorates, that lasting progress will be made towards real Responsible Government.

PART V.

SOME RESULTS AND PROBLEMS OF INDIAN ADMINISTRATION.

CHAPTER XIX.

CENTRAL.

(113)

I—INTRODUCTORY.

We may compare the constitution of a state to a sort of mechanism through which the citizens of that state expend their energy for their moral and material development. The less friction there is in the machine, the more efficient will be the form of Government. In the bureaucratic form of Government the friction is very great because of the inherent opposition between the Government and the governed. The friction is least in the Responsible form of Government because the *people* are the Government. The mere provision of a machine, however, is not enough for the progress of a people. There ought to be a corresponding increase in the fund of national energy. The results and problems of administration, therefore, which flow from the working of the constitution are as important as that constitution itself. Now this is a vast subject, and the very attempt to set forth in a short space even a few of these results is presumptuous. The problems of administration have been rendered more difficult because of the Great War and its results. An ex-

tensive programme of reconstruction lies before the Government and people of India as before every other country in the world. Some of these topics have been lucidly treated by Sir M. Visvaiiswarayya in his suggestive book—*Reconstructing India*; and the activities of Government are neatly summarised in the annual Report of Prof. Rushbrook Williams, the able Director of Public Information. The books mentioned above show what *should* be done and what is *being* done.

It is not proposed to deal exhaustively with the results or problems that are here selected for treatment. It is also not proposed to go into the history of every problem. In fact the object of this Part of the book is rather to give prominence to those problems and results which are of *current* interest. For that purpose only the latest phase of each question is touched upon. In this Chapter the problems of the Central Government will be taken up, those of the provincial Governments being reserved for the next. In the former group will be included the questions of the (a) Foreign Relations and the Frontier Policy; (b) The Indian Army, (c) The problem of Defence, (d) Finance, (e) Railway Policy, (f) Fiscal Policy, (g) the Public Services. The latter will contain (a) Local Self Government, (b) Education, (c) Administration of Justice, (d) Land Revenue.

(114) II—FOREIGN RELATIONS AND FRONTIER POLICY.

Foreign Relations.—Ever since India came under direct British Rule, there has been a great extension of her relations with the Asiatic neighbours, and corresponding increase in her military liabilities and preparations, and, as a consequence, large additions to the burden of taxation upon

the Indian rayat. As Lord Curzon explained in one of his speeches, this extension was due to two causes. (1) The extension and consolidation of the Indian Frontier brought India into more direct and intimate relations with the countries lying immediately beyond. (2) Secondly, the growing interest which the European Powers e.g. Russia, France and Germany began to take in Central Asia produced the same result. To these we may add the increasing influence of Japan, the revival of China under a Republican form of Government, the advent of Russia as a Soviet power, and the great Pan-Islamic Movement that is going on in South Western Asia.

The position of India with respect to the Asiatic and European powers was thus put in a picturesque manner by Lord Curzon : (Budget speech 1904). She is like a fortress with the vast moat of the sea on two of her faces, and with mountains for her walls on the remainder. But beyond those walls, which are sometimes by no means of insuperable height and admit of being easily penetrated, extends a glacis of varying breadth and dimensions. We do not want to occupy it, but we also cannot afford to see it occupied by our foes. We are quite content to see it remaining in the hands of our allies and friends ; but if rival and unfriendly influences creep up to it and lodge themselves right under our walls, we are compelled to intervene, because a danger would thereby grow up that might one day menace our security."

It is the special domain of the Viceroy to watch the Foreign Relations of India with her neighbours.

Frontier Policy.—The problem of the "Defence of India" has been lucidly examined by "Arthur Vincent." He considers that problem under three sections (1) Maritime Defence,

- (2) The Northern, North Eastern, and Burman Frontiers and
(3) The North-West Frontier.

(1) *Maritime defence*.—Though India does not lie directly upon the great sea-routes she lies to a little north of the main track from West to East. The danger of her vast exposed coast-line was well brought out by the adventurous career of "the Emden" during the Great War. But though India cannot be free from such hostile demonstrations on account of progress in naval construction and strategy, it is not likely that so long as England holds the command of the sea, any real danger will come upon her from the Western Coast. A danger from the East on account of the naval programmes of Japan and the United States—is not so improbable and experts believe that the crux of the problem of naval superiority in the Indian Ocean has shifted to Singapore. The present Labour Government has definitely given up the idea of developing the Singapore base. But though no serious danger is threatened to the safety of India from the sea, the supreme importance of protecting her sea communications, her ports and coasts, and the provision of naval bases, dock-yard etc. is clear. The naval expenditure of India was represented hitherto by her contribution of £100,000 towards the upkeep of the East Indies Squadron of the British Navy. But India ought to have her own Navy as the other Dominions have got their contingents. Her approach to the "Dominion" status requires an independent Navy. It is required not only for purposes of defence, but also for the purpose of encouraging maritime enterprize among the Indians.

(2) *The Northern, North-Eastern and Burma Frontiers*.—Not much need be said about the defence of India in these quarters. The Mountain Wall of the Himalayas and the

mediæval condition of Tibet protect India on the North. On the North East the country is equally difficult and inhabited by wild tribes which are kept under control by the Military Police of Assam though occasionally some military demonstration is required e.g., the Abhor expedition of 1911. A considerable portion of the Burmese Frontier marches with the boundary of the Chinese province of Yunnan. The country is not quite so inaccessible and is well adapted for large military operations, but no danger is threatened from this Sector of the Frontier, so long as the Chinese of this region are in their present state of division and political torpor.

The real problem of defence centres round *the North-Western Frontier*.—In the two Chapters dealing with the territorial expansion of the East India Company, India's relations with Afghanistan were traced up to the year 1857. The twelve years that followed the Mutiny were years of quiet on the Frontier. The danger of Russian invasion was in abeyance and what is called the policy of "Masterly Inactivity" of Lord Lawrence held the field. It consisted in the abstinence from any active interference in the affairs of Afghanistan by the deputation of a high British Officer with or without a contingent, or by the forcible or amicable occupation of any part or tract in that country beyond the natural frontier of India ; in placing full reliance upon a compact and highly equipped and disciplined army within or on the border of the country ; in securing the contentment of the princes and people of the land ; "in the construction of material works in India which enhance the comfort of the people while they add to the political and military strength ; in husbanding our finances and consolidating and multiplying our resources, in the quick preparation for all contingencies."

cies which no Indian statesman should disregard ; and in a trust in the rectitude and honesty of our intentions coupled with the avoidance of all sources of complaints which either invite foreign aggression or stir up restless spirits to domestic revolt.'

In accordance with this policy Lawrence refused to do anything more than acknowledge Sher Ali, the son of Dost Mahamad after the latter's death in 1863. Lord Mayo who succeeded Lawrence, generally followed the latter's policy which he summed up in these words : " We should establish with our frontier states of Khelat, Afghanistan, Yarkand, Nepal and Burma intimate relations of friendship. We should make them feel, that although we are all powerful, we desire to support their nationality. That when necessity arises, we might assist them with money and arms, and perhaps, even in certain eventualities with men. We should thus create in them out-works of our Empire and by assuring them that the days of annexation are passed, make them know that they have everything to gain and nothing to lose by endeavouring to deserve our favour and support."

Lord Mayo's Indian career was cut short by assassination in 1872. His successor was Lord Northbrook. But about that time the Imperial party was getting stronger in England and the danger of Russian invasion revived. Lord Salisbury who became the Secretary of State in 1874 fell in with the view of this "forward school" and desired Lord Northbrook to send a "mission" to Kabul. As the latter was unable to comply with this order, he (Northbrook) resigned. Thus ended the period of peace which began in 1858.

Disraeli chose Lord Lytton as the successor of Lord Northbrook because "the critical state of affairs in Central Asia required a statesman" and Lytton was in entire accord with

the policy of Disraeli. In spite of repeated efforts, however, Sher Ali, refused to allow a mission to visit Kabul. With a view, therefore, to isolate Afghanistan and facilitate attack upon it in the event of war, Lytton secured from the Khan of Khelat a footing in Baluchistan. Quetta was permanently occupied by the British by the Treaty of Jacobabad, December 1876. Similarly on the Eastern Frontier of Afghanistan, the valleys of Kurm and Khost were occupied and though in the meanwhile the Russian menace had disappeared, War was declared upon Afghanistan on the 20th November 1878. This war is the Second Afghan War and it was brought to a close by the treaty of Gandmak on May 26th 1879 which assigned to the English the territories of Pishin, Sibi and Kurm and allowed them to have paramount control "over the external relations of the Amir." But Sir Louis Cavagnari, the British Ambassador in Kabul was put to death and the War was renewed. In April 1880 the Conservative Government fell and Lord Lytton also resigned. Gladstone was successful in stemming the tide of Imperialism and Lord Ripon made peace with the Afghans recognising Abdur Rahman as the Amir and withdrawing the army from Kabul and Kandahar.*

Amir Abdur Rahman was a capable Ruler. He established a firm rule in Afghanistan. Though peace on the Frontier was threatened by the continued aggression of Russia which culminated in what is known as the "Pendjeh Incident" in 1885, war was averted by diplomatic pressure upon Russia. Another important event in the regime of Abdur Rahman was the delimitation of the border between India and Afghanistan in 1894. The Border is known as the "Durand Line." "Spheres of influence" was the name given to the new policy which the Government of Lord Lansdowne set itself to pursue.

* R. C. Dutt India under Victorian Age.

" This policy aimed at surrounding India's natural frontier with a belt of country in which British influence should alone prevail. With the dwellers along this *political* frontier no foreign power, Russian, French, or Chinese should be allowed to interfere. The independence of the tribes within this belt was to be carefully respected while the Indian Government claimed to itself the right of making roads through any part of it and maintaining posts at need for their protection."

But the inclusion of places like Chitral, Swat and Waziristan within the British sphere of influence, and the occupation of the outpost of Chitral threw the whole borderland into commotion which was only kept down by expensive military operations. By the beginning of 1898 some kind of peace was established on the Frontier.

Lord Curzon : Frontier policy was one of the twelve reforms to which Lord Curzon addressed himself soon after his arrival in India. His policy has been described as " a common sense policy of concentration and conciliation."* It consisted in the withdrawal of regular troops from advanced posts in tribal territory, and their concentration in posts upon or near the Indian border. At the same time the regular troops were to be replaced by tribal levies trained by British officers e.g., the Swat and Chitral Levies, the Khyber and Samana Rifles etc. Thus the tribes themselves were to be enlisted for the garrisoning and protection of their own country. The second point in Lord Curzon's policy was the constitution of the North-West Frontier Province—under a Chief Commissioner, who was directly under the Governor-General. By this means the relations with the tribes in the five districts of the Punjab were brought under the supervision of the Governor-General. But Lord Curzon was aware

* Trotter 446.

that "Waziristan" was the weakest link in the whole chain. "Waziristan will for some years to come be a section of the Frontier that will require careful watching."*

Third Afghan War.—Relations continued to be of the closest with Amir Habib-Ullah—the successor of Abdul Rahman. During the first years of the Great War, the Anglo-Afghan friendship was sufficiently strong to bear the strain of Turkish hostility. But all of a sudden Habib Ullah was assassinated in 1919, and his successor Amir Amanulla was driven into a war with the Indian Government. But within four months of the declaration of hostilities peace was established and by the recent Treaty the Amir has accepted the principle of interchange of embassies between the two Powers. But though Afghanistan has been converted into a friend, the danger of Russia is not over. It is not now from Czarist Russia that the blow will come, it is expected from "Soviet" Russia. The agents and emissaries of that Government have been continuously busy and it is difficult to say what the ultimate consequences will be of their revolutionary and mischievous propaganda.

The problem of the defence of the N.-W. Frontier was thus expounded by Mr. Denys Bray—the Foreign Secretary in a debate in the Assembly in 1922. He said that it was the region lying between India and Afghanistan that constituted the chief danger on the Frontier. "The wild tribesmen who inhabit this territory have no other occupation but that of raiding, and whenever there is a shortage of food in their barren country, they descend upon the peaceful plains. The danger of the raids has been immensely increased since the Great War and the War with Afghanistan, because it has

* Curzon's Speeches Vol. II, 157.

enabled the tribesmen to secure vast quantities of arms. Not only was the country saturated, as it were, with arms, but two tribes particularly—the Afridis, and the Mahsud and Wazir tribes of Waziristan, got entirely out of hand. Of these the Afridis who are more civilized and better organized in tribes were brought under control by Sir John Maffey. But the Mahsuds and Wazirs—who are at once barbarous and ill-organized—proved obdurate, and the whole territory had to be “occupied.” But the occupation of Waziristan proved a most costly affair and public assurances have been given of a gradual withdrawal from that region.

We have thus passed under review the opposing policies of “Masterly Inactivity” of Lawrence, and “Forward Policy” of Lytton, the policy of Lord Curzon which was a compromise between the two, and the latest phase of the policy—namely the military occupation of Waziristan. The policy has been one of continuous growth and adaptation and the difference between its various phases lies in the degree of importance to be attached to the Russian danger and in the methods of meeting it. The ‘forward school’ maintains that the danger is real and is best met on the farther side of Afghanistan and would not allow the enemy to approach the mountain passes. For this purpose it would annex the whole country right up to Afghanistan and it would spare no effort to keep the Amir an ally of the British Power.

(115)

III—THE INDIAN ARMY.

Reorganization—After the abolition of the three separate armies of Bombay, Bengal and Madras in 1893, the next reorganization took place according to the plans of Lord Kitchner. The Indian army was divided into two parts—the Northern and Southern—each under a General Officer. But

the scheme proved most costly and was not fully carried out. The Great War brought out the defects of the old system, and an extensive reorganization took place after the conclusion of hostilities. Under the newscheme the whole of India was divided into 14 districts grouped into four Commands each district containing a certain number of Brigade commands.

In July 1919 the Esher Committee was appointed by the Secretary of State to inquire into the post-war reform of the army, its relations with the War Office and India Office, the the position of the Commander in-Chief in his dual capacity as Head of the Army and member of the Executive Council, and other matters related with the Army. The Commission pleaded for diminution of the detailed control of the Indian army by the India Office ; and as for the Commander-in-Chief, he was to be the sole military advisor of the Government of India, and to be the administrative as well as the executive head of the army, the Army Department and the Head Quarter Staff being consolidated under him.

It was felt, however, that the Army in India was being increasingly brought under the control of the War Office in London and a series of Resolutions was moved in the Legilsative Assembly by Sir Shivaswamy Aiyar upon the Report of the Esher Commission which asserted that the purpose of the Army in India was the defence of the country against outside agression ; repudiated the assumption of the Esher Commission that the Indian Army cannot be regarded as otherwise than part of the total armed forces of the Empire. Recommended that the Commander-in-Chief should cease to be a Member of the Executive Council and, to emphasize the principle of the ultimate supremacy of the Civil power, the army should be represented in the Executive Council by

a civilian, as in England. It also pleaded for the Indianization of the army.

The Problem of Indianization.—Apart from the economic aspect of the heavy burden of military expenditure, the question of defence demands attention on larger considerations of National policy. Responsible Government is meaningless without the willingness and capacity to shoulder the burden of National Defence. There has, therefore, been a steady demand that Indians should take their proper part in defending their country. This demand has taken two distinct shapes: a request for the rapid Indianization of the Army and (2) the extension of the existing facilities for training Indians in the Territorial Force.

Indianization.—Now it has to be clearly understood that Indianization is a process which relates only to the Indian Army. It is in no way connected with the British units which serve in India or with the question of reducing their number. The question of Indianization arises only in regard to a specific portion of the Army in India—namely the *Indian Army*, and the object is the replacement of British officers of the Indian army by Indian officers holding King's Commission.

(1) The first steps taken were the giving of Honorary King's Commissions, mainly as War-rewards, to Indian Officers holding the Viceroy's Commissions in the Indian Army. (2) The full King's Commissions were also given to about 16 Indian officers. (3) A number of Indian Cadets was sent to the Royal Military College at Sandhurst for training and qualification for the King's Commission. (4) But the most important step was the establishment of the Prince of Wales Royal Indian Military College at Dehradun for the training of Indian youths aspiring for a Military career. It is impos-

sible to overemphasize the necessity of education in the case of such youths. Certain mental qualities—like initiative, resolution, coolness of judgment, and capacity to command have to be developed ; and again the scientific and technical aspects of military organization and equipment have to be understood. A high degree of education is required for both these purposes. (5) The Government contemplate the establishment of other military institutions providing education preliminary to that to be obtained at Dehradun. (6) This is by way of providing the means. As for goal, Government have selected eight units-Infantry and Cavalry to be completely Indianized in the course of about 25 years- or even a *shorter* period if Indian officers of outstanding merit were available.

The Indian Territorial Force.—Units have been formed in the different provinces and their total strength is above 11,000. The officers for these are to be found from the Training Corps attached to the Indian Universities and their popularity among the College students augers well for the satisfaction of the Indian demand for military careers for Indians—A Committee has recently been appointed (containing as Indian members, Sir Shivaswamy Aiyar and Dr. R. P. Paranjpye) to explore the possibilities of the Territorial Force.

(116)

IV—FINANCE.

Growth in expenditure.—It is not proposed to go here into the details of Indian finance. Reference has been made to the complete separation of the revenues of the Central and Provincial Governments and to the system of provincial contributions.

For some years past, mainly on account of the conditions arising out of the Great War, the Government of India were

having heavy deficits. Expenditure was allowed to increase in Civil and Military Departments and no attention was paid to popular demand for economy. A new leaf was turned with the arrival of Sir Basil Blackett as Finance Member. In his first Budget Speech he drew a dismal picture of Indian Finance. The accumulated total of the annual deficit was no less than 100 crores in spite of the fact that additional taxation to the extent of 60 crores had been imposed up to 1922-23. He also referred to the growth of the unproductive National Debt of India. The Debt was 411 crores on 31 March 1914; it was 781 crores in 31st March 1923 of this 557 is classed as productive and 224 as unproductive. Thus there has been an increase of 370 crores in 9 years.

INCHCAPE COMMITTEE:—The pressure of the Legislative Assembly and the anxiety of the Government for economy led to the appointment of the Inchcape Committee whose Report is a very valuable document. The financial house of the Central Government is being set in order in the light of the recommendations of that Committee. Sir Purushottamdas Thakordas was one of the members of this Committee.

Military Expenditure.—The outstanding feature is the inordinate growth in the Military expenditure. It can be traced to five main causes:

- (1) The general rise in prices.
- (2) The enhanced rates of pay granted to all ranks.
- (3) Improvements in the standard of comfort of the troops.
- (4) Additions to and improvements in equipment, and the adoption of a higher standard of training.
- (5) The increase in non-effective charges from 5 crores before the war to 9 crores at the present time.

The Frontier Policy of the Government of India has of course a close bearing upon the military expenditure. But the Inchcape Committee was informed that there was no idea in the mind of the Government of India of continuing a forward policy of military domination upto the Durand line at the present time, and that the idea has been abandoned.

With regard to military expenditure the Inchcape Committee say : The expenditure which has been incurred in the past may have been inevitable, but the question is whether India can afford to maintain the military expenditure on the present scale as an insurance against future eventualities. In our opinion repeated huge deficits of the last few years have made it abundantly clear that India cannot afford this expenditure. So long as peace conditions obtain the first essential is for India to balance her budget and this can only be secured by a very substantial reduction in the military estimates. After suggesting various economics the commission come to the conclusion that with a fall in prices, it should be possible to reduce the military budget to Rs. 50 crores. Even this amount is excessive and a strict eye should be maintained on the growth of military expenditure.

It would be impossible to treat, within the bounds of this volume, the causes of the growth of expenditure in other Departments of the Government of India.

From the expenditure side we pass on to the Revenues.

Heads of Revenue.—Among the principal heads of revenue of the Central Government are customs, Income-tax, salt, opium.

Customs.—Until recent years the import and export duties were laid upon goods entirely for the purposes of revenue, and during the Great War, they were greatly increased to meet

the enhanced expenditure. The schedule of taxes was raised successively in 1916-17, in 1917-18 and again in 1921-22. In the latter year the general *ad valorem* duty was 11 p.c.; a special duty was imposed upon matches and liquor. The duty was 20 p.c. on certain articles of luxury; it was 15 p.c. on sugar; the duty on tobacco was raised by 50 p.c. In 1922-23 the general duty was raised from 11 to 15 p.c. that on sugar to 25 p.c. and on articles of luxury to 30 p.c. The estimated revenue from the customs in 1923-24 is Rs. 45,09,41,000.

Income-Tax.—This tax also has been repeatedly increased. It is now a progressive tax. Incomes below Rs. 2,000 are exempt from taxation; those between 2000 to 50,000 have to pay a tax from 5 pies in the rupee to one anna and six pies in the rupee. For incomes exceeding Rs. 50,000 there is a super-tax of one anna in the rupee. The super-tax is also a graduated tax increasing from one anna in the rupee to six annas in the rupee; the total yield of Income-tax in 1922-23 was Rs. 22,11,39,000.

Salt.—The duty was progressively reduced from Rs. 2-8-0 in 1903 to Rs. Re. 1-0-0 in 1916. In 1917 it was raised to Re. 1-4-0. In 1923 the duty was doubled under circumstances already narrated. It was reduced by 8 as. in 1924 March. The estimated Salt revenue in 1923-24 is Rs. 11,75,00,000.

With regard to the Heads of revenue of the Central Government, it should be noted that a new agency has been created for their collection. The Finance Department is not suited for work of this kind. A Central Board of Revenue of two members has been recently instituted for the collection of customs, Salt tax, Income-tax, Stamps, opium &c.

Now as the opium revenue is a vanishing quantity, and as the limits of taxation seem to have been reached under other

heads, the problem of Central Finance becomes one of great difficulty. The feeling is that the distribution of the burden of taxation upon the various sections of the population is not equal; that probably the burden has reached its limit; also that the proceeds of taxation is not satisfactory, as between the Central, Provincial, and Local bodies and it was to investigate into these questions that the taxation Committee was recently appointed. The Resolution appointing the Committee says:

"that the question of instituting a scientific inquiry into the system of Indian taxation has recently attracted considerable attention in the country and has been discussed on more than one occasion in the Indian legislature. The Government of India are now in a position to announce that arrangements have been made for such an inquiry.

The motive for the appointment is not any need for meeting additional expenditure or any intention to increase the total amount raised by taxation in India. The necessity for the inquiry arises largely from the effect produced by the War on the general level of prices and of expenditure, and consequently on the incidence of taxation in its existing, forms. The problems arising therefrom are common to many countries but in India the changes which have been made since the War in the relation between the Central and the Provincial Governments and the development of self-government furnish special reason for the study of the subject of taxation in general and for an examination of alternative sources from which to raise money to meet the expenditure which is necessary to be incurred by the various taxing authorities at the present time.

The increasing pressure for a more drastic regulation of the liquor traffic in particular makes necessary the study of

alternative sources of taxation. The system of taxation which may be expected to result from the action taken on the recommendations of the Indian Fiscal Commission and the Tariff Board will disturb the distribution and affect the real burden of taxation borne by the people of India.

The following are the terms of reference to the Committee:—

(1) To examine the manner in which the burden of taxation is distributed at present between the different classes of the population.

(2) To consider whether the whole scheme of taxation, central, provincial and local is equitable and in accordance with economic principles and if not in what respects it is defective.

(3) To report on the suitability of alternative sources of taxation.

(4) To advise as to the machinery required for the imposition, assessment and collection of taxes old and new.

(5) To prepare rough estimates of the Financial effects of the proposals.

(6) To include in the inquiry consideration of the Land Revenue only so far as is necessary for a comprehensive survey of the existing conditions.

The terms of reference have been formally accepted by all the provincial Governments without prejudice to their claims in regard to distribution on the total revenues.

It will be observed that the Committee will have no concern with expenditure, nor will it be part of their function to examine the adequacy of the resources of the different governing bodies. Their concern will be primarily with the burden imposed on classes of the population without regard to territorial limits. The estimate they will frame will be designed to illustrate the methods of easing the burden where it is too heavy and of increasing it where it is too

light. They will indicate theoretically the correct distribution of taxes between the Imperial, Provincial and Local authorities and the most efficient machinery for collection whether it follows the same lines of division or not.

It will thus be no part of the duties of the Committee to consider the equity of the Meston Award. Similarly, as regards Land Revenue, the Committee will not be required to make suggestions regarding the system of settlement, but it will be within the scope of the enquiry to study the incidence of the Land Revenue (including water rates) and to point out any defects from the point of view of the canons of taxation of any difficulties in the readjustment of the burden of taxation. It will be within the terms of reference of the Committee to institute such an enquiry into the economic conditions of the people as the Committee may consider necessary for its purpose, and to report on the adequacy of the material already available making suggestions as to the best manner in which it may be supplemented and the most suitable agency for a wider economic enquiry."

Railways.—Without going into the various systems under which Railways were built in India, we shall consider here the chief problems of Railway management and the results of administration.

			1922-23.	1921-22
Total mileage open	37,618	37,266		
Total Capital outlay	669 crores	648 crores.		
Gross earnings	106 "	93 "		
Working expenses	73 "	71 "		
Net earnings	33 "	22 "		
% of working expenses	69 %	76%		
% of working expenses to total capital outlay	4.88 %	3.41%		

The major part of the Railway lines is owned by the State—though managed by Companies that have their Boards of Directors in London. The original contracts made with these Companies came up for renewal and revision before Government, and the question is naturally raised as to what should be the best method of Railway management—whether they should be directly managed by the State, or by private companies and whether the companies should have their domicile in England or India. In any case what should be the nature of the organization by which the Government of India should attend to its ever-increasing responsibilities with regard to Railways in the land.

A Committee was appointed in 1920 with Sir William A. Acworth as chairman, among its members being the Hon. V. S. Shastri, Mr. (now Sir) Purushottamdas Thakordas, and Sir R. N. Mookerji. Indian opinion was generally in favour of Nationalization of the Railways. But the Committee were not unanimous on the question of Railway management. Though they agreed that the time has come for abolishing the management of Railway lines through companies domiciled in England, four members (including the chairman) were for State management, and 5 members were for company management—but the companies were to have their head-quarters in India.

But the Government have now definitely adopted the principle of state-management. The contracts with two big Companies—the East India and the Great Indian Peninsula Railway are over and these railways will be now under State management. There was a great discussion over this question in the Legislative Assembly, and as Sir Charles A. Innes confessed the departure from policy caused him great searching of heart.

With regard to the machinery by which Government should administer Railways the Acworth Report is more unanimous. Ever since 1905 there has been a Railway Board consisting of a chairman, two members, and a Secretary, with the Government of India. It was under the control of the Member in charge of the Department of Commerce and Industries. In 1908 the chairman of the Board was made a Secretary to Government with the right of independent access to the Viceroy, and he was also appointed a member of the Indian Legislative Council to represent Railway interests. It was felt, however, that adequate justice was not done to the importance of Railways. The Acworth Committee recommended the creation of a Department of Communications in charge of a separate Member of the Executive Council, and the substitution of a Railway Commission of five members, for the existing Board of three members. They also advised the early appointment of a Chief Commissioner of Railways who was to prepare a scheme for the reorganization of the Railway Department. The Chief Commissioner has since been appointed, and so also a Financial Commissioner since April 1923.

INCHCAPE COMMITTEE ON RAILWAY POLICY

The Inchcape Committee made some valuable remarks upon the position of these two officers. The Chief Commissioner is responsible under the Government of India for arriving at decisions on technical questions and he is solely responsible for advising the Government of India in matters of railway policy. Considering the enormous stake which the Government of India have in the Railways and the financial relations which exist between the Government and the Railways, Government must have their own advising and

controlling officer. With him should be associated the Financial Commissioner 'in order to ensure that financial considerations are given their due weight in the exercise by the Chief Commissioner of his proper functions.'

Another recommendation of the Acworth Committee that has since been adopted is the Separation of Railway Finance from that of the Central Government.

Capital Programme.—The Government of India had decided to provide 150 crores of Rupees to be spent in five years from 1922-23 in rehabilitating the Railways that are already under use. But in the first year not more than 12 crores could be thus spent. In March 1923 the Inchcape Committee submitted its Report and it was most critical of the Railway management of the Government of India. It will be useful to summarise here their main recommendations.

(1) Curtailment of working expenses of Railways so as to ensure an average return of $5\frac{1}{2}$ p.c. on the capital expended on Railways. The Railways were actually earning 5 p.c. before the War and every effort should be made to secure the $5\frac{1}{2}$ p.c.

(2) The policy of spending annually 30 crores on the old lines should be abandoned. Many of the old lines are not remunerative and it is absurd to sink more capital in them unless absolutely necessary to do so. Each Railway should provide for its own repairs and maintenance. Fresh capital should be spent on the construction of new lines that promise to be remunerative.

(117)

V—FISCAL POLICY

Advent of Protection—One of the most deplorable results of the advent of British Rule in India has been the destruction of

her indigenous industries. Indian opinion, rightly or wrongly, attributed this to the adoption of a Free Trade policy by the Government of India, which has been the traditional policy of England for so many years. But many causes combined during the last few years to bring into special prominence the question of the fiscal policy most suitable to India. (1) The Great War showed how the very existence of nations in Modern times is bound up with an all-round and up-to-date progress in industrial matters. It was mainly on account of this experience that the Government of India had to appoint the Industrial Commission to inquire into the possibilities of development of Indian industries. But this Commission was precluded from examining the fiscal policy of India. (2) The declared policy of Parliament to give Responsible Government to India was bound to have important influence upon a number of problems of a social and economic character and the authors of the Reforms as well as the Report of the Joint Parliamentary Committee had to consider the fiscal policy of India. Important witnesses like Sir James Brunyate declared before the Joint Committee that the value of the Reforms will be seriously compromised if they were not accompanied by a definite assurance regarding India's fiscal policy.

The Joint Committee the Fiscal Policy:—The Joint Committee accordingly laid down the following dictum : " A satisfactory solution of the question of fiscal autonomy can only be guaranteed by the grant of liberty to the Government of India to devise those tariff arrangements which seem best fitted to India's needs as an integral part of the British Empire. It cannot be guaranteed by statute without limiting the ultimate power of Parliament to control the administration of India, and without limiting the power of veto which rests in

the Crown ; and neither of these limitations finds a place in any of the statutes in the British Empire. It can only therefore be assured by the acknowledgment of a convention. Whatever be the right fiscal policy of India, for the needs of her consumers as well as for her manufacturers, it is quite clear that she should have the same liberty to consider her interests as Great Britain, Australia, New Zealand, Canada and South Africa have. In the opinion of the Committee, therefore, the Secretary of State should as far as possible avoid interference in this Subject when the Government of India and its Legislature are in agreement, and they think that his intervention when it does take place, should be limited to safeguarding the international obligations of the Empire, or any fiscal arrangements within the Empire to which His Majesty's Government is a ' party.'

(3) The next cause was the appointment of the Indian Fiscal Commission under the chairmanship of the Hon. Sir Ibrahimi Rahimtulla and it came unanimously to the conclusion that the policy of protection was best suited to the condition of India and that it should be applied with discrimination.

(4) Fourthly, eversince the War there has been in England—the Home of Free Trade—a strong reaction in favour of Protection.

(5) And finally, largely on account of financial stringency, the Indian Tariffs had undergone a great change as shown above. It was inevitable, that in view of such wide variations in the duties, the question of levying the duties on other than purely revenue considerations should arise.

And a Resolution definitely recommending the adoption of a Protectionist policy for India was moved in the Legisla-

tive Assembly on 16th Feb. 1923 by Mr. Jamnadas Dwarakadas. In its place was substituted the following, which represented the considered policy of the Government of India—

That the Assembly recommends to the Governor-General-in-Council.

- (a) That we accept in principle the proposition that the fiscal policy of the Government of India may legitimately be directed towards fostering of the development of industries in India;
- (b) That in the application of the above principle of protection, regard must be had to the financial needs of the country and to the present dependence of the Government of India on import, export and excise duties for a large part of its revenue;
- (c) That the principle should be applied with discrimination, with due regard to the well-being of the community and subject to the safeguards suggested in paragraph 97 of the Report of the Fiscal Commission.
- (d) That in order that effect may be given to these recommendations, a Tariff Board should be constituted for a period not exceeding one year in the first instance, that such Tariff Board should be purely an investigating and advising body and should consist of not more than three members, one of whom should be a Government official, but with power, subject to the approval of the Government of India to co-opt other members for particular inquiries."

As the Hon. Sir C. A. Innes said, this announcement, embodying a departure from the traditional policy, marks an epoch in the fiscal history of India. The first three clauses

embody the principle of protection with the proper safeguards ; the fourth shows how the principle is to be applied in practice. We must decide what industries need and deserve protection and what kind and measure of protection they should get. It is the province of the Tariff Board to investigate these two questions.

The Tariff Board was accordingly appointed—one of its members being the Hon. Prof. V. G. Kale. During its first year it investigated the condition of the Indian Steel Industry with special reference to the Steel Works at Jamshedpur. The Board recommended the imposition of protection duty on steel and a Bill to that effect has been passed by the Legislative Assembly.

(118)

VI—THE PUBLIC SERVICES.

As Means to Self-Government :—We explained in an earlier section why the number of Indians admitted into the Public Services (*i.e.*, their Indianization) was very meagre up to the publication of the Report of Mr. Montagu and Lord Chelmsford. Lord Chelmsford declared in the Viceregal Council in 1917 September that the employment of Indians in more responsible positions under the Government was one of the methods of advancing towards self-Government. Thus increasing Indianization of the services is at once an end in itself and a means to the attainment of Self-Government. As the M. C. Report puts it : “ The success of the new policy which has been adopted towards India very largely depends on the extent to which it is found possible to introduce Indians into every branch of administration. It is a great weakness of public life in India to-day that it contains so few men who have found opportunity for practical experience of the problems of administration. Although there are distinguished

exceptions principally among the Dewans of Native States, most Indian public men have not had an opportunity of grappling with the difficulties of administration, nor of testing their theories by putting them into practice. Administrative experience not only sobers the judgment, and teaches appreciation of the practical difficulties in the way of the wholesale introduction of reforms however attractive, and the attainment of theoretical ideals, but by training an increasing number of men in the details of day-to-day business it will eventually provide India with public men versed in the whole art of Government. If responsible Government is to be established in India there will be a far greater need than is even dreamt of at present for persons to take part in public affairs in the Legislative Assemblies and elsewhere ; and for this reason the more Indians we can employ in the public services the better. Moreover it would lessen the burden of Imperial responsibilities if a body of capable Indian administrators could be produced."

There should be more Indians not only in the routine business of administration, but also in responsible posts in the Secretariat. It was with this object in view that the Right Hon. Mr. Shastri moved a Resolution in the Council of State that such posts should be thrown open to Indians "to give them an insight into the larger problem of Imperial administration and policy." It was also the faint realization of this aspect of Indianization that urged a member of the Legislative Assembly to move that in the composition of the public services "a fair chance should be given to candidates of different *communities* and *provinces*." It is clear, however, that the drawbacks of making appointments to the public service on communal grounds are more serious than those resulting from making similar appointments to the Legisla-

ture. The whole position was put by Sir Malcolm Hailey in the following words : "The public services should be recruited on the principle that they should be filled by the most competent men available. This principle is, however, subject to modification in the interest of the training of Indians in the administration of their own affairs. Full opportunities should be afforded to Indians to qualify themselves for the more important posts in the public services and to demonstrate their fitness for responsible duties. It must however, be recognized that intellectual qualifications combined with physical capacity should not be the sole test for admission to important posts in the public services. Due regard must also be given to such considerations as character and hereditary connection of the candidates both with Government and the people with whom their work will mostly lie ; while in the present condition of India it is essential that there should not be an undue predominance of any one class or caste."

Resolution of December 1920—The Authors of the Joint Report were satisfied that a proportion of 48 p.c. of posts held by Indians in the course of ten years following the inauguration of the Reforms would meet the situation satisfactorily. In the light of this recommendation a Resolution was issued in December 1920 explaining the new principles of recruitment and organisation of the Civil Service. The insistent demand for simultaneous competitive examination in India was partially conceded. In addition to this method, there was also adopted the method of *nomination* with a view to secure the representatives in the Services of various provinces and communities, of *promotion from the Provincial Service*, and finally *recruitment from the Bar*.

Position of Europeans :—The infusion of more Indians into the Services by one or the other of the above methods though it was not sufficiently rapid or uniform in all grades of the Services—in its turn gave rise to new problems. “What was to be the position of the British Servants in the Services who were made amenable to the control of Indian ministers? Reference has been made to this problem of the Public Services and to the personal responsibilities of the Governor to secure their contentment. The reluctance of Europeans to join or continue in the Public Services was strengthened by the increased cost of living in India.

Government on a Dilemma :—The Government of India were thus faced with a dilemma—demand for more and more Indianization on the one hand, and demand for improvement of pay and other prospects to compensate for all those factors that made Civil Service in India less attractive to Europeans. These circumstances prompted the Government of India to address a letter at the end of May 1922 to the provincial governments which became famous as the “O'Donnell circular.” This document reviewed, and invited the opinion of the Provincial Governments upon, the various considerations involved in the question of Indianization in order that the Government of India might consider the whole position. “The letter which had not been written for publication was given to the world through journalistic enterprise.*” There was great agitation over the publication of this circular. The agitation was intensified by the famous “Steel Frame speech” of Mr. Lloyd George in August 1922. He said that the Reforms were an “experiment” and that the “Steel Frame of British Civil Service” must be maintained for all time to come with its existing rights, privileges,

* India in 1922-23, Page 280.

and functions. It was argued that this speech was inconsistent with the declared policy of Parliament, and with the Indianization of the Services. The Viceroy, however, removed the fears caused by the speech by making public an assurance from Mr. Lloyd George that he never intended to say anything that was in conflict with the declared policy of His Majesty's Government.

The Lee Commission ;—Though the Secretary of State was not prepared to inquire into the Government of India Act with a view to its amendment on the plea that sufficient experience was not yet gained of the Reforms, it was not felt wise to postpone a similar inquiry into the position and prospects of the Public Services in India even though the Indian Legislature was quite opposed to such an inquiry. Sir Malcolm Hailey made the following announcement on 25th January 1923 in the Assembly. "His Majesty's Government have decided to appoint a Royal Commission on the Services in India, which will have, in view of the necessity of maintaining a standard of administration in conformity with the responsibilities of the Crown for the Government of India and the declared policy of Parliament in respect of the increasing association of Indians in every branch of the administration, and having particular regard to the experience gained by the operation of the system of Government under the Government of India Act, to inquire into the organization and the general conditions of Service, financial and otherwise, of the superior Civil Services in India, and the best methods of ensuring and maintaining the satisfactory recruitment of such numbers of Indians and Europeans respectively as may now be decided to be necessary in the light of the considerations above referred to."

The Royal Commission was presided over by the Right Hon. Viscount Lee of Fareham and amongst its members we may mention Mr. N. M. Samarth, Sir Reginald Craddock Mr. Bhupendra Nath Basu, and Prof. Coupland. The Commission commenced its inquiry on November 4 and signed its Report on March 29. It is a unanimous document, and a brief outline is given below of its main recommendations.

GENESIS OF THE COMMISSION.

The report commences with a reference to the genesis of the Commission. The appointment of the McDonnel Committee by the Secretary of State to enquire into the impediments to recruitment in England and the issue of the O'Donnell circular by the Government of India regarding the acceleration of Indianization showed that both the authorities had been obliged to reconsider the whole question of the Services within 4 years of the passing of the Reform Act, but the problems were merely stated by the McDonnel Committee and O'Donnell Circular and not solved and the need for a full and impartial enquiry led to the appointment of the present Commission.

Professor Coupland in a note points out that it is clear from the Memorandum and the Reforms despatch of the Government of India that the retention of the control of the Secretary of State over the Services under the Ministers was a temporary expedient adopted, because it was felt that to change the structure of the Public Services simultaneously with the change in the structure of the Government might fatally handicap the operation of the new system. Now, however, both the Ministers and the all-India Services under them are suffering from an anomalous and unstable position.

To remove this anomaly the Commission recommends that the recruitment to the Services employed in the transferred field should in future be made by the Local Governments themselves. These Services are Indian Education, Agricultural and Veterinary, the Forest Service in Burma and Bombay and the Building and Roads Branch of the Indian Services of Engineers except in Assam. Special recommendations are made about the Indian Medical Service. Local Governments should be given full control over the Services thus recruited and also over the existing Provincial Services, the Secretary of State delegating necessary powers under Section 96 B (2) of the Government of India Act. But it should be a corollary that Local Legislatures should pass Public Services Acts, providing satisfactory conditions of service and reducing the risks of political interference.

No change would, however, be made in the position of the all-India Service men, now operating in the transferred field, and they would continue to enjoy the present rights and also draw concessions to be granted to the members of Services in the reserved field. The all-India Services employed in reserved field of administration should continue to be appointed and controlled by the Secretary of State for India in Council. Some members think that such a conclusion follows inevitably from the principles implicit in the Government of India Act, while other members hold that the transfer is contemplated by the Act. All, however, agree that the Secretary of State should, for the present, retain his powers of appointment and control. These services are I.C.S., I.P.S., Irrigation Branch of the I.C.S., the whole cadre of this Service in Assam, and except in Bombay and Burma, the Indian Forest Service.

Professor Coupland in his note explains that the recommendations about the control of reserved and transferred services is not only in harmony with the principles and purposes of the authors of the Government of India Act ; it is in consonance with the principle, on the one hand, of making Ministers and Legislative Councils responsible in the fullest practicable degree for the good Government of the Transferred field and, on the other, with full responsibility of the Secretary of State and Parliament for the good government of the Reserved field.

In respect of the Central Services, the Commission recommends that all appointments to the Political Department, the Imperial Customs Department and the Ecclesiastical Department should be made by the Secretary of State who should also continue to make, as at present, appointments in Europe to State Railway Engineers, Superior Revenue Establishment, State and Superior Telegraph and Wireless Branch. Appointments in the remaining Central Services would be made by the Government of India.

The Medical Service.—On the question of the reorganisation of the Medical Service, the Commission says that no attempt should be made to perpetuate the Indian Medical Service as at present constituted. The Medical needs of the British and Indian armies in India should be met by the constitution of R.A.M.C. (India). Every officer in the new provincial Civil Medical Service being liable for services with R.A.M.C. (India) in the event of general mobilisation, the new Civil Medical Service should be constituted in each province and recruited by the Public Services Commission through a competitive examination held in England and India, the rates of pay and other conditions of service being fixed by the Local Government in consultation with the Public Ser-

vices Commission whose constitution is given later. The Commission considers it vital to the needs and contentment of the British Civil Servants to provide a nucleus of British Medical Officers in Civil Medical Service. The minimum British Officers for each province is to be fixed by the Secretary of State on whom, in the last resort, should rest the responsibility for their maintenance.

The Commission next makes the most important recommendations for the establishment of Public Services Commission as contemplated by the Government of India Act. Experience has shown, says the Report that wherever democratic institutions exist, some impartial body is necessary to protect the Civil Services from political influences and give them stability and security. The Commission points out that since the passing of the Act, prolonged correspondence extending over four years has passed between the Secretary of State, the Government of India and the Local Governments without arriving at any decision about the setting up of this Commission. The Lee Commission is convinced that this Commission should be established without delay and recommends that the Commission should be an all-India body consisting of five Commissioners of the highest public standing, detached so far as practicable from political associations and possessing in the case of at least two high judicial or legal qualifications. Their emoluments should not be less than those of the High Court Judges. The function of the Commission would be (A) recruitment in India for all-India Services, Central Services and, if Provincial Government so desire, also for Provincial Services. The Commission would be the final authority in determining, with the Secretary of State, the Government of India or the Local Governments as the case may be, the standards of qualifications and methods of exa-

minations for recruitment in India. (B) The exercise of functions of quasi-judicial character in connection with disciplinary control and protection of Services. Appeals to the Governor-General-in-Council by the aggrieved officer against such orders of the Local Governments as are declared by the Governor-General-in-Council to be appealable should be referred to the Commission which should report to the Government of India with its recommendations as to the action, without prejudice to the right of appeal of the aggrieved officer to the Secretary of State provided the Commission certifies the case as fit for such appeal. Appeals from the Government of India would first be referred to the Commission who would report to the Secretary of State. In the case of allegation of the breach of Legal Covenant the Commission would certify whether "prima facie" it is a fit case for adjudication by a civil court. If such a case is sustained, the whole cost of proceedings should be defrayed by the Government concerned. The Commission would be an expert body about the Services. The Report regards the recommendations in respect of this Commission as one of its cardinal features as forming an integral and essential part of the whole structure of the proposals about the Services. It is, therefore, urged that effect to them should be given as soon as practicable.

Indianisation.—The Commission next makes recommendations on the question of Indianisation. For the I.C.S., it considers desirable that to promote increased feeling of comradeship and equal sense of responsibility, the proportion of half Europeans and half Indians in the Service should be attained without undue delay. Some members attach particular importance to maintaining the principle of equality in rates of direct recruitment which should be 40 Indians and

40 Europeans out of every 100, the remaining being promoted from the Provincial Service. This ratio of recruitment of 40 Europeans to 60 Indians is expected to produce half and half composition of the Service in about 15 years.

In the Indian Police Service, recruitment is to be fifty per cent. European and fifty per cent. Indian, the latter being composed of thirty per cent. taken by direct recruitment and twenty per cent by promotion from the Provincial Service of men of whose fitness for such posts the Commission had convincing evidence. In this Service the composition of half European and half Indian would be attained in about 25 years.

The recruitment to Indian Forest Service in the Provinces where Forest is a reserved subject should be 75 per cent Indians and 25 per cent. Europeans.

Recruitment for Irrigational Engineers is to be 40 per cent Europeans and 60 per cent Indians, 40 per cent being directly recruited and 25 per cent promoted from Provincial Service.

It is pointed out by the Commission that, while the question before the Islington Commission was how many Indians should be admitted into Public Services, the question before the Lee Commission was what is the minimum number of Englishmen which must still be recruited. The Commission hopes that in respect of provincialized Services the ministers would still wish to obtain the services of Europeans in technical departments and that Europeans would show willingness to take service under local Governments as under the Secretary of State.

The proposals for the Indianisation of the Central Services are : (A) Political Department ; 25 per cent Indian, recruitment from I.C.S. Provincial Civil Service, or Indian Army. (B)

Imperial Customs Service, recruitment to be on present basis. (C) Superior Telegraph and Wireless branch, recruitment should be 25 per cent in England and 75 per cent. in India. (D) The Commission recommends that existing training facilities should be pushed forward so that, as soon as practicable, 75 per cent recruitment can be made in India and 25 per cent in England to the posts of State Railway Engineers and Superior Revenue Establishment, State Railway. For the remaining Central Services, recruitment should be at the discretion of the Government of India.

Pay and Allowances—Coming to this question the Commission observes that the insistent complaint of Services has been that so little has been done to give effect to the recommendation of the Montagu-Chelmsford Report to restore the real pay of the Services to the level which proved attractive 20 years ago. The present pay is far below such level. Moreover, says the Commission, the existing disparity of remuneration as between commercial and official career, has become so conspicuous and so discouraging to the Civil Servants that something should be done to restore contentment. Although many non-official witnesses urged reduction in the basic pay of Indians, the Commission has decided against lowering the basic pay, partly because of the almost unanimous representation by Indian Officers that their position was no less embarrassing than that of the European Officers. Apart from the Indian Police Service and the Indian Service of Engineers, it is not proposed to increase the basic pay of the Services in the I. P. S. The basic pay of inferior scale should be raised by Rs. 25 a month. The basic pay of superior scale, beginning at sixth year, should be increased by Rs. 50 up to the tenth year, then by Rs. 75 a month to the 13th year, then by Rs. 100 a month for

ensuing four years, then by Rs. 75, Rs. 50 and Rs. 25 a month for 18th, 19th and 20th year of service, thereafter remaining as at present.

In the case of the Indian Service of Engineers, it is recommended that the technical pay should be reckoned as part of the basic pay. For Services other than the I. P. S. and women's branch of the I.E.S. rise in the overseas pay from Rs. 150 where it occurs should be Rs. 250 instead of Rs. 200 as at present, while from the 12th year of service onwards the rate of overseas pay should be raised from Rs. 250 to Rs. 300. In the I.P.S. the recruits of which are about three years younger than in other Services, the overseas pay should be Rs. 100 in first three years, Rs. 125 in the fourth year, Rs. 150 in the next four years, Rs. 250 in the next six years and Rs. 300 in the 15th year and thereafter to the end of the time scales.

Solution of Exchange Difficulty.—The difficulty about exchange is met by the recommendation that in the case of all Services from the fifth year of service onwards, every officer of non-Asiatics domicile should be entitled to remit his total overseas pay through the High Commissioner at two shillings to a rupee or to draw it in London in sterling at that rate.

The Indian members entitled to overseas pay should draw the increase proposed, but should have the privilege of remittance only if they satisfy the High Commissioner that they have wives or children in Europe.

The Commission recommends that though not to the extent of other services the women's education service has a claim to some improvement in emoluments.

As regards the Central Service, the report recommends that in principle the concessions proposed for all-India Services should *mutatis mutandis* be granted to all European Officers in the Central Services appointed by the Secretary of State and to those European Officers who, though appointed by the Government of India, were appointed on the basis of non-Asiatic domicile.

The recommendations about other Services are that officers appointed in future to the Judicial Branch of the I.C.S. should not receive judicial pay, because this additional attraction is not needed now. It should not however be withdrawn from the existing recipients. The technical pay of the superior Telegraph Branch should be reckoned as part of the basic pay. The Military officers serving in the Political Department should receive the same pay as the officers of the Indian Civil Service in that department.

Passage Difficulties.—The passage difficulty is proposed to be met by laying down that an officer of non-Asiatic domicile in Superior Civil Services should receive four return passages during his service (of standard P. & O. First Class B.) and when married his wife should be entitled to as many return passages as may be to his credit. One single passage should be granted to each child.

The scheme is to be extended to the Indian Officers of the Indian Civil Service who receive overseas pay, but should not extend to their families. The family of an officer who dies in service should be repatriated at the Government expense even though he has exhausted the full number of passages admissible. Roughly, the passage benefit works out at Rs. 50 per month for European and perhaps Rs. 25 for Indian officers. But in order to avoid this allowance being eaten

up by other requirements, the Commission asks the government to establish a passage fund out of which it would pay for the passage of officers. Any surplus of the fund will revert to the Government. Monthly additions credited to the pay under this fund would not count towards the pension or leave or furlough allowances.

Pensions.—No increase is recommended in the I.C.S., pension having regard to the fact that in 1919 officers contributing four per cent of their salary towards the pensions were relieved of the necessity of doing so and the question of the refund of past contributions cannot be reopened. As a result of far-reaching responsibilities brought by the Reforms the Commission recommends that the members of the I.C.S. who rise to the rank of the members of the Council should get an additional pension of £50 for every year of service as such up to a maximum total pension of £1,250. Those who serve as Governors to receive an additional £100 annually up to a maximum total pension of £1,500.

Mr. Basu dissenting says that the spirit of comraderie and equality in rank of the Civil Service must be maintained.

The Commission is aware that the recommendation of the Islington Commission to give special pension to Lieutenant Governors was not accepted by the Government, but feels that under the Reforms the conditions have changed and that it is just and equitable that this fact should be recognised.

No change is recommended in the existing scale of invalid annuities so far as the I.C.S., is concerned. The present pensions of the Unconvenanted Services are considered inadequate. It is proposed that the present pension of five thousand rupees per annum after twenty-five years of service rising by two hundred rupees per annum to six thousand, be

increased to six thousand after thirty years, rising by rupees two hundred per annum to seven thousand rupees. The maximum pensions taking account of the additional pension earned by service in higher appointments, would then become rupees eight thousand five hundred (lower grade) and nine thousand five hundred (upper grade). The limit of ten years before which an invalid annuity can be earned in the Uncovenanted Service should be reduced to seven years and scale be improved.

No change is recommended in the pension of High Court Judges and Chaplains.

The Commission further recommends that a new rule be made to grant extraordinary pensions to officers killed or injured whilst not actually in execution of their duty, but for reasons connected with their official position or actions.

Security to Services.—The report next discusses the safeguards to be provided to give a sense of security to the Services. It is recommended that the question of existing and accruing rights and claims of members of Services arising from the abolition of high appointments be referred to the Public Services Commission. The Indian members would limit reference to the cases other than those necessitated by retrenchment or curtailment of work. All officers should be allowed to commute up to half their pensions, the rates to be revised year by year on the basis of the rate of interest payable on the loans raised by the Government in that year. Mutually binding legal covenants enforceable in Civil Courts should be entered into between the officers and the authorities appointing them. The existing members of the services should also enter into such covenants which should include clauses securing pay, leave, rules, passages, remittances,

privileges, pension, rules, etc., and the right to compensation in the event of dismissal without due notice or any breach of the condition of contract as well as right to retire on proportionate pension in specified circumstances with regard to future recruits. It should be laid down that if and when the field of service for which members are recruited is transferred it shall be open to them (A) either to retain their all India status. (B) to waive their contracts with the Secretary of State and to enter into new contracts with the local Governments concerned, or (C) to retire on proportionate pensions with the option to remain open for one year from date of transfer. The present rate of proportionate pension is considered by the Commission generous enough. The privilege of proportionate pension should be extended to those recruited in 1919, who did not arrive in India before 1st January 1920. But no alteration is recommended in the existing rule laying down that the War service of officers, prior to their appointments, should not count as service for the purpose of this pension. The extension of the privilege of proportionate pension to Central Services is not recommended. It is further laid down that the existing members operating in the reserved fields should have, in addition to the present rights, the right to retire on proportionate pension under the circumstances defined for future recruits, if and when the field of service is transferred as stated above.

Specialist officers on contract for definite period and discharged for reasons other than unsatisfactory performance of duties have a claim for special compensation which should be granted in consultation with the Public Services Commission. Officers of the all-India Service not appointed by the Secretary of State should be reappointed by him and granted the same privileges as other members.

House Rent.—The report also suggests relief in respect of calculations for rent for houses supplied by the Government and officer's liability in respect of home rent is limited to ten per cent. of his monthly emoluments, the Government paying excess in case the officer occupies a private house.

Summary and Criticism.—It is premature to offer any criticism of the Report which was avowedly an attempt to bring about a compromise between two conflicting demands. The Commission, from its very commencement, was working in an atmosphere that was charged with political and racial hostility and it is no small tribute to its President that he should have managed to have a unanimous Report. In bringing the appointment and discipline of European servants serving in the transferred subjects entirely within the control of the Ministers, it followed the Reforms to their logical conclusion. It is estimated that the cost of their proposals for the improvement of the pay &c., of the Services would be about a crore of Rupees in the first year and would increase to one crore and quarter in course of time. Out of this some 22 lacs would fall on the Central budget, and the remaining cost will be distributed over the provinces. This increased burden at a time when taxation seems to have reached its limit is all the more deplorable, but apparently it is the price India has to pay for her transition to a form of administration which will, in fulness of time, be both manned and controlled by Indians.

CHAPTER XX.

PROVINCIAL.

(119) LOCAL SELF-GOVERNMENT.

Resolution of Lord Chelmsford.—The history of this subject was traced up to the Announcement of 1917 in an earlier section. After that Announcement Lord Chelmsford explained that Local Self Government was one of the means by which advance was to be made towards the progressive realization of Responsible Government in India. Accordingly in May 1918 his Government issued a comprehensive Resolution the underlying principles of which may be summarised thus: in the forefront comes the main object of local Self-Government: the training of the people in the management of their own affairs. For this purpose the local bodies should be as representative as possible, and they should be freed a great deal from outside control. The control of Government was hitherto exercised from within as well as from without, and it was mainly in the substitution of outside for inside control and the reduction of outside control to the limit compatible with safety that progress was to be achieved. Internal control is capable of relaxation by a greater use of election both of members and chairmen, of Boards. External control was relaxed by removing unnecessary restrictions in connection with taxation, budgets, the sanction of works &c.

The Resolution recommended that as a general principle there should be a substantial elective majority both in Municipalities and Rural Boards, and suggested that the proportion of nominated members in a Board should not ordinarily exceed one fourth. The franchise for election also should be low. The necessity for this provision was revealed by the fact that the average electorate in Municipalities in India seemed to represent only 6 p.c. of the population, and the electorate in the District Boards only 0.6 p.c. The end to be kept in view before a full elective system, analogous to that obtaining in the West can be achieved is that some 16 p.c. of the population should be represented in the electorate. Similarly the nominated chairman should make room for elected chairman, both in Municipalities and District Boards.

So far about the reduction of the internal control over local Bodies. External control was to be reduced by giving them greater latitude in taxation and borrowing, and greater freedom with regard to the Budget.

Recent Developments.—In 1919-20 there were 739 Municipalities in British India with something under 18 million people resident within their limits. The rest of the population *i.e.*, about 90 p.c. of the total is still rural. This disproportion of urban and rural population ought to show how vitally important it is that local self-Government should get a deep rooting in the villages.

Local Self-Government is of course a Transferred subject and in the charge of Indian Ministers. The rate of progress has not been uniform in all the provinces in the last three years of the Reformed regime, but there are unmistakable signs that popular interest in this subject is being keenly roused. The main results of administration may be here

summarised. In the United Provinces the District Boards Act was passed in February 1923 by which District Boards became entirely elective save for the reservation of two seats to be filled by nomination by the local Government. They will also become entirely non-official, and internal and external control will be reduced to the minimum. Similar measures for Municipal and rural Boards have been passed in almost all provinces.

The method of local self-Government in rural areas in Bihar and Orissa is peculiar. A new Act called the Village Administration Act provides for the creation of Unions consisting of a number of villages ; and the constitution therein on an elective basis of Union Boards which may be given certain important duties including the control of village police. The system of urban self-government is like that in other provinces.

In Bombay.—The constitution of both urban and rural bodies has been greatly modified—either by executive actions or by new pieces of legislation. The Municipal Corporation of Bombay has undergone a radical change. Its strength has been increased to 106 of whom 72 are elected, and 10 are co-opted : the strength of Standing Committee has been increased to 16 ; and the franchise for election has been fixed on the uniform basis of monthly payment of Rs. 10 or more as house rent.

Again in March 1923 was passed the Bombay Local Boards Act for the reconstitution of rural bodies. There will be a Board for Local Self Government in each Taluka of the District, and one for the District as a whole. There will be elective members and " nominated members " in the Board—but the number of elective members is to be three fourths of

the whole Board, and not more than one half of the nominated members can be salaried servants of the Government. The franchise for voting to the Taluka Board is the payment of land revenue of not less than Rs. 8 ; and that for the District Board, of Rs. 32, except in the three districts of Upper Sind Frontier, Panch Mahals and Ratnagiri, where it is only Rs. 16. Both in Taluka and District Boards the Mahomedans have been given separate representation. For purpose of election to the District Local Board each Taluka forms a separate general constituency ; and for Taluka Boards, the Villages have been grouped into constituencies. Detailed schedules have been recently published in the *Bombay Government Gazette* giving the proportion of elected and nominated members, of general and Mahomedan members etc. The President of the Board will be elected. The District Board must hold a meeting at least once in every three months. Every Local Board is to have a Standing Committee of between 5 and 7 members and the President is to be the ex-officio chairman of the Committee. The Board may appoint other executive Committees for other purposes e.g., Public Health ; certain Government officers e.g., the Executive Engineer, the Educational Inspector, the Deputy Director of Public Health and Civil Surgeon have the right of attending meetings of the District Board. Their immediate subordinates can attend meetings of Taluka local boards ; conversely, the District or Taluka Board may require the presence of any of the above officers at their meetings. The duties of the boards have been classified as obligatory and discretionary and their general range has been given in an earlier part of this book. Only the District Board can incur expenditure on education ; the budget of the Taluka Board is subject to the approval of the District Board. The District

Board may be authorized to levy a tax mentioned in schedule two § 80 A (3) (a) of the Government of India Act.

Revival of Village Panchayats.—Attention has repeatedly drawn to the decadence of Village Communities in India under the British under Rule. Efforts are being made to revive the Village Panchayats. Thus in the United Provinces an Act provides for the establishment, at the discretion of the Collector, of a Panchayat for any village or group of villages with power to deal with petty civil suits, with petty criminal offences, and with ordinary cases under the Cattle Trespass Act and Village Sanitation Act. The first Panchayats under the new Act were established in July 1921, and by the end of September 1922 they had increased in numbers to 3830. They are still in their experimental stage, and measures for their institution have been adopted in Bihar and other provinces.

The same favourable remarks can not be passed upon other tendencies in local Self Government that became evident in many places ever since the subject was transferred to Ministers. Even though the Non-Co-operators boycotted the Councils, they in many places 'captured' the Municipalities. In fact at one time they seriously proposed to put into operation their whole programme of hand-spinning and weaving, national education, boycott of foreign goods &c.,—through these bodies. Their attempts brought them in conflict with the Government, and in some cases the Municipalities were temporarily suspended or had to pay fines. There is no doubt, however, that in spite of these excesses, on the whole interest in local matters has increased enormously during recent years. The elections are keenly fought, there are more meetings of the Municipal Committees, and more party-organization than was ever the case before.

The second tendency is that of Communal division, upon which Prof. Rushbrook Williams makes the following remarks :—A tendency has been noticed in Municipal and District Committees towards the formation of Hindu Muslim cliques which display mistrust of each other and waste time in mutual recrimination. The constitution into Municipalities and district Boards of regular parties with a definite policy is of course all to the good ; but when these parties are merely communal in their out-look ; they tend rather to the obstruction than to the transaction of business. Moreover lines of cleavage which are not based on matters directly affecting the prosperity of the area administered, but depend solely upon communal or sectarian differences, neither stimulate an interest in the task in hand nor foster that pride in the efficiency of Municipal institutions which is essential to the growth of local self Government.”*

That the interest in local affairs whether the result of a healthy realization of the importance of the subject, or a passing phase of political or communal conflict, is not able to achieve striking results is due to the financial stringency of the local Bodies. The resources of the local bodies are insignificant compared with their functions and any theoretical increase in their powers of taxation is useless unless there is a corresponding increase in the capacity to bear the taxes. Programmes of Compulsory Education, of construction of roads, &c., and the provision of adequate Sanitary arrangements are being held up because of the shortage of funds.

(120)

EDUCATION.

Introduction.—Various considerations make Education one of the most important subjects of Indian Administration.

* India in 1922-23.

As in other countries, it is, in India, a condition of the material and moral progress of the people. It is the most powerful solvent of ignorance and superstition, of narrow prejudices and practices and of castes and communal rigidities which, make India a backward country. It is the basis of all social reform and the *sine qua non* of an active participation in responsible Government. The policy of Government with regard to education has not always been wise or liberal; private agencies and funds—Indian and European—have been mainly applied to work out that policy. The result is that education has not spread equally or satisfactorily in all directions. It has created quite a crop of social, political and educational problems that have constantly exercised the mind of Government and the public ever since the days of Lord Curzon and the whole educational field has quite recently been examined by the Calcutta University Commission.

History of the Educational Policy.—The History naturally falls into the following six periods :—

- (1) Educational experiments up to 1835.
- (2) From the Educational Minute of Lord Macaulay (1833), to the Educational Despatch of Sir Charles Wood (1854).
- (3) From this Despatch to the Indian Educational Commission of 1882.
- (4) From this Commission to the Indian Universities Commission of 1904.
- (5) From 1905 to the Calcutta University Commission of 1917-1918.
- (6) Education under the Reforms.

An account has already been given in an earlier Chapter of the beginnings of Education up to 1854. The Despatch of

1854 laid the foundation of the Educational System of India, and as such it deserves careful study.

(3) *Analysis of the Despatch*.—It defined the object of education that was being extended in India to be “the diffusion of the improved arts, sciences, philosophy and literature of Europe, in short of European knowledge.” The vernaculars were to be used as the *media* of instruction along with English. “It is neither our aim nor desire to substitute the English language for the vernacular dialects of the country.” It recommended the creation of a *Department of Public Instruction* under a Director as the proper machinery for spreading education; also the establishment of “Universities” which may encourage education by the conferring of degrees, on the model of the London University. “But the “Universities” were not so much to be in themselves places of instruction as to test the value of the education obtained elsewhere.” Schools to be opened in every district in India, they were to provide opportunities for the acquisition of such an improved education as would make those who would possess it more useful members of society in every condition of life. Government was to encourage private effort by *grants-in-aid*. The remaining part of the Despatch deals with questions like scholarships, training of teachers professional and industrial education, female education, Mahomedan Education, etc.

As a result of the establishment of the Universities and the Departments of Public Instruction there was an increase of education after 1854. Private Schools began to multiply to cater for the needs of the growing numbers, and as such schools could be made self-supporting on the proceeds of the fees, they could do without the grant-in-aid and thus be independent of the control of the D. P. I. The Department in fact was losing control over these schools, as the later prepar-

ed candidates for the Matriculation examination of the University, and looked to the University for regulation of study, standard of attainment etc. Not much attention was paid to the subject of *primary* education, either by Government or by the people. The Universities continued to be merely examining bodies.

(4) *Education Commission of 1882.*—In 1882 the Government of Lord Ripon appointed the Education Commission under Sir William Hunter to review the work during the preceding thirty years. The voice of the first generation of educated Indians was being felt in the country and Lord Ripon had also taken the first steps in Local self-government. This Commission did not initiate any new departure of policy. It deplored the neglect of *primary* education, recommended its being delegated to the newly-created Municipalities and District Boards, and desired the State to undertake large expenditure for its encouragement. As regards *secondary* education, the Commission was satisfied with the progress made by private effort in this field. It suggested that Government should not do more than maintain one model High School in each district, and control and help private schools by means of grant-in-aid and inspection. The problems of University education did not come within the purview of this Commission.

(5) *Lord Curzon's Educational Policy.*—Twenty years were allowed to elapse before the whole educational field was surveyed during the regime of Lord Curzon. During those twenty years primary education remained almost stationary, for the local Authorities to which it was entrusted had very limited resources and though a substantial portion of them was applied to primary education and though it was supplemented by grants from Government the results were meagre.

On the other hand every thing conspired to increase the number of those who went in for secondary education, and there was a large increase in the number of Middle Schools and High Schools. Though the Schools prepared boys for the Matriculation, the University had no machinery by which to inspect and control them. Nor had it any real control over the colleges that were affiliated to it. The constitution of the Universities also had revealed defects of its own. Apart from these and other defects incidental to the educational system, questions began to be asked as to whether the imparting of Western Education to Indians had been an unmixed blessing to them. Point was given such questions by the supposed connection between education and political agitation and possibly between education and seditious crime. Lord Curzon put this last suspicion in the characteristic words of Erasmus. When this great Divine was reproached with having laid the egg from which came forth the Reformation, "YES" he replied ; "But I laid a hen's egg and Luther has hatched a fighting-cock." The Hon. Mr. Thomas Raleigh thus expressed the result of higher education upon Indians : "In point of fact it has been both, but much more I believe a blessing than a curse. We note every day the disturbing effects of a new culture imposed upon learners who are not always prepared to receive it ; but still it is a great achievement to have opened the mind of the East to the discoveries of Western Science and the spirit of English Law. To the Schools and Colleges under our administration we owe some of the best of our fellow workers—Assistant Judges, useful officials, and teachers who pass on to others the benefit which they have received. To them also we owe the discontented B.A: who has carried away from his college a scant modicum of learning and an entirely exaggerated estimate of his own capa-

cities, and the great army of failed candidates who beset all the avenues to subordinate employment."

Lord Curzon threw himself with a burning zeal into the subject of educational reform. He began by calling a conference of European Educational Experts at Simla in September 1901. He appointed the Universities Commission of 1902 under Sir Thomas Raleigh. As a result of the labours of this Commission the Indian Universities Act of 1904 was passed and a comprehensive Resolution on the educational policy of Government was issued in the same year. A second conference was called at Simla the next year to review the progress made during the previous few years.

University Reform.—The defects in higher education that were pointed out by the Commission were real though many of the measures adopted by Lord Curzon roused the bitterest opposition of educated Indians. The constitution of the Universities had not been changed ever since their establishment fifty years before. They consisted of the Senate which had become in every case a very large body consisting of fellows appointed for life by the Chancellor, many of whom had no direct connection with education; the Senates had therefore become quite unfit to discharge their functions. The Universities were again merely examining bodies as the London University was at the time when they were established. But the London University had undergone a radical change as a result of the Royal Commission that was appointed in 1898 to inquire into its state, and it was converted into a teaching University. There were four features of the London changes whose influence is directly perceptible in the discussions of the Commission of 1902; that every University ought to be a teaching university; no college should be

allowed full privileges unless it was thoroughly well-staffed and equipped ; that teachers must always be intimately associated with the work of the University and the supreme governing body of the University namely the Senate—should not be too large.

The recommendations of the Commission of 1902-3 fall into five main categories.

(1) The reorganization of University Government ; the University Senates were reduced in each case to the uniform strength of 100 members of whom 80 were to be nominated by Government, 10 were to be elected by the registered graduates of the University, and 10 by the Faculties. The latter were special Committees of the Senate for Arts, Science Medicines, Law and Engineering and they were given power of "co-opting" outsiders. The "executive" of the Senate was the Syndicate which was to consist of the Vice-Chancellor, and the Director of Public Instruction as *ex officio* members, and 15 members elected as follows : by the Faculty of Arts 4 ; of Sience 3 ; of Medicines 2 ; law 2 ; by the Senate as a whole 4. The Vice-Chancellor was to be a nominee of Government.

The Regulations made by the Senate were required to get the sanction of Government ; similarly the affiliation and disaffiliation of colleges, and the appointment of University professors, teachers and readers had also to be sanctioned by Government.

(2) A second feature of the new system was the introduction of stricter control over schools and colleges. Every private college was required to have a Governing Body consisting partly of teachers and partly of outsiders ; its income and expenditure was to be published as of a public institution ;

the rules of affiliation were made stricter ; and the college was submitted to periodical inspection by the University.

(3) The conditions under which students lived and worked in large towns like Calcutta and Bombay were wretched. There was no supervision over them, and, in the absence of hostel accommodation, they were exposed to all the evil influences of town-life, and in addition, some of them at any rate could not resist the temptation of actively participating in politics which were running high ever since the advent of Lord Curzon. The Colleges were now required to provide residence for a large proportion of their students as a condition of affiliation.

(4) The main function of the Universities continued to be that of prescribing books, and regulating studies, and of holding examinations. Almost the whole of the teaching was done in the "affiliated" colleges. The teaching functions of some of the Universities was confined to post graduate work, the appointment of University professors, scholarships for research etc.

(5) Substantial changes were made in curricula of studies and the methods of examination by means of Regulations.

Criticism.—That the Universities Act of 1904 enormously increased the control of Government over University matters—both direct and indirect—cannot be gainsaid. The University was virtually turned into a Department of the State. The power of nominating 80 out of one hundred members of the Senate and of renewing the nominations every five years was very great. Both in regard to their composition and powers the Senates had to depend largely upon Government. The late Mr. Gokhale did his utmost to oppose the retrograde provisions in the Act of 1904. He complained that to revolutionize the constitution of the Universities was reforming the

system of education at the wrong end. The remedies he suggested were the application of larger funds for the development of the colleges and the employment of the *best* men from England as professors. "The greatest work of Western Education in the present state of India is not so much the encouragement of learning as the liberation of the Indian mind from the thraldom of old-world ideas, and the assimilation of all that is highest and best in the life, thought, and character of the West. For this purpose not only highest but *all* Western education is useful. I think Englishmen should have more faith in the influence of their History and their Literature. And whenever they are inclined to feel annoyed at the utterances of a discontented B.A. let them realize that he is but an accident of the present period of transition in India, and that they should no more lose faith in the results of Western education on this account than should my countrymen question the ultimate aim of British Rule in this land because not every Englishman who comes out to India realizes the true character of England's mission here."*

(6) *Calcutta University Commission.*—During all this time the forces that were making for an increased demand of secondary and higher education were gathering strength. This kind of education had become the only avenue to a respectable position in life to the middle classes; again the immense mass of the backward communities was gradually perceiving the necessity of this education; and finally, political and social problems required a spread of higher education for their proper solution. Thus the question of education always remained a pressing problem. The evil effects of "overdoing" higher education of a purely literary character, of examinations, of cram, of rapid increase of incompetent

* Gokhale Speeches 235.

schools and colleges, and of the growth of the University beyond manageable proportions became particularly apparent in Bengal. The University had little control over the education imparted in Schools and no effective control over her own affiliated Colleges. Lord Chelmsford, therefore, appointed a Commission under Dr. Michael Sadler to inquire into the state of education in Bengal. Sir Ashutosh Mukerji—a man of rare intellectual powers and wonderful attainments in the fields of Oriental Scholarship, Mathematics, Law and Philosophy—who had made the Calcutta University “the largest University in the world”—was a member of this Commission. His recent death is an irreparable loss not only to Bengal but to the whole of India.

The Report of the Commission is a landmark in the history of Education in India. Though its criticisms and recommendations were directed to the special problems of Bengal, they were found to be of a much wider application and throughout India University of education is undergoing changes that were suggested by that Commission.

The Senate of the Bombay University for instance appointed a small Committee to consider that Report ; and now the Bombay Government have appointed a large Committee to go into the question of the reform of the Bombay University.

The Commission distinguished between two types of Universities—the *affiliating* and the *teaching*. The first was the only type that had been adopted in India. But the affiliated Colleges were scattered over a wide area and separated from each other and the University, in many cases, by hundreds of miles. The tie between them naturally was very slender. Each college was a unit by itself, and even between colleges in the same city there was no inter-relation. Naturally there was monotony and multiplication of teaching, and the entire

absence of inter-collegiate co-operation kept the colleges at a lower level than if they had pooled their teaching resources together. Many of the "second grade" and even "first grade" Colleges in the mofussil indeed were little better than high schools.

In the other type of the University the Colleges themselves form the University. Lord Curzon described the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge in the following eulogistic terms. "They are incorporated institutions composed of Colleges which constitute and are embodied in the corporate whole. The two together make the University ; they twain are one flesh. Each College has its own students and fellows and tutors and its own local habitation, often hallowed by romance and venerable with age. The groups of Colleges combine for purposes of lecturing. The University supervises and controls all by its examinations, its professorial lectures, its central government, and by its administration of corporate funds. Above all, it sways the life of the College undergraduates, by the memory of its past, by the influence of its public buildings, by its common institutions, and by the cosmopolitan field of interest and emulation which it offers."*

That the system of affiliation had reached the breaking point is clear from the following figures which show the number of students and of colleges "affiliated" to one or the other university in the year 1917 :—

University.		Colleges.	Students.
Calcutta	.. .. ..	58	2,8618
Bombay	.. .. ..	17	8,001
Madras	.. .. ..	53	10,216
Punjab	.. .. ..	24	6,558
Allahabad	.. .. ..	33	7,807

* Curzons Speeches Vol. II, 35.

The movement for establishing new Universities had set in even before the appointment of the Sadler Commission. The demand for a University began to be keenly felt in those provinces which had no university of their own e.g., Bihar and Orissa, Burma, etc.; and there was a widespread movement among the Hindus and the Mahomedans to found separate Universities as the embodiment of whatever was best in their culture, at Benares and Aligarh respectively in North India. This separatist movement received an impetus by the Report of the Calcutta University Commission. "They urged the immediate establishment of the Dacca University, a synthesis of the work of the various colleges situated in Calcutta, the coordination of the work of the outside colleges by means of a *Mofussil Board*, and a complete revision of the constitution of the Calcutta University. Finally, in order to raise the standard of University education in Bengal, they recommended the delegation of all work up to the Intermediate standard, hitherto conducted by the University, to institutions of a new type called "intermediate colleges," which should provide both general and special education under the supervision of a "Board of Secondary and Intermediate Education." To this body, which should contain representatives of Government, the University, the Intermediate Colleges, and the High Schools they suggested that the administration and control of secondary education should be transferred from the University and the Education Department."*

The Patna University which followed as a natural corollary on the formation of the separate province of Bihar and Orissa in 1912, was established in 1917. It does not differ greatly in form from the older Universities except in the possession of

* Richey 49.

a *whole time paid* Vice-Chancellor. The Dacca University was established in 1920. It is a teaching and residential University and it was the first to adopt the revised form of constitution recommended by the Commission. In place of the Senate and Syndicate of the older Universities, there are three main bodies in the new type of the University.

(a) A large Body, called the *Court* on which are represented the chief interests of the community either by election or nomination. The functions of the Court are to make statutes and pass recommendations on the financial accounts and the annual report submitted by the Executive Council.

(b) The *Executive Council* in whom the executive authority in regard to finance and university appointments and also all residual powers are vested.

(c) The *Academic Council* who are responsible for the control, general regulation, and maintenance of the standard of instruction, education, and examination within the University. It is to consist almost entirely of University teachers.

The new Universities of Lucknow and Delhi and the reconstituted University of Allahabad closely follow the model of the Decca University.

The older Universities of Bombay, Madras and Punjab are in the process of reconstruction. Though the older Universities continue, in the main, to be examining bodies, some of them, particularly the Calcutta University—thanks to the indefatigable energy of the late Sir Ashutosh Mookerji—also do teaching work (a) by arranging special series of lectures by eminent Scholars, (b) by founding University chairs, (c) by the provision of Honours schools or post-graduate classes.

The rapid increase in the number of new Universities is not without possible danger. All the provinces are not on the same footing as regards their general educational progress or financial resources. Further, education is now a transferred subject and therefore fully amenable to provincial Council (though with proper safeguards as to university education.) It is, therefore, necessary that all the Universities—the new and the old—should maintain a high and uniform standard. It would be most unfortunate if in India, as in the United States of America, a degree ceased to possess any intrinsic value, and was dependent for recognition on the status and reputation of the particular University by which it had been conferred.* Lord Reading in his inaugural address at the Conference of representatives of Indian Universities held recently at Simla, properly emphasized the necessity of the preservation of this high standard. It cannot be said that we have more Universities than the needs of the country require—indeed many more are bound to spring into existence in the near future—but the great desideratum is that a high, a very high standard is maintained by all.

SECONDARY EDUCATION.

It is not proposed to go here into the subject of secondary and primary education, and of other aspects of education. Only a few remarks are offered.

A feature of the Indian High Schools is the uniformity that prevails throughout them, preparing as they do candidates for the Matriculation examination of a University, and the domination of this examination over them. "Too often the staff, the parents, the public and not infrequently the inspecting staff also gauge the merits of a high school by the percen-

* Richey 11.

tage of success which it obtains at the final examination. This attitude is not wholly unreasonable. So long as there is little individuality in the character of different schools there is little, except their success in the examinations, to differentiate good schools from bad. Moreover it is precisely in order that his boy may pass the final examination that the ordinary parent sends him to a High School. Such success in itself possesses a recognised value in the Indian wage market. It also opens the door to the University ; and a University career is the aspiration of nearly every High School boy. Nor would this afford grounds for criticism if preparation for the University meant laying the foundation of a good education."* But in India the whole purport of education is narrowed to the passing of an examination.

Now properly speaking the use of a secondary school is to prepare the best of its scholars for the University and the rest for the business of life. This object is better served by having an elastic School Final or School Leaving Certificate Examination which should also serve the purpose of Matriculation. A reform in this direction has been effected in Bihar and Orissa, Madras, Bombay, and the United Provinces. The evil of cramming for examinations would to a large extent be minimised by the use of vernacular as the medium of instruction and this reform also is gaining ground in most provinces. The provision of an adequately trained staff of teachers is a further requirement of sound secondary—as indeed of all—education. To a large extent this depends upon offering adequate salaries to the teachers. Government have opened special schools for training Secondary Teachers, and the University has established degrees like L.T or B.T.

* Richey 85-87.

PRIMARY EDUCATION.

The importance of this subject needs no emphasis at this time of the day. Unless the reproachful ban of illiteracy is removed from the whole population—male and female—India cannot be a truly progressive country. This means the application of enormous sums—public and private—to this object, which cannot be attained within the life of a generation or two. Ever since Gokhale brought forward his Bill for compulsory Primary Education in 1910, this subject is engaging the attention of Government. Many provincial Governments tried to expand primary education by chalking out definite schemes of opening so many schools every year, or of spending so much for Primary Education. But expansion based upon this method was not rapid or satisfactory enough, and the next step was the passage of Primary Education Acts in the provinces, authorising the introduction of compulsory education by local option. In Bombay, for instance, an Act permitting the Municipalities to introduce compulsory education within their areas was passed as early as 1918. But few Municipalities came forward to avail themselves of this provision. The final step rendered inevitable by the inauguration of Responsible Government—was the adoption of the principle of Free and Compulsory Primary Education throughout the province. An Act to that effect was passed last year by the Bombay Legislative Council, thanks to the labours of the then Minister of Education Dr. R. P. Paranjpye. It applies to the whole of the Presidency, except the city of Bombay. Every District Board and the larger Municipalities are to constitute a "SCHOOL BOARD" consisting of elected Members. This School Board is to have as its chief executive officer, "The School Board Administra-

tive Officer," recommended by the Board and approved by the Government. The District Boards and Municipalities are required to prepare "Schemes" for the introduction of compulsory primary education. As soon as the scheme is sanctioned, Government is to bear "half of the additional recurring and non-recurring annual cost of the scheme in the case of a Municipality and two thirds of the cost if it is a District Board." The Rules required under this Act have been framed long since but the Act has not yet been put into operation.

Summary and criticism.—There are other kinds of education such as professional, vocational, technical etc. and also the education of females, of backward classes, etc. This is not the place to go into any of these problems. They are being discussed and reported upon though the actual results are far short of the requirements. With regard to them I may say what Lord Curzon said about technical education. "The autumnal leaves are not more thickly strewn in Vallombrosa than the pigeonholes of the Government Departments are filled with Resolutions on this subject."*

(121)

IX—LAND REVENUE POLICY.

General Principles.—The main principles of this subject have already emerged in the course of the historical inquiry in the Seventh Chapter. There are three kinds of operations in the revenue-settlement, (1) preparation of the cadastral (field-to-field) record; (2) the assessment of the revenue; (3) the collection of revenue so assessed.

The cadastral record is always kept up-to-date, and is very useful also as a "record of rights", being recognised as such in judicial proceedings.

* Speeches Vol. II, 48.

In the assessment of land revenue Government officers first of all calculate the "Net assets" or the "Net-produce" of a field according as there is or is not the class of land lords between Government and the rayats. Some account has been already given of the methods followed by those who initiated and completed the first Settlements in the Indian Provinces. There has been a progressive reduction of the share of Government. It is fixed at 50 p.c. of the net assets according to the Shahranpur Rule. But it must be borne in mind that no where is this laid down by law. It is established as the result of the executive orders of Government and its operation depends upon the discretion of the Settlement officers. The enhancement of the Settlement at the time of its revision should not be too abrupt ; nor should it discourage improvements in the land. The Land Revenue Resolution of 1902 points out how definite rules have been laid down with this object in view.

Period of Settlement.—Though the Court of Directors definitely gave up the "permanent settlement system," there was a proposal about 1860 to make the Settlements permanent. The proposal was favoured by Sir Charles Wood, Lord Canning, and Lord Lawrence, but after a good deal of correspondence, it was turned down in 1883 by Lord Kimberley —the then Secretary of State.

At the same time the defects of a temporary settlement are reduced to a minimum, and the interests of the State are not sacrificed if (a) the period of settlement is sufficiently long, (2) the revision operations are cheap and expeditious and (3) if enhancement of assessment is allowed in specific cases e.g. extension of cultivation, increase of produce due to improvements made by the State, such as irrigation or rail-

ways or finally, rise in prices. This was the kind of compromise between the opposing policies of permanent and temporary settlements suggested by Lord Ripon. But Lord Ripon's proposals were rejected by the Secretary of State, and for the next twenty years the controversy abated.

The famines of 1899 and 1900—the worst in the whole Century, and aggravated by the horrors of the new epidemic of plague—brought the whole question before the public. Representations were made to the Secretary of State and Mr. R. C. Dutt particularly pleaded for permanent settlement. He regarded it as the panacea for all the economic evils from which India was suffering. He addressed open letters to Lord Curzon, and the latter replied by issuing the famous Resolution of January, 1902, on the Land Revenue Policy of the Indian Government. Since that time the settled policy of the Government is not to forego its share in the unearned increment of the land revenue by adopting the Permanent Settlement.

Land Revenue under the Reforms.—The question was revived at the time of the Reforms. The controversy centred round the question—whether Land-revenue should be a reserved subject or a transferred subject. Mr. Feetham—the Chairman of the Functions Committee—said as the agricultural rayats were yet illiterate and inadequately represented in the new councils, the latter should not make a radical departure from the traditional policy, also that the revision-operations were based upon a set of technical rules issued by the executive, which were not capable of being examined by the legislative Council. He said that "Land revenue must be put on a statutory basis more completely than at present before it could be transferred."

On the other hand Sir Sankaran Nair held the Land Revenue policy of Government chiefly responsible for India's poverty. He recommended that land revenue should be treated as revenue pure and simple to be imposed by the legislative Council. "At present, outside the permanently settled Jamindars, the theory maintained by the Executive Government is that land is the private property of the Crown, the land holder being bound to pay any assessment that may be fixed by Executive Government at their discretion ; India is the only country in the world where neither law, nor custom, nor competition determines the revenue or rent."

Such was also the view of the Joint Committee. "The Committee are impressed by the objections raised by many witnesses to the manner in which certain classes of taxation can be laid upon the people of India by executive action, without in some cases, any statutory limitation of the rates, and in other cases, any adequate prescription by statute of the methods of assessment. They consider that the imposition of new burdens should be gradually brought more within the purview of the legislature. And in particular, without expressing any judgment on the question whether the land-revenue is a rent or tax they advise that the process of revising the land revenue assessment ought to be brought under closer regulation by statute as soon as possible. At present this statutory basis for charging revenue on land varies in different provinces ; but in some at least the pitch of assessment is entirely at the discretion of the executive Government. No branch of the administration is regulated with greater elaboration or care ; but the people who are most affected have no voice in the shaping of the system, and the rules are often obscure and imperfectly understood by those who pay the revenue. The Committee are of opinion

that the time has come to embody in the law the main principles by which the land revenue is determined, the method of valuation, the pitch of assessment, the periods of revision, the graduation of enhancements, and the other chief processes which touch the well-being of the revenue-payers. The subject is one which probably would not be transferred to Ministers until the electorate included a satisfactory representation of the several interests, those of the tenants well as of the landlords. And the system should be established on a clear statutory basis before this change take place."

Accordingly the subject is a *reserved* subject, and a Bill dealing with its main principles *has* to be reserved for the consideration of the Governor-General.

Bills having the object of placing the land Revenue administration on a statutory basis have been introduced in some provinces and the whole question is in a transitional stage.

(122)

X—LAW AND JUSTICE.

Codification in India.—Reference has been made to the appointment of the First Law Commission under the Charter Act of 1833. Second and Third Law Commissions were appointed under the Acts of 1853 and 1861. But as these bodies of legal experts began to collect and arrange material for their codes the defects of this system of legislation became obvious. They had no first hand knowledge of the vast country for the diverse people and conditions of which they were drafting laws by sitting in London. Their procedure was at once dilatory, inefficient, and costly. A further difficulty of the method began to be felt when the Legislative Councils established in India by the Act of 1861 also began

to make laws for India. • The constitutional question arose as to what was the relation between the Law Commissions in London and the Legislative Councils in India. Reference has been made to the controversy between Lord Mayo and the Secretary of State in 1870 on this subject. In the end it was rightly recognized that the proper place for the making of Laws for India was India and not England, and the proper machinery was the Indian Legislative Councils and not English Law Commissions.

At the same time a Despatch from Government of India to the Secretary of State, dated 10th May 1877 set out the advantages of codification. Since that time the process has gone on continuously. It should be noted that hitherto the incentive for codification has come from the executive Government. This was inevitable so long as the representatives of the people had no real share in legislation.

But the Reforms have given a new significance to the subject of codification. In the first place the provincial Councils have got greater freedom for legislation ; and secondly non-officials have better opportunities of getting laws of local or communal importance passed in the Councils. The legislative activity of the Councils will thus be encouraged and extended. At the same time the body of existing law is growing, and Government, therefore, felt that there should be some machinery for systematizing the law. A Committee was appointed about two years ago under Sir A. Muddiman to inquire into the desirability of codification and the extent to which it has been accomplished in India.

Separation of Executive and Judicial Functions.—This is a favourite subject with Indian politicians ; it is also the point where the system of British Administration in India is most

exposed to criticism on constitutional grounds. We have seen how the Collector is the chief officer "on the spot" in the District. He discharges two distinct kinds of functions. In his *executive* capacity he is the chief revenue authority, and at the head of the police force in the District. In his *judicial* capacity he is the magistrate. He is himself a Magistrate of the First Class. The Criminal Procedure Code authorizes him with extensive powers for maintaining the peace of the district. He can also transfer cases from one subordinate magistrate to another and call for records of any judicial proceedings before them. He can commit for trial any accused person who is in his opinion improperly discharged. Apart from this *judicial* control over the subordinate magistracy, the Collector is also their superior in his executive capacity, the Assistant and Deputy Collectors and Mamlatdars being also magistrates of first or second class.

Such is the combination of judicial and executive functions in the same hands. It is the result of a slow historical evolution. The beginnings of the system are to be found in the reforms of Warren Hastings, Cornwallis and Bentinck. Though in course of time the Collector has been divested of strictly judicial functions, and though the police force has been increasingly brought under the control and discipline of a separate Department, the combination of these two functions is still detrimental to popular rights. It is true that this union does not mean the same thing in every province of India. It no longer exists in the Presidency Towns. In Madras the separation has been effected in the lower grades; in Bengal it now obtains in the provincial service and special deputies are being appointed to try certain land and other cases; in Burma also there is similar separation and differentiation.

To go into the *pros and cons* of this controversy is to flog a dead horse. For when the whole question came up for discussion in 1908 in the Imperial Legislative Council, Sir Harvey Adamson on behalf of Government accepted *in theory* the case for separation.

"The exercise or control over the subordinate magistrates by whom the great bulk of criminal cases are tried is the point where the present system is defective. If the control is exercised by the officer who is responsible for the peace of the district, there is the constant danger that the subordinate magistracy may be unconsciously guided by other than purely judicial considerations. *It is not enough that the administration of justice should be pure; it can never be the bed-rock of our rule unless it is also above suspicion.*"

It has been said that in *practice* the combination of powers is not so bad as it appears to political theorists; that in his other preoccupations, the Collector has no time to attend to judicial functions; that, such a combination is requisite for maintaining the *prestige* of Government; finally that Indians have been used to the exercise of such despotic powers over them from times immemorial and so on; Further, on account of this union of functions, the members of the Civil Service get a thorough training in administration, and after a period of probation, each selects the judicial or the executive line according to the bent of his mind; that if a separation of functions was effected from the first and rigidly maintained, it would be difficult to get Europeans of the proper legal qualifications to fill the posts of Judges; and the quota of High Court Judges recruited from the Civil Service would to that extent suffer in quality.

This last argument is the weakest of the whole lot. It had some force when there was difficulty of getting Indians to fill the judicial posts. But it is not so now. And there are positive disadvantages in making the members of the Civil Service shift from the judicial to the executive side and *vice versa*. The District Judge—trained in the executive field during his earlier years and often found unsatisfactory for that kind of work—does not possess those legal attainments or that judicial frame of mind and detachment of view which are essential for an impartial administration of justice. Further, these Judges obtain their promotion from the Executive, and as Chailley observes, "cannot feel themselves entirely free in matters in which the interests of the Government are concerned." Thus it has been remarked that promotions to the bench from the Civilians are made, in some cases at least, 'less on account of their merit, than for their supposed suppleness or complaisance.'

The interest of this controversy has now been transferred from the Indian Legislative Council to the provincial councils. When this question was raised in the reformed Central Legislature, it was pointed out, that it affected mainly the administration of justice and of land revenue and both were provincial subjects. The Government of India, however, were in full sympathy with the case for separation and undertook to offer every help by way of undertaking the necessary legislation, to any province that may proceed to make the experiment.

**Racial Distinctions.*—In accordance with the resolution moved in the Assembly in September 1921, a Committee was appointed, under the presidency of the Hon. Dr. Sir Tej

* Summary of the Report of the Committee on the subject.

Bahadur Sapru, to consider the existing racial distinctions in the criminal procedure applicable to Indians and non-Indians and to suggest the modifications of the law required for their removal.

It is well-known that the courts of the E. I Company exercised no jurisdiction at all over the Europeans, the administration of civil and criminal justice being confined in such cases to the Courts of the Presidency Towns. It was expected that more Europeans would go out to India when the Charter Act of 1833 removed the restriction on immigration into India. The Despatch of 1834, therefore, laid down the principle that both Indians and Europeans should be subjected to the same judicial control. "There can be no equality of protection where justice is not equally and on equal terms accessible to all." Accordingly Europeans were made triable by *civil* courts outside the Presidency towns in 1836 by an Act associated with the name of Lord Macaulay. But with regard to *criminal* trials, as late as 1872, the general principle was that European British Subjects would be tried only by courts established by the Crown and not by the courts of the Company.

In 1872, when Sir James Stephen was Law Member, the jurisdiction of the ordinary criminal courts was definitely extended to Europeans; but at the same time special forms of procedure based on English Law and limitations of the powers of the courts were framed for their trial. In 1883, the well-known Ilbert Bill was introduced with the object of giving jurisdiction to Indian Sessions Judges and certain Indian Magistrates to try European British Subjects. Owing to the feeling aroused by the Bill another Bill was passed by which while Indian Sessions Judges and District Magistrates

were enabled to try European British subjects, the right to claim a mixed jury (that is, a jury consisting of not less than half Europeans) was allowed in all Sessions cases (not merely in those triable by jury, as in the case of Indians) and also before District Magistrates. In the Presidency Towns the European British Subjects have had and have no privileges before the Presidency Magistrates, but they can claim a mixed jury before the High Court. It is interesting to note that, whereas, at the time of the Ilbert Bill controversy, the question was whether Indian Judges and Magistrates should try Europeans or not, the subject which excites most interest at the present moment is the right of a European British Subject to claim a mixed jury.

We may thus summarise the principal distinctions between the trial of the Europeans and of Indians.

(1) *Judges*.—Under section 443 of the Criminal Procedure Code European British Subjects were not triable by a Second or Third class Magistrate, and were only triable by a Magistrate of the First class if he was a Justice of the Peace, and in the case of District and Presidency Magistrates, a European British Subject.

(2) Additional and Assistant Sessions Judges could try European British Subjects if they were themselves European British Subjects, and in the case of Assistant Sessions Judges if they were of more than three years standing and if they were specially empowered in this behalf by the Local Government.

(3) The sentences that may be passed by First class Magistrates, District Magistrates and Courts of Sessions in the case of European British Subjects were limited to three months imprisonment and a fine of Rs. 1000, six month's imprison-

ment and a fine of Rs. 2,000, and one year's imprisonment and unlimited fine, respectively.

(4) In the case of trials before a High Court, Court of Sessions or District Magistrate, European British Subjects were entitled to be tried by a jury of which not less than half were to be Europeans or Americans.

(5) Under Section 456 of the Code the European British Subjects enjoyed more extensive remedies in the nature of *Habeas Corpus* than those enjoyed by the Indians.

(6) The European British Subjects enjoyed more *extensive rights of appeal* in criminal cases than Indians in that they might appeal against sentences in which an appeal would not ordinarily lie, and they also had the option of appealing in the alternative to the High Court or the Court of Sessions.

The main recommendations of the Committee which have been subsequently embodied in the Act are as follows.

(1) The title of the Justice of Peace should not be a qualification for the trial of a European British Subject; nor should the title be confined to Europeans in the mofussil. The only distinction that should be observed is that, in trials of European British Subjects *outside* the Presidency Towns—the accused may claim to be tried by a Magistrate of the First Class, except in cases of offences not punishable with a fine exceeding Rs. 50, in respect of which *any* Magistrate may try such offence.

(2) Outside the Presidency towns in the case of all persons, both European and Indian there should be an appeal against *any* sentence of imprisonment passed by a *Magistrate*. This is a substantial modification of the general law of the land but it is a desirable modification. But no appeal would be allowed

in a trial by a *Court of Sessions* in respect of sentences of one month and under.

Similarly, we recommend that in all jury trials in which the jury are not unanimous or in which the jury are unanimous but the Judge does not agree with the verdict of the jury, both in the High Court and in the Sessions Court, an appeal should lie on *facts* as well as on *law* both in cases of conviction and of acquittal (the appeal in the case of acquittal being by the local Government), in respect both of Europeans and of Indians. This right should be specially laid down in the Code and should be as free and unrestricted as in the case of any other appeal. The appeal should be heard by three Judges in the case of an appeal from a decision in the High Court and by two Judges in the case of an appeal from a decision in a Session Court.

(3) *Sentences*—which may be passed by provincial Magistrates.

District Magistrates and First Class Magistrates should not be allowed to pass on European British Subjects any sentence other than a sentence of imprisonment which may extend to two years, including such solitary confinement as is authorized by law, or of fine which may extend to Rs. 1000. It will be observed that these are the limits of the ordinary powers of a District or First Class Magistrate with the exception that they do not include a sentence of whipping.

Sessions Judges should have power to pass the same sentences on Europeans as on Indians. Accordingly Sessions Judges and Additional Sessions Judges should have power to pass sentences of death, in the case of Europeans and Indians alike, subject as usual to confirmation by High Court.

(4) *Jury or Assessors before High Court or Court of Session.*

This was the privilege upon which non-official European opinion was very keen. This privilege is to be retained subject to the following provisions.

(a) The same law as to the composition of the jury shall apply to Indians and to Europeans that is the majority of the jury, if an Indian accused so desires, shall consist of persons who are not Europeans or Americans.

(b) There shall be a right of appeal both on law and facts both from conviction and acquittal, in the case of Europeans and Indians alike, except where the jury are unanimous and the Judge agreed with the jury.

The number of jury should not be less than five, and in murder trials, nine, if possible.

Another difficulty arises from the fact that a European can claim a trial by jury in any case in a Court of Sessions, whereas a very large proportion of the cases in Courts of Session in which Indians are accused are tried with the aid of assessors. To meet this difficulty special provision was made for cases in a Court of Sessions in which racial considerations between Europeans and Indians are involved ; and also for the trial of Europeans by jury, in certain cases in Courts of Session where racial considerations do not arise was substituted trial with the aid of European Assessors.

The Proposals were:—

(a) In any district in which for any class of offence are normally triable in a Court of Session by jury, the accused, whether Indian or European, shall be entitled to claim a mixed jury.

(b) In any district in which for any class of offences Indians are normally triable in a Court of Session with the

aid of assessors, but in which racial considerations between Europeans and Indians are involved; the accused, whether Indian or European, shall be entitled to claim a mixed jury on the ground of the existence of such racial considerations. The Sessions Judge will decide the preliminary question whether in any particular case racial considerations are involved, and no appeal or revision shall lie against his decision on this preliminary point. Racial considerations shall be deemed to arise where the accused and the complainants are of different nationalities.

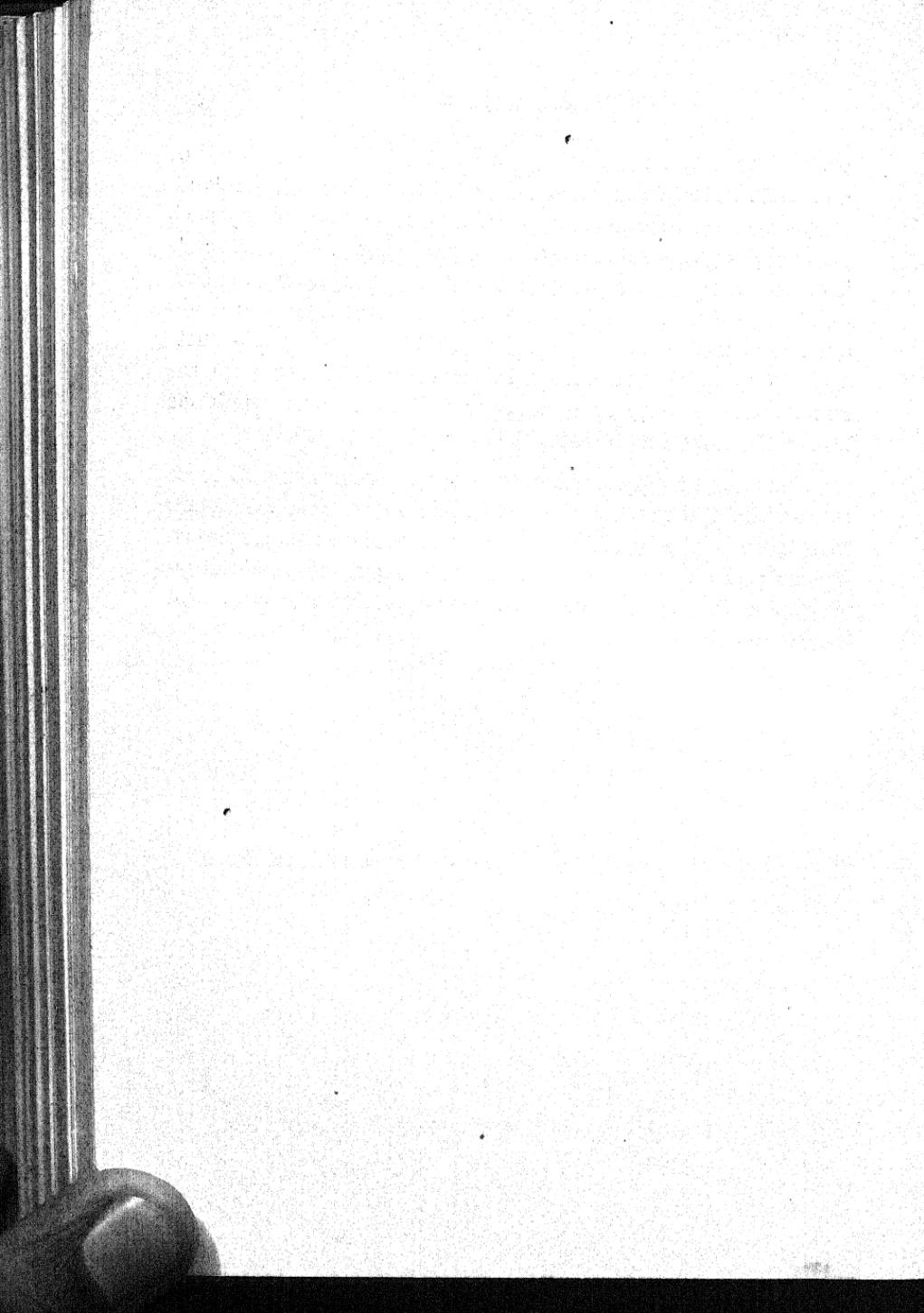
(c) In any district in which for any class of offence Indians are normally triable in a Court of Sessions with the aid of assessors and in which no racial considerations are involved, the accused, whether Indian or European, shall be tried with assessors, who, if the accused so claims, shall all be of the nationality of the accused. The assessors should be not less than three, and, if possible, should be four.

It will be seen that so far as the European is concerned, his right of trial by jury will be taken away only in a limited number of cases in which no racial considerations are involved; and in such cases, instead of being tried by a jury of five of which he can claim that not less than three shall be Europeans, he will be tried probably with four and in any case with not less than three assessors, who will all, if he so claims, be Europeans. In the case of an Indian, he will be able to claim a mixed jury in any case where racial considerations are involved; and in any case triable with assessors, there will be not less than three Indian assessors.

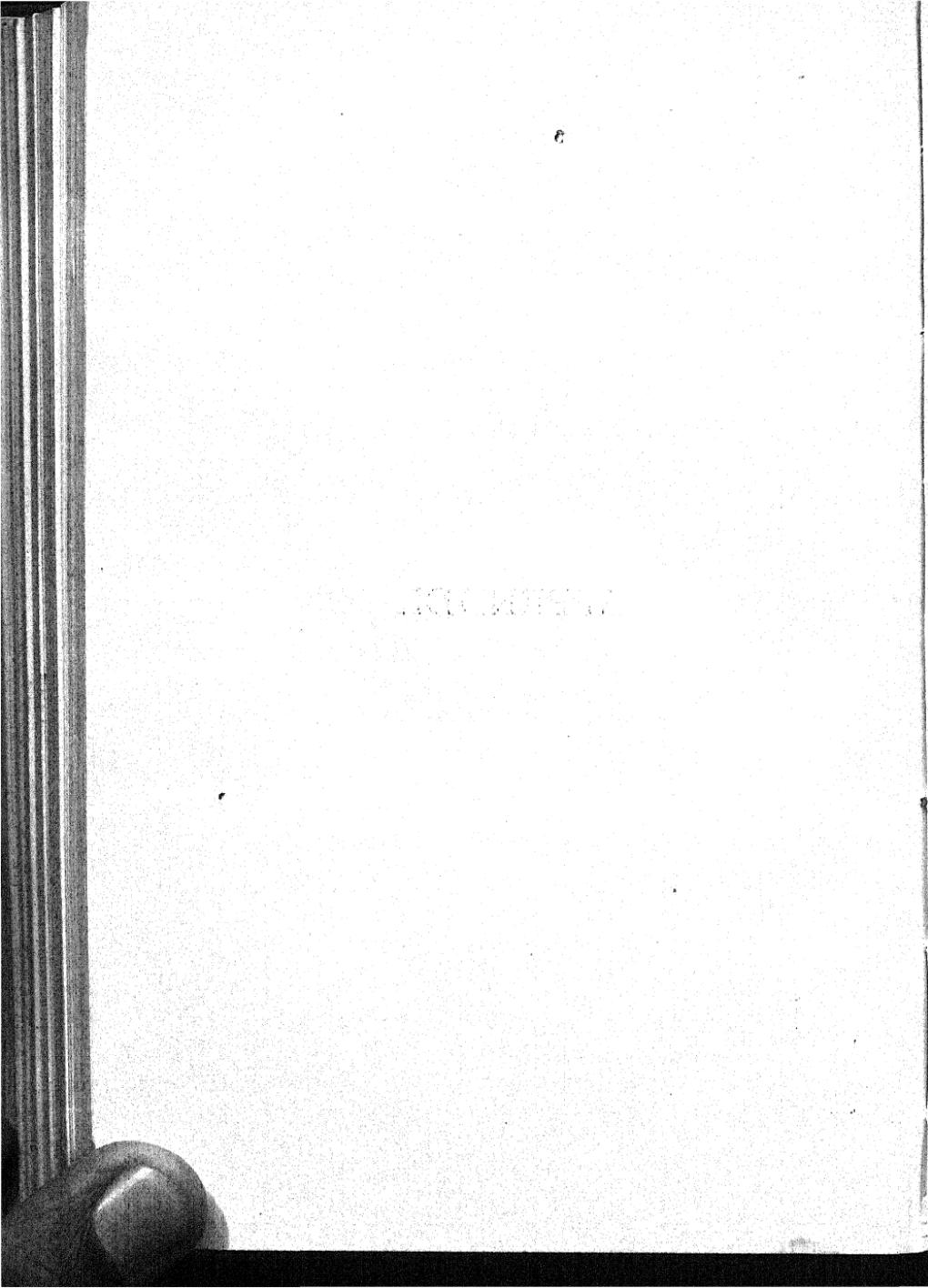
There were two important departures from the recommendations of the Committee for which the Imperial Government was responsible. By a European British Subject was to be

understood any subject of His Majesty, born, naturalized or domiciled in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, including a Colonial and any child or grand-child of any such person by legitimate descent. And a provision was also made that in the case of persons subject to the Naval Discipline Act, the Army Act, or the Air Force Act, when accused of certain offences, the Advocate-General would be bound, if instructed by a competent authority, to move the High Court for the transfer of the case to that Court and that Court would be bound thereupon to transfer the case.

It was not thought prudent to press the opposition to these two points too far lest the whole Bill should come to grief. The Bill was the result of the spirit of compromise displayed by the two communities and of the spirit of moderation which the President brought to bear upon the discussions of the Committee.



APPENDIX.



GOVERNMENT OF INDIA ACT.

1919

ARRANGEMENT OF SECTIONS.

PART I.

HOME GOVERNMENT.

The Crown.

SECTION.

1. Government of India by the Crown.

The Secretary of State.

2. The Secretary of State.

The Council of India.

3. The Council of India.
4. Seat in Council disqualification for Parliament.
5. Duties of Council.
6. Powers of Council.
7. President and vice-president of Council.
8. Meetings of Council.
9. Procedure at meetings.
10. Committees of Council and business.

Orders and Communications.

11. Correspondence between Secretary of State and India;
- 12 to 14 Omitted.
15. Communication to Parliament as to orders for commencing hostilities.
16. Omitted.

Establishment of Secretary of State.

17. Establishment of Secretary of State.
18. Pensions and gratuities.

Military Appointments.

19. Military appointments.

Relaxation of control of Secretary of State.

- 19.A. Relaxation of control of Secretary of State.
-

PART II.

THE REVENUES OF INDIA.

20. Application of revenues.
 21. Control of Secretary of State over expenditure of revenues.
 22. Application of revenues to military operations beyond the frontier.
 23. Accounts of Secretary of State with Bank.
 24. Powers of attorney for sale or purchase of stock and receipt of dividends.
 25. Provision as to securities.
 26. Accounts to be annually laid before Parliament.
 27. Audit of Indian accounts in United Kingdom.
-

PART III.

PROPERTY, CONTRACTS AND LIABILITIES.

28. Power of Secretary of State to sell, mortgage and buy property.
29. Contracts of Secretary of State.
- 29A. High Commissioner for India.
30. Power to execute assurances, &c., in India.
31. Power to dispose of escheated property, &c.
32. Rights and liabilities of Secretary of State in Council.

PART IV.**THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL IN COUNCIL.***General Powers and Duties of Governor-General in Council.*

33. Powers of control of Governor-General in Council.

The Governor-General.

34. The Governor-General.

The Governor-General's Executive Council.

35. Omitted.

36. Members of Council.

37. Rank and precedence of the Commander-in-Chief.

38. Vice-president of Council.

39. Meetings.

40. Business of Governor-General in Council.

41. Procedure in case of difference of opinion.

42. Provision for absence of governor-general from meetings of Council.

43. Powers of governor-general in absence from council.

- 43A. Appointment of council secretaries.

War and Treaties.

44. Restriction on power of Governor-General in Council to make war or treaty.
-

PART V.**LOCAL GOVERNMENTS.***General.*

45. Relation of local Governments to Governor-General in Council.

- 45A. Classification of central and provincial subjects.

Governorships.

46. Local government in governors' provinces.

47. Members of governor's executive councils.

48. Vice-president of council.

49. Business of governor in council and governor with ministers.
50. Procedure in case of difference of opinion in executive council.
51. Provision for absence of governor from meetings of council.
52. Appointment of ministers and council secretaries.
- 52A. Constitution of new provinces, &c. and provision as to backward tracts.
- 52B. Saving.

Lieutenant-Governorships and other Provinces.

53. Lieutenant-governorships.
54. Appointment, &c. of lieutenant-governors.
55. Power to create executive councils for lieutenant-governors.
56. Vice-president of lieutenant-governor's council.
57. Business of lieutenant-governor in Council.
58. Chief Commissioners.
59. Power to place territory under authority of Governor-General in Council.

Boundaries.

60. Power to declare and alter boundaries of provinces.
 61. Saving as to laws.
 62. Power to extend boundaries of presidency-towns.
-

PART VI.

INDIAN LEGISLATION.

The Indian Legislature.

63. Indian Legislature.
- 63A. Council of State.

- 63B. Legislative Assembly.
 63C. President of Legislative Assembly.
 63D. Duration and sessions of Legislative Assembly and Council of State.
 63E. Membership of both chambers.
 64. Supplementary provisions as to composition of Legislative Assembly and Council of State.
 65. Powers of Indian Legislature.
 66. Laws for the Royal Indian Marine Service.
 67. Business and proceedings in Indian Legislature.
 67A. Indian budget.
 67B. Provision for case of failure to pass legislation.
 68. Assent of Governor-General to Bills.
 69. Power of Crown to disallow Acts.
 70. *Omitted.*

Regulations and Ordinances.

71. Power to make regulations.
 72. Power to make ordinances in cases of emergency.

Local Legislatures.

(a) *Governor's Provinces.*

- 72A. Governors' Legislative Councils.
 72B. Sessions and duration of Governors' Legislative Councils.
 72C. Presidents of Governors' Legislative Councils.
 72D. Business and procedure in Governors' Legislative Councils.
 72E. Provision for case of failure to pass Legislation in governors' Legislative Councils.

(b) *Lieutenant-Governors' and Chief Commissioners' Provinces.*

73. Legislative Councils of Lieutenant-Governors and Chief Commissioners.

APPENDIX

- 74—75. *Omitted.*
76. Constitution of Legislative Councils of Lieutenant-Governors and Chief Commissioners.
77. Power to constitute local Legislatures in Lieutenant-Governors' and Chief Commissioners' provinces.
78. Meetings of Legislative Councils of Lieutenant-Governors and Chief Commissioners.
79. *Omitted.*
80. Business at meetings of Councils of Lieutenant-Governors and Chief Commissioners.

(c) *General.*

- 80A. Powers of local Legislatures.
- 80B. Vacation of seats in Local Legislative Councils.
- 80C. Financial proposals.
81. Assent to Bills.
- 81A. Return and reservation of Bills.
82. Power of Crown to disallow Acts of local Legislatures.
83. *Omitted.*

Validity of Indian Laws.

84. Removal of doubts as to validity of certain Indian laws.
-

PART VI-A.

STATUTORY COMMISSION.

- 84A. Statutory Commission.
-

PART VII.

SALARIES, LEAVE OF ABSENCE, VACATION OF OFFICE,
APPOINTMENTS, &c.

85. Salaries and allowances of Governor-General and certain other officials in India.

86. Leave of absence to members of executive Councils.
 87. Provisions as to absence from India.
 88. *Omitted.*
 89. Power for Governor-General to exercise powers before taking seat.
 90. Temporary vacancy in office of Governor-General.
 91. Temporary vacancy in office of Governor.
 92. Temporary vacancy in office of member of an executive Council.
 93. Vacancy in Legislative Councils.
 94. Leave.
 95. Power to make rules as to Indian Military appointments.
 96. No disabilities in respect of religion, colour or place of birth.
 - 96A. Qualification of rulers and subjects of certain states for office.
-

PART VII-A.

THE CIVIL SERVICES IN INDIA.

- 96B. The Civil Service in India.
 - 96C. Public Service Commission.
 - 96D. Financial Control.
 - 96E. Rule under Part VII-A.
-

PART VIII.

THE INDIAN CIVIL SERVICE.

97. Rules for admission to the Indian Civil Service.
98. Offices reserved to the Indian Civil Service.
99. Power to appoint certain persons to reserved offices.
100. Power to make provisional appointments in certain cases.

PART IX.

THE INDIAN HIGH COURTS.

Constitution.

101. Constitution of High Courts.
102. Tenure of office of judges of High Courts.
103. Precedence of judges of High Courts.
104. Salaries &c., of judges of High Courts.
105. Provision for vacancy in the office of Chief Justice or other judge.

Jurisdiction.

106. Jurisdiction of High Court.
107. Powers of High Court with respect to subordinate courts.
108. Exercise of jurisdiction by single judges or division courts.
109. Power for Governor-General in Council to alter local limits of jurisdiction of High Courts.
110. Exemption from jurisdiction of High Court.
111. Written order by Governor-General justification for act in any court in India.

Law to be administered.

112. Law to be administered in cases of inheritance and succession.

Additional High Courts.

113. Power to establish additional High Courts.

Advocate-General.

114. Appointment and powers of Advocate-General.

PART X.

ECCLESIASTICAL ESTABLISHMENT.

- 115. Jurisdiction of Indian bishops.
 - 116. *Repealed.*
 - 117. Consecration of person resident in India appointed to Bishopric.
 - 118. Salaries and allowances of bishops and archdeacons.
 - 119. Payments to representatives of Bishops.
 - 120. Pensions to Bishops.
 - 121. Furlough rules.
 - 122. Establishment of Chaplains of Church of Scotland.
 - 123. Saving as to grants to Christians.
-

PART XI.

OFFENCES, PROCEDURE AND PENALTIES:

- 124. Certain acts to be misdemeanours: Oppression—Wilful disobedience—Breach of duty—Trading—Receiving presents.
 - 125. Loans to princes or Chiefs.
 - 126. Carrying on dangerous correspondence.
 - 126. Prosecution of offences in England.
 - 128. Limitation for prosecutions in British India.
 - 129. Penalties.
-

PART XII.

SUPPLEMENTAL.

- 129A. Provision as to rules.
- 130. Repeal.

APPENDIX

131. Saving as to certain rights and powers.
 132. Treaties, contracts and liabilities of East India Company.
 133. Orders of East India Company.
 134. Definitions.
 135. Short title.
-

FIRST SCHEDULE.—NUMBER OF MEMBERS OF LEGISLATIVE COUNCILS.

SECOND SCHEDULE.—OFFICIAL SALARIES, &c.

THIRD SCHEDULE.—OFFICES RESERVED TO THE INDIAN CIVIL SERVICE.

FOURTH SCHEULE.—ACTS REPEALED.

FIFTH SCHEDULE.—PROVISIONS OF THIS ACT WHICH MAY BE REPEALED OR ALTERED BY THE INDIAN LEGISLATURE.

GOVERNMENT OF INDIA ACT.

1919

AN ACT TO CONSOLIDATE ENACTMENTS RELATING TO THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA.

Be it enacted by the King's most Excellent Majesty, by and with the advice and consent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and Commons, in this present Parliament assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows :—

The Crown.

1. Government of India by the Crown.—The territories for the time being vested in His Majesty in India are governed by and in the name of His Majesty the King Emperor of India, and all rights which, if the Government of India Act, 1858 had not been passed, might have been exercised by the East India Company in relation to any territories, may be exercised by and in the name of His Majesty as rights incidental to the Government of India.

The Secretary of State.

2. The Secretary of State.—(1) Subject to the provisions of this Act, the Secretary of State has and performs all such or the like powers and duties relating to the government or revenues of India, and has all such or the like powers over all officers appointed or continued under this Act, as, if the

* NOTE :—The Act has been freely abridged for the Convenience of ordinary students. For more precise guidance reference should be made to the original Act.

Government of India Act, 1858, had not been passed, might or should have been exercised or performed by the East India Company, or by the Court of Directors or Court of Proprietors of that Company, either alone or by the direction or with the sanction or approbation of the Commissioners for the Affairs of India, in relation to that government or those revenues and the officers and servants of that Company, and also all such powers as might have been exercised by the said Commissioners alone.

(2) In particular, the Secretary of State may, subject to the provisions of this Act or rules made thereunder, superintend, direct and control all acts, operations and concerns which relate to the government or revenues of India, and all grants of salaries, gratuities and allowances, and all other payments and charges, out of or on the revenues of India.

(3) The salary of the Secretary of State shall be paid out of moneys provided by Parliament, and the salaries of his under-secretaries and any other expenses of his department may be paid out of the revenues of India or out of moneys provided by Parliament.

The Council of India.

3. •The Council of India.—(1) The Council of India shall consist of such number of members, not less than [eight] and not more than [twelve], as the Secretary of State may determine :

(2) The right of filling any vacancy in the Council shall be vested in the Secretary of State.

(3) Unless at the time of an appointment to fill a vacancy in the Council one half of the then existing members of the Council are persons who have served or resided in India for at least ten years, and have not last left India more than five

years before the date of their appointment, the person appointed to fill the vacancy must be so qualified.

(4) Every member of the Council shall hold office except as by this section provided, for a term of five years:

(5) The Secretary of State may, for special reasons of public advantage, re-appoint for a further term of five years any member of the Council whose term of office has expired. In any such case the reasons for the re-appointment shall be set forth in a minute signed by the Secretary of State and laid before both Houses of Parliament. Save as aforesaid, a member of the Council shall not be capable of re-appointment.

(6) Any member of the Council may, by writing signed by him, resign his office. The instrument of resignation shall be recorded in the minutes of the Council.

(7) Any member of the Council may be removed by His Majesty from his office on an address of both Houses of Parliament.

(8) There shall be paid to each member of the Council of India the annual salary of twelve hundred pounds.

Provided that any member of the Council who was at the time of his appointment domiciled in India shall receive, in addition to the salary hereby provided, an annual subsistence allowance of six hundred pounds.

Such salaries and allowances may be paid out of the revenues of India or out of moneys provided by Parliament.

4. Seat in Council disqualification for Parliament.—No member of the Council of India shall be capable of sitting or voting in Parliament.

5. Duties of Council.—The Council of India shall, under the direction of the Secretary of State, and subject to the

provisions of this Act, conduct the business transacted in the United Kingdom in relation to the government of India and the correspondence with India.

6. Powers of Council.—(1) All powers required to be exercised by the Secretary of State in Council, and all powers of the Council of India, shall be exercised at meetings of the Council at which such number of members are present as may be prescribed by general direction of the Secretary of State.

(2) The Council may act notwithstanding any vacancy in their number.

7. President and Vice-President of Council.—(1) The Secretary of State shall be the president of the Council of India, with power to vote.

(2) The Secretary of State in Council may appoint any member of the Council to be vice-president thereof, and the Secretary of State may at any time remove any person so appointed.

(3) At every meeting of the Council the Secretary of State, or, in his absence, the Vice-President, if present, or, in the absence of both of them, one of the members of the Council, chosen by the members present at the meeting, shall preside.

8. Meetings of Council.—Meetings of the Council of India shall be convened and held as and when the Secretary of State directs, but one such meeting at least shall be held in every month.

9. Procedure at meetings.—(1) At any meeting of the Council of India at which the Secretary of State is present, if there is a difference of opinion on any question, except a question with respect to which a majority of votes at a meet-

ing is by this Act declared to be necessary, the determination of the Secretary of State shall be final.

(2) In case of an equality of votes at any meeting of the Council, the person presiding at the meeting shall have a second or casting vote.

(3) All acts done at a meeting of the Council in the absence of the Secretary of State shall require the approval in writing of the Secretary of State.

(4) In case of difference of opinion on any question decided at a meeting of the Council, the Secretary of State may require that his opinion and the reasons for it be entered in the minutes of the proceedings, and any member of the Council, who has been present at the meeting, may require that his opinion, and any reasons for it that he has stated at the meeting, be also entered in like manner.

10. Committees of Council and business.—The Secretary of State may constitute Committees of the Council of India for the more convenient transaction of business, and direct what departments of business are to be under those committees respectively, and generally direct the manner in which the business of the Secretary of State in Council or the Council of India shall be transacted, and any order made or act done in accordance with such direction shall, subject to the provisions of this Act, be treated as being an order of the Secretary of State in Council.

Orders and Communications.

11. Correspondence between Secretary of State and India.—Subject to the provisions of this Act, the procedure for the sending of orders and communications to India and in general for correspondence between the Secretary of State

and the Governor-General in Council or any local government shall be such as may be prescribed by order of the Secretary of State in Council.

15. Communication to Parliament as to orders for commencing hostilities.—When any order is sent to India directing the actual commencement of hostilities by His Majesty's forces in India, the fact of the order having been sent shall, unless the order has in the meantime been revoked or suspended, be communicated to both Houses of Parliament within three months after the sending of the order, or, if Parliament is not sitting at the expiration of those three months, then within one month after the next meeting of Parliament.

19A. Relaxation of control of Secretary of State.—The Secretary of State in Council may, notwithstanding anything in this Act, by rule regulate and restrict the exercise of the powers of superintendence, direction and control, vested in the Secretary of State and the Secretary of State in Council by this Act, or otherwise, in such manner as may appear necessary or expedient in order to give effect to the purposes of the Government of India Act, 1919.

Before any rules are made under this section relating to subjects other than transferred subjects, the rules proposed to be made shall be laid in draft before both Houses of Parliament, and such rules shall not be made unless both Houses by resolution approve the draft either without modification or addition, or with modifications or additions to which both Houses agree, but upon such approval being given the Secretary of State in Council may make such rules in the form in which they have been approved, and such rules on being so made shall be of full force and effect.

Any rules relating to transferred subjects made under this section shall be laid before both Houses of Parliament as soon as may be after they are made and if an address is presented to His Majesty by either House of Parliament within the next thirty days on which that House has sat after the rules are laid before it praying that the rules or any of them may be annulled, His Majesty in Council may annul the rules or any of them, and those rules shall thenceforth be void, but without prejudice to the validity of anything previously done thereunder.

PART II.

THE REVENUES OF INDIA.

20. Application of revenues.—(i) The revenues of India shall be received for and in the name of His Majesty, and shall, subject to the provisions of this Act, be applied for the purposes of the government of India alone.

21. Control of Secretary of State over expenditure of revenues.—Subject to the provisions of this Act, and rules made thereunder, the expenditure of the revenues of India, both in British India and elsewhere, shall be subject to the control of the Secretary of State in Council, and no grant or appropriation of any part of those revenues, or of any other property coming into the possession of the Secretary of State in Council by virtue of the Government of India Act, 1858, or this Act, shall be made without the concurrence of a majority of votes at a meeting of the Council of India:

Provided that a grant or appropriation made in accordance with provisions or restrictions prescribed by the Secretary of State in Council with the concurrence of a majority

of votes at a meeting of the Council shall be deemed to be made with the concurrence of a majority of such votes.

22. Application of revenues to Military Operations beyond the Frontier.—Except for preventing or repelling actual invasion of His Majesty's Indian possessions, or under other sudden and urgent necessity, the revenues of India shall not, without the consent of both Houses of Parliament, be applicable to defraying the expenses of any military operations carried on beyond the external frontiers of those possessions by His Majesty's forces charged upon those revenues.

26. Accounts to be annually laid before Parliament.—(1) The Secretary of State in Council shall, within the first twenty-eight days during which Parliament is sitting next after the first day of May in every year, lay before both Houses of Parliament.—

(a) an account, for the financial year preceding that last completed, of the annual produce of the revenues of India.

(3) The account shall be accompanied by a statement, prepared from detailed reports from each province, in such form as best exhibits the moral and material progress and condition of India.

27. Audit of Indian accounts in United Kingdom.—(1) His Majesty may, by warrant under His Royal Sign Manual; countersigned by the Chancellor of the Exchequer, appoint a fit person to be auditor of the accounts of the Secretary of State in Council, and authorise that auditor to appoint and remove such assistants as may be specified in the warrant.

(5) The auditor shall report to the Secretary of State in Council his approval or disapproval of the accounts aforesaid, with such remarks and observations in relation thereto, as

he thinks fit, specially noting cases (if any) in which it appears to him that any money arising out of the revenues of India has been appropriated to purpose other than those to which they are applicable.

(7) The auditor shall lay all his reports before both Houses of Parliament, with the accounts of the year to which the reports relate.

(8) The auditor shall hold office during good behaviour.

(9) There shall be paid to the auditor and his assistants, out of the revenues of India, or out of moneys provided by Parliament, such salaries as His Majesty, by warrant signed and countersigned as aforesaid, may direct.

PART III.

29A. High Commissioner for India.—His Majesty may by Order in Council make provision for the appointment of a High Commissioner for India in the United Kingdom, and for the pay, pensions, powers, duties, and conditions of employment of the High Commissioner and of his assistants; and the Order may further provide for delegating to the High Commissioner any of the powers previously exercised by the Secretary of State or the Secretary of State in Council, whether under this Act or otherwise, in relation to making contracts, and may prescribe the conditions under which he shall act on behalf of the Governor-General in Council or any local government.

32. Rights and liabilities of Secretary of State in Council.—The Secretary of State in Council may sue and be sued by the name of the Secretary of State in Council as a body corporate.

(2) Every person shall have the same remedies against the Secretary of State in Council as he might have had against the East India Company if the Government of India Act, 1858, and this Act had not been passed..

(3) The property for the time being vested in His Majesty for the purposes of the government of India shall be liable to the same judgments and executions as it would have been liable to in respect of liabilities lawfully incurred by the East India Company if the Government of India Act, 1858, and this Act had not been passed.

(4) Neither the Secretary of State nor any member of the Council of India shall be personally liable in respect of any assurance or contract made by or on behalf of the Secretary of State in Council, or any other liability incurred by the Secretary of State or the Secretary of State in Council in his or their official capacity, nor in respect of any contract, covenant or engagement of the East India Company; nor shall any person executing any assurance or contract on behalf of the Secretary of State in Council be personally liable in respect thereof; but all such liabilities, and all costs and damages in respect thereof, shall be borne by the revenues of India.

PART IV.

THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL IN COUNCIL.

33. Powers of control of Governor-General in Council.— Subject to the provisions of this Act and rules made thereunder, the superintendence, direction and control of the civil and military government of India is vested in the Governor-General in Council, who is required to pay due obedience

to all such orders as he may receive from the Secretary of State.

34. The Governor-General.—The Governor-General of India is appointed by His Majesty by warrant under the Royal Sign Manual.

36. Members of Council.—(1) The members of the Governor-General's executive Council shall be appointed by His Majesty by warrant under the Royal Sign Manual.

(2) The number of the members of the council shall be such as His Majesty thinks fit to appoint.

(3) Three at least of them must be persons who have been for at least ten years in the service of the Crown in India and one must be a barrister of England or Ireland, or a member of the Faculty of Advocates of Scotland, or a pleader of a High Court of not less than ten years' standing.

(4) If any member of the council (other than the Commander-in-Chief for the time being of His Majesty's forces in India) is at the time of his appointment in the military service of the Crown, he shall not, during his continuance in office as such member, hold any military command or be employed in actual military duties.

(5) Provision may be made by rules under this Act as to the qualifications to be required in respect of the members of the Governor-General's executive council in any case where such provision is not made by the foregoing provisions of this section.

38. Vice-president of Council.—The Governor-General shall appoint a member of his executive council to be vice-president thereof.

39. Meetings.—(1) The Governor-General's executive council shall assemble at such places in India as the Governor-General in Council appoints.

(2) At any meeting of the Council the Governor-General or other person presiding and one member of the council (other than the Commander-in-Chief) may exercise all the functions of the Governor-General in Council.

40. Business of Governor-General in Council.—(1) All orders and other proceedings of the Governor-General in Council shall be expressed to be made by the Governor-General in Council, and shall be signed by a secretary to the Government of India, or otherwise, as the Governor-General in Council may direct and when so signed shall not be called into question in any legal proceeding on the ground that they were not duly made by the Governor-General in Council.

(2) The Governor-General may make rules and orders for the more convenient transaction of business in his executive council, and every order made, or act done, in accordance with such rules and orders, shall be treated as being the order or the act of the Governor-General in Council.

41. Procedure in case of difference of opinion.—(1) If any difference of opinion arises on any question brought before a meeting of the Governor-General's executive council, the Governor-General in Council shall be bound by the opinion and decision of the majority of those present, and, if they are equally divided, the Governor General or other person presiding shall have a second or casting vote.

(2) Provided that whenever any measure is proposed before the Governor-General in Council whereby the safety, tranquility or interests of British India, or of any part thereof

are or may be, in the judgment of the Governor-General, essentially affected, and he is of opinion either that the measure proposed ought to be adopted and carried into execution, or that it ought to be suspended or rejected, and the majority present at a meeting of the council dissent from that opinion, the Governor-General may, on his own authority and responsibility, adopt, suspend or reject the measure, in whole or in part.

(3) In every such case any two members of the dissentient majority may require that the adoption, suspension or rejection of the measure, and the fact of [their dissent, be reported to the Secretary of State, and the report shall be accompanied by copies of any minutes which the members of the council have recorded on the subject.

(4) Nothing in this section shall empower the Governor-General to do anything which he could not lawfully have done with the concurrence of his council.

42: Provision for absence of Governor-General from meetings of Council.—If the Governor-General is obliged to absent himself from any meeting of the council, by indisposition or any other cause, the vice-president, or, if he is absent, the senior member (other than the Commander-in-Chief) present at the meeting shall preside thereat, with the like powers as the Governor-General would have had if present:

Provided that if the Governor-General is at the time resident at the place where the meeting is assembled, and is not prevented by indisposition from signing any act of council made at the meeting, the act shall require his signature; but, if he declines or refuses to sign it, the like provisions shall have effect as in cases where the Governor-General, when present, dissent from the majority at a meeting of the Council.

43. Powers of Governor-General in absence from Council.

—(1) Whenever the Governor-General in Council declares that it is expedient that the Governor-General should visit any part of India unaccompanied by his executive council, the Governor-General in Council may, by order, authorize the Governor-General alone to exercise, in his discretion, all or any of the powers which might be exercised by the Governor-General in Council at meetings of the council.

(2) The Governor-General during absence from his executive council may, if he thinks it necessary, issue, on his own authority and responsibility, any order, which might have been issued by the Governor-General in Council, to any local Government, or to any officers or servants of the Crown acting under the authority of any local Government without previously communicating the order to the local Government ; and any such order shall have the same force as if made by the Governor-General in Council ; but a copy of the order shall be sent forthwith to the Secretary of State and to the local Government, with the reasons for making the order.

(3) The Secretary of State in Council may, by order, suspend until further order all or any of the powers of the Governor-General under the last foregoing sub-section ; and those powers shall accordingly be suspended as from the time of the receipt by the Governor-General of the order of the Secretary of State in Council.

43A. Appointment of Council Secretaries.—(1) The Governor-General may at his discretion appoint from among the members of the Legislative Assembly, council secretaries who shall hold office during his pleasure and discharge such duties in assisting the members of his executive council as he may assign to them.

(z) There shall be paid to council secretaries so appointed such salary as may be provided by the Indian legislature.

(3) A council secretary shall cease to hold office if he ceases more than six months to be a member of the Legislative Assembly.]

PART V.

LOCAL GOVERNMENTS.

45. Relation of local governments to Governor-General in Council.

Council.—(1) Subject to the provisions of this Act and rules made thereunder every local government shall obey the orders of the Governor-General in Council, and keep him constantly and diligently informed of its proceedings and of all matters which ought, in its opinion, to be reported to him, or as to which he requires information, and is under his superintendence, direction and control in all matters relating to the government of its province.

(3) The authority of a local government is not superseded by the presence in its province of the Governor-General.

45A. Classification of central and provincial subjects—

(1) Provision may be made by rules under this Act—

(a) for the classification of subjects, in relation to the functions of government, as central and provincial subjects, for the purpose of distinguishing the functions of local governments and local legislatures from the functions of the Governor-General in Council and the Indian legislature;

(b) for the devolution of authority in respect of provincial subjects to local governments, and for the allocation of revenues or other moneys to those government;

- (c) for the use under the authority of the Governor-General in Council of the agency of local government in relation to central subjects, in so far as such agency may be found convenient, and for determining the financial conditions of such agency; and
 - (d) for the transfer from among the provincial subjects of subjects (in this Act referred to as "transferred subjects") to the administration of the governor acting with ministers appointed under this Act, and for the allocation of revenues or moneys for the purpose of such administration.
- (2) Without prejudice to the generality of the foregoing powers, rules made for the above-mentioned purposes may—
- (i) regulate the extent and conditions of such devolution, allocation, and transfer;
 - (ii) provide for fixing the contributions payable by local governments to the Governor-General in Council, and making such contributions a first charge on allocated revenues or moneys;
 - (iii) provide for constituting a finance department in any province, and regulating the functions of that department;
 - (iv) provide for regulating the exercise of the authority vested in the local government of a province over members of the public services therein;
 - (v) provide for the settlement of doubts arising as to whether any matter does or does not relate to a provincial subject or a transferred subject, and for the treatment of matters which affect both a transferred subject and a subject which is not transferred; and
 - (vi) make such consequential and supplemental provisions as appear necessary or expedient.

Provided that without prejudice to any general power of revoking or altering rules under this Act, the rules shall not authorise the revocation or suspension of the transfer of any subject except with the sanction of the Secretary of State in Council.

(3) The powers of superintendence, direction, and control over local governments vested in the Governor-General in Council under this Act shall, in relation to transferred subjects, be exercised only for such purposes as may be specified in rules made under this Act, but the Governor-General in Council shall be the sole judge as to whether the purpose of the exercise of such powers in any particular case comes within the purposes so specified.

(4) The expressions "central subjects" and "provincial subjects" as used in this Act mean subjects so classified under the rules.

Provincial subjects, other than transferred subjects, are in this Act referred to as "reserved subjects."

Governorships.

46. Local Government in Governors' Provinces.—(1) The presidencies of Fort William in Bengal, Fort St. George, and Bombay and the provinces known as the United Provinces, the Punjab, Bihar and Orissa, the Central Provinces, and Assam, shall each be governed, in relation to reserved subjects, by a governor in council, and in relation to transferred subjects (save as otherwise provided by this Act) by the governor acting with ministers appointed under this Act.

The said presidencies and provinces are in this Act referred to as "governors' provinces" and the two first named presidencies are in this Act referred to as the presidencies of Bengal and Madras.

(2) The governors of the said presidencies are appointed by His Majesty by warrant under the Royal Sign Manual, and the governors of the said provinces shall be so appointed after consultation with the Governor-General.

(3) The Secretary of State may, if he thinks fit, by order revoke or suspend, for such period as he may direct, the appointment of a council for any or all of the governors' provinces; and whilst any such order is in force the governor of the province to which the order refers shall have all the powers of the Governor thereof in Council.

47. Members of Governors' executive councils.—(1) The members of a governor's executive council shall be appointed by His Majesty by warrant under the Royal Sign Manual, and shall be of such number, not exceeding four, as the Secretary of State in Council directs.

(2) One at least of them must be a person who at the time of his appointment has been for at least twelve years in the service of the Crown in India.

(3) Provision may be made by rules under this Act as to the qualifications to be required in respect of members of the executive council of the governor of a province in any case where such provision is not made by the foregoing provisions of this section.

48. Vice-president of the Council.— Every governor of a province shall appoint a member of his executive council to be vice-president thereof.

49. Business of Governor-in-Council and Governor with ministers.—(1) All orders and other proceedings of the government of a governor's province shall be expressed to be made by the government of the province, and shall be authenticated

as the governor may by rule direct, so, however, that provision shall be made by rule for distinguishing orders and other proceedings relating to transferred subjects from other orders and proceedings.

Orders and proceedings authenticated as aforesaid shall not be called into question in any legal proceeding on the ground that they were not duly made by the government of the province.

(2) The governor may make rules and orders for the more convenient transaction of business in his executive council and with his ministers, and every order made or act done in accordance with those rules and orders shall be treated as being the order or the act of the government of the province.

The governor may also make rules and orders for regulating the relations between his executive council and his ministers for the purpose of the transaction of the business of the local government.

Provided that any rules or orders made for the purposes specified in this section which are repugnant to the provisions of any other rules made under this Act, shall, to the extent of that repugnancy, but not otherwise, be void.

50. (1) & (2), (4) same as 41. (1), (2), (4) *mutatis mutandis.*

(3) In every such case the governor and the members of the council present at the meeting shall mutually exchange written communications (to be recorded at large in their secret proceedings) stating the grounds of their respective opinions, and the order of the governor shall be signed by the governor and by those members.

52. Appointment of Ministers and Council Secretaries.—
(1) The governor of a governor's province may, by notification, appoint ministers, not being members of his executive council or other officials, to administer transferred subjects, and any ministers so appointed shall hold office during his pleasure.

There may be paid to any minister so appointed in any province the same salary as is payable to a member of the executive council in that province, unless a smaller salary is provided by vote of the legislative council of the province.

(2) No minister shall hold office for a longer period than six months, unless he is or becomes an elected member of the local legislature.

(3) In relation to transferred subjects, the governor shall be guided by the advice of his ministers, unless he sees sufficient cause to dissent from their opinion, in which case he may require action to be taken otherwise than in accordance with that advice :

Provided that rules may be made under this Act for the temporary administration of a transferred subject where, in cases of emergency, owing to a vacancy, there is no minister in charge of the subject, by such authority and in such manner as may be prescribed by the rules.

(4) The governor of a governor's province may at his discretion appoint from among the non-official members of the local legislature, council secretaries, who shall hold office during his pleasure, and discharge such duties in assisting members of the executive council and ministers as he may assign to them.

There shall be paid to council secretaries so appointed such salary as may be provided by vote of the legislative council.

A council secretary shall cease to hold office if he ceases for more than six months to be a member of the legislative council.

52A. Constitution of new provinces, &c., and provision as to backward tracts.—(1) The Governor-General in Council may, after obtaining an expression of opinion from the local government and the local legislature affected, by notification, with the sanction of His Majesty previously signified by the Secretary of State in Council, constitute a new governor's province, or place part of a governor's province under the administration of a deputy-governor to be appointed by the Governor-General, and may in such case apply, with such modifications as appear necessary or desirable, all or any of the provisions of this Act relating to governor's provinces or provinces under a lieutenant governor or chief commissioner, to any such new province or part of a province.

(2) The Governor-General in Council may declare any territory in British India to be a "backward tract," and may, by notification, with such sanction as aforesaid, direct that this Act shall apply to that territory subject to such exceptions & modifications as may be prescribed in the notification.

Where the Governor-General in Council has, by notification, directed as aforesaid, he may, by the same or subsequent notification, direct that any Act of the Indian legislature shall not apply to the territory in question or any part thereof, or shall apply to the territory or any part thereof subject to such exceptions or modifications as the Governor-General thinks fit, or may authorise the governor in council to give similar directions as respects any Act of the local legislature.

60. Power to declare and alter boundaries of provinces.—The Governor-General in Council may, by notification, de-

clare, appoint or alter the boundaries of any of the provinces into which British India is for the time being divided, and distribute the territories of British India among the several provinces thereof in such manner as may seem expedient, subject to these qualifications, namely :—

- (1) an entire district may not be transferred from one province to another without the previous sanction of the Crown, signified by the Secretary of State in Council ; and
 - (2) any notification under this section may be disallowed by the Secretary of State in Council.
-

PART VI.

INDIAN LEGISLATION.

The Indian Legislature.

63. Indian Legislature.—Subject to the provisions of this Act, the Indian legislature shall consist of the Governor-General and two chambers, namely, the Council of State and the Legislative Assembly.

Except as otherwise provided by or under this Act, a Bill shall not be deemed to have been passed by the Indian legislature unless it has been agreed to by both chambers, either without amendment or with such amendments only as may be agreed to by both chambers.

63A. Council of State.—(1) The Council of State shall consist of not more than sixty members nominated or elected in accordance with rules made under this Act, of whom not more than twenty shall be official members.

(2) The Governor-General shall have power to appoint, from among the members of the Council of State, a president

and other persons to preside in such circumstances as he may direct.

(3) The Governor-General shall have the right of addressing the Council of State, and may for that purpose require the attendance of its members.

63B. Legislative Assembly.—(1) The Legislative Assembly shall consist of members nominated or elected in accordance with rules made under this Act.

(2) The total number of members of the Legislative Assembly shall be one hundred and forty. The number of non-elected members shall be forty, of whom twenty-six shall be official members. The number of elected members shall be one hundred.

Provided that rules made under this Act may provide for increasing the number of members of the Legislative Assembly as fixed by this section, and may vary the proportion which the classes of members bear one to another, so, however, that at least five-sevenths of the members of the Legislative Assembly shall be elected members, and at least one-third of the other members shall be non-official members.

(3) The Governor-General shall have the right of addressing the Legislative Assembly, and may for that purpose require the attendance of its members.

63C. President of Legislative Assembly.—(1) There shall be a president of the Legislative Assembly, who shall, until the expiration of four years from the first meeting thereof, be a person appointed by the Governor-General, and shall thereafter be a member of the Assembly elected by the Assembly and approved by the Governor-General:

Provided that, if at the expiration of such period of four years the Assembly is in session, the president then in office shall continue in office until the end of the current session, and the first election of a president shall take place at the commencement of the ensuing session.

(2) There shall be a deputy-president of the Legislative Assembly, who shall preside at meetings of the Assembly in the absence of the president, and who shall be a member of the Assembly elected by the Assembly and approved by the Governor General.

(3) The appointed president shall hold office until the date of the election of a president under this section, but he may resign his office by writing under his hand addressed to the Governor-General, or may be removed from office by order of the Governor-General, and any vacancy occurring before the expiration of his term of office shall be filled by a similar appointment for the remainder of such term.

(4) An elected president and a deputy-president shall cease to hold office if they cease to be members of the Assembly. They may resign office by writing under their hands addressed to the Governor-General, and may be removed from office by a vote of the Assembly with the concurrence of the Governor General.

(5) A president and deputy-president shall receive such salaries as may be determined, in the case of an appointed president by the Governor-General, and in the case of an elected president and a deputy-president by Act of the Indian legislature.

63D. Duration and sessions of Legislative Assembly and Council of State.—(1) Every Council of State shall continue

for five years, and every Legislative Assembly for three years from its first meeting :

Provided that—

- (a) either chamber of the legislature may be sooner dissolved by the Governor General and
 - (b) any such period may be extended by the Governor General if in special circumstances he so thinks fit and
 - (c) after the dissolution of either chamber the Governor-General shall appoint a date not more than six months, or with the sanction of the Secretary of State not more than nine months, after the date of dissolution for the next session of that chamber.
- (2) The Governor-General may appoint such times and places for holding the sessions of either chamber of the Indian legislature as he thinks fit, and may also from time to time, by notification or otherwise, prorogue such sessions.
- (3) Any meeting of either chamber of the Indian legislature may be adjourned by the person presiding.
- (4) All questions in either chamber shall be determined by a majority of votes of members present other than the presiding member, who shall, however, have and exercise a casting vote in the case of an equality of votes.
- (5) The powers of either chamber of the Indian legislature may be exercised notwithstanding any vacancy in the chamber.
- 63E. Membership of both Chambers.—(1)** An official shall not be qualified for election as a member of either chamber of the Indian legislature, and if any non-official member of either chamber accepts office in the service of the Crown in India, his seat in that chamber shall become vacant.

(2) If an elected member of either chamber of the Indian legislature becomes a member of the other chamber his seat in such first—mentioned chamber shall thereupon become vacant.

(3) If any person is elected a member of both chambers of the Indian legislature he shall, before he takes his seat in either chamber, signify in writing the chamber of which he desires to be a member, and thereupon his seat in the other chamber shall become vacant.

(4) Every member of the Governor-General's Executive Council shall be nominated as a member of one chamber of the Indian legislature, and shall have the right of attending in and addressing the other chamber, but shall not be a member of both chambers.

64. Supplementary provisions as to composition of Legislative Assembly and Council of State.—(1) Subject to the provisions of this Act, provision may be made by rules under this Act as to—

- (a) the term of office of nominated members of the Council of State and the Legislative Assembly, and the manner of filling casual vacancies occurring by reason of absence of members from India, inability to attend to duty, death, acceptance of office, or resignation duly accepted, or otherwise ; and
- (b) the conditions under which and the manner in which persons may be nominated as members of the Council of State or the Legislative Assembly ; and
- (c) the qualification of electors, the constitution of constituencies, and the method of election for the Council of State and the Legislative Assembly (including the number of members to be elected by communal and other electorates) and any matters incidental or ancillary thereto ; and

- (d) the qualifications for being or for being nominated or elected as members of the Council of State or the Legislative Assembly ; and
 - (e) the final decision of doubts or disputes as to the validity of an election ; and
 - (f) the manner in which the rules are to be carried into effect.
- (2) Subject to any such rules, any person who is a ruler or subject of any state in India may be nominated as a member of the Council of State or the Legislative Assembly.

65. Powers of Indian Legislature.—(1) The Indian legislature has power to make laws—

- (a) for all persons, for all courts, and for all places and things, within British India , and
- (b) for all subjects of His Majesty and servants of the Crown within other parts of India ; and
- (c) for all native Indian subjects of His Majesty, without and beyond as well as within British India ; and
- (d) for the government officers, soldiers, airmen and followers in His Majesty's Indian forces, wherever they are serving in so far as they are not subject to the Army Act or the Air Force Act ; and
- (e) for all persons employed or serving in or belonging to the Royal Indian Marine Service ; and
- (f) for repealing or altering any laws which for the time being are in force in any part of British India or apply to persons for whom the Indian legislature has power to make laws.

(2) Provided that the Indian legislature has not, unless expressly so authorised by Act of Parliament, power to make any law repealing or affecting—

- (i) any Act of Parliament passed after the year one thousand eight hundred and sixty and extending to British India (including the Army Act, the Air Force Act and any Act amending the same); or
- (ii) any Act of Parliament enabling the Secretary of State in Council to raise money in the United Kingdom for the government of India;

and has not power to make any law affecting the authority of Parliament, or any part of the unwritten laws or constitution of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland whereon may depend in any degree the allegiance of any person to the Crown of the United Kingdom, or affecting the sovereignty or dominion of the Crown over any part of British India.

(3) The Indian legislature has not power without the previous approval of the Secretary of State in Council, to make any law empowering any court, other than a high court, to sentence to the punishment of death any of His Majesty's subjects born in Europe, or the children of such subjects, or abolishing any high court.

67. Business and proceedings in Indian Legislature.—(1) Provision may be made by rules under this Act for regulating the course of business and the preservation of order in the chambers of the Indian Legislature, and as to the persons to preside at the meetings of the Legislative Assembly in the absence of the president and the deputy-president; and the rules may provide for the number of members required to constitute a quorum, and for prohibiting or regulating the asking of questions on, and the discussion of, any subject specified in the rules.

(2) It shall not be lawful, without the previous sanction of the Governor-General, to introduce at any meeting of either chamber of the Indian legislature any measure affecting—

- (a) the public debt or public revenues of India or imposing any charge on the revenues of India ; or
- (b) the religion or religious rites and usages of any class of British subjects in India ; or
- (c) the discipline or maintenance of any part of His Majesty's military, naval, or air forces ; or
- (d) the relations of the Government with foreign princes or states :

or any measure --

- (i) regulating any provincial subject, or any part of a provincial subject, which has not been declared by rules under this Act to be subject to legislation by the Indian legislature ; or
- (ii) repealing or amending any Act of a local legislature ; or
- (iii) repealing or amending any Act or ordinance made by the Governor-General.

(2a) Where in either chamber of the Indian legislature any Bill has been introduced, or is proposed to be introduced, or any amendment to a Bill is moved, or proposed to be moved, the Governor-General may certify that the Bill, or any clause of it, or the amendment, affects the safety or tranquility of British India, or any part thereof, and may direct that no proceedings, or that no further proceedings, shall be taken by the chamber in relation to the Bill, clause, or amendment, and effect shall be given to such direction.

(3) If any Bill which has been passed by one chamber is not, within six months after the passage of the Bill by that

chamber, passed by the other chamber either without amendments or with such amendments as may be agreed to by the two chambers, the Governor-General may in his discretion refer the matter for decision to a joint sitting of both chambers: Provided that standing orders made under this section may provide for meetings of members of both chambers appointed for the purpose, in order to discuss any difference of opinion which has arisen between the two chambers.

(4) Without prejudice to the powers of the Governor-General under section sixty-eight of this Act, the Governor-General may, where a Bill has been passed by both chambers of the Indian legislature, return the Bill for reconsideration by either chamber.

(5) Rules made for the purpose of this section may contain such general and supplemental provisions as appear necessary for the purpose of giving full effect to this section.

(6) Standing orders may be made providing for the conduct of business and the procedure to be followed in either chamber of the Indian legislature in so far as these matters are not provided for by rules made under this Act. The first standing orders shall be made by the Governor-General in Council but may with the consent of the Governor-General be altered by the chamber to which they relate.

Any standing order made as aforesaid which is repugnant to the provision of any rules made under this Act shall, to the extent of that repugnancy but not otherwise, be void.

(7) Subject to the rules and standing orders affecting the chamber there shall be freedom of speech in both chambers of the Indian legislature. No person shall be liable to any proceedings in any court by reason of his speech or vote in either chamber or by reason of anything contained in any official report of the proceedings of either chamber.

67A. Indian budget.—(1) The estimated annual expenditure and revenue of the Governor-General in Council shall be laid in the form of a statement before both chambers of the Indian legislature in each year.

(2) No proposal for the appropriation of any revenue or moneys for any purpose shall be made except on the recommendation of the Governor-General.

(3) The proposals of the Governor-General in Council for appropriation of revenue or money relating to the following heads of expenditure shall not be submitted to the vote of the Legislative Assembly, nor shall they be open to discussion by either chamber at the time when the annual statement is under consideration, unless the Governor-General otherwise directs—

- (i) interest and sinking fund charges on loans ; and
- (ii) expenditure of which the amount is prescribed by or under any law ; and
- (iii) salaries and pensions of persons appointed by or with the approval of His Majesty or by the Secretary of State in Council ; and
- (iv) salaries of chief commissioners and judicial commissioners ; and
- (v) expenditure classified by the order of the Governor-General in Council as—
 - (a) ecclesiastical ;
 - (b) political ;
 - (c) defence.

(4) If any question arises whether any proposed appropriation of revenue or moneys does or does not relate to the above heads, the decision of the Governor-General on the question shall be final.

(5) The proposals of the Governor-General in Council for the appropriation of revenue or moneys relating to heads of expenditure not specified in the above heads shall be submitted to the vote of the Legislative Assembly in the form of demands for grants.

(6) The Legislative Assembly may assent or refuse its assent to any demand or may reduce the amount referred to in any demand by a reduction of the whole grant.

(7) The demands as voted by the Legislative Assembly shall be submitted to the Governor-General in Council who shall, if he declares that he is satisfied that any demand which has been refused by the Legislative Assembly is essential to the discharge of his responsibilities, act as if it had been assented to, notwithstanding the withholding of such assent or the reduction of the amount therein referred to, by the Legislative Assembly.

(8) Notwithstanding anything in this section the Governor-General shall have power, in cases of emergency, to authorise such expenditure as may, in his opinion, be necessary for the safety or tranquility of British India or any part thereof.

67B. Provision for case of failure to pass legislation.—

(x) Where either chamber of the Indian legislature refuses leave to introduce, or fails to pass in a form recommended by the Governor-General, any Bill, the Governor-General may certify that the passage of the Bill is essential for the safety, tranquility, or interests of British India or any part thereof, and thereupon—

(a) If the Bill has already been passed by the other chamber, the Bill shall, on signature by the Governor-General, notwithstanding that it has not been consented to by both chambers, forthwith become an Act of the In-

dian legislature in the form of the Bill as originally introduced or proposed to be introduced in the Indian legislature, or (as the case may be) in the form recommended by the Governor-General ; and

- (b) If the Bill has not entirely been so passed, the Bill shall be laid before the other chamber, and, if concurred by the Governor-General, shall become an Act as aforesaid on the signification of the Governor-General's assent, or, if not so consented to, shall, on signature by the Governor-General, become an Act as aforesaid.
- (2) Every such Act shall be expressed to be made by the Governor-General, and shall, as soon as practicable after being made, be laid before both Houses of Parliament, and shall not, have effect until it has received His Majesty's assent, and shall not be presented for His Majesty's assent until copies thereof have been laid before each House of Parliament for not less than eight days on which that House has sat : and upon the significance of such assent by His Majesty in Council, and the notification thereof by the Governor-General, the Act, shall have the same force and effect as an Act passed by the Indian legislature and duly assented to :

Provided that where in the opinion of the Governor-General a state of emergency exists which justifies such action, the Governor-General may direct that any such Act shall come into operation forthwith, and thereupon the Act shall have such force and effect as aforesaid, subject, however, to disallowance by His Majesty in Council.

68. Assent of Governor-General to Bills.—(1) When a Bill has been passed by both chambers of the Indian legislature, the Governor-General, may declare that he assents

to the Bill, or that he withholds assent from the Bill, or that he reserves the Bill for the signification of His Majesty's pleasure theron.

(2) A Bill passed by both chambers of the Indian legislature shall not become an Act until the Governor-General has declared his assent thereto, or, in the case of a Bill reserved for the signification of His Majesty's pleasure, until His Majesty in Council has signified his assent and that assent has been notified by the Governor-General.

69. Powers of Crown to disallow Acts.—(1) When an Act of the Indian legislature has been assented to by the Governor-General, he shall send to the Secretary of State an authentic copy thereof, and it shall be lawful for His Majesty in Council to signify his disallowance of any such Act.

(2) Where the disallowance of any such Act has been so signified, the Governor-General shall forthwith notify the disallowance, and thereupon the Act, as from the date of the notification, shall become void accordingly.

Regulations and Ordinances.

71. Power to make regulations.—(1) The local Government of any part of British India to which this section for the time being applies may propose to the Governor-General in Council the draft of any regulation for the peace and good government of that part, with the reasons for proposing the regulations.

(2) Thereupon the Governor-General in Council may take any such draft and reason into consideration; and when any such draft has been approved by the Governor-General in Council and assented to by the Governor-General, it shall be

published in the Gazette of India and in the local official gazette, if any, and shall thereupon have the like force of law and be subject to the like disallowance as if it were an Act of the Indian legislature.

(3) The Governor-General shall send to the Secretary of State in Council an authentic copy of every regulation to which he has assented under this section.

(4) The Secretary of State may, by resolution in council, apply this section to any part of British India, as from a date to be fixed in the resolution, and withdraw the application of this section from any part to which it has been applied.

72. Power to make ordinances in case of emergency.—The Governor-General may, in cases of emergency, make and promulgate ordinances for the peace and good government of British India or any part thereof, and any ordinance so made shall, for the space of not more than six months from its promulgation, have the like force of law as an Act passed by the Indian legislature but the power of making ordinances under this section is subject to the like restrictions as the power of the Indian legislature to make laws; and any ordinance made under this section is subject to the like disallowance as an Act passed by the Indian legislature and may be controlled or superseded by any such Act.

LOCAL LEGISLATURES.

(a) Governor's Provinces.

72A. Composition of Governors' Legislative Councils.—(1) There shall be a legislative council in every governor's province, which shall consist of the members of the executive council and of the members nominated or elected as provided by this Act.

The governor shall not be a member of the legislative council, but shall have the right of addressing the council, and may for that purpose require the attendance of its members.

(2) The number of members of the governors' legislative councils shall be in accordance with the table set out in the First Schedule to this Act ; and of the members of each council not more than twenty per cent. shall be official members, and at least seventy per cent. shall be elected members :

Provided that—

- (a) subject to the maintenance of the above proportions, rules under this Act may provide for increasing the number of members of any council, as specified in that schedule ; and
 - (b) the governor may, for the purposes of any Bill introduced or proposed to be introduced in this legislative council, nominate, in the case of Assam one person, and in the case of other provinces not more than two persons, having special knowledge or experience of the subject-matter of the Bill, and those persons shall, in relation to the Bill, have for the period for which they are nominated all the rights of members of the council, and shall be in addition to the numbers above referred to ; and
 - (c) members nominated to the legislative council of the Central Provinces by the governor as the result of elections held in the Assigned Districts of Berar shall be deemed to be elected members of the legislative council of the Central Provinces.
- (3) The powers of a governor's legislative council may be exercised notwithstanding any vacancy in the Council.

(4) Subject as aforesaid, provision may be made by rules under this Act as to—

Same as 64 (a), (b), (c), (d), (e), (f) *mutatis mutandis*.

Provided that rules as to any such matters as aforesaid may provide for delegating to the local government such power as may be specified in the rules of making subsidiary regulation affecting the same matters.

(5) Subject to any such rules any person who is a ruler or subject of any State in India may be nominated as a member of a governor's legislative council.

72B. Sessions and duration of governors' legislative councils.—(1) Every governor's legislative council shall continue for three years from its first meeting :

Provided that—

(a) the council may be sooner dissolved by the governor ; and

(b) the said period may be extended by the governor for a period not exceeding one year, by notification in the official gazette of the province, if in special circumstances (to be specified in the notification) he so think fit ; and

(c) after the dissolution of the council the governor shall appoint a date not more than six months or, with the sanction of the Secretary of State, not more than nine months from the date of dissolution for the next session of the council.

(2) A governor may appoint such times and places for holding the sessions of his legislative council as he thinks fit, and may also, by notification or otherwise, prorogue the council.

(3) Any meeting of a governor's legislative council may be adjourned by the person presiding.

(4) All questions in a governor's legislative council shall be determined by a majority of votes of the members present other than the person presiding, who shall, however, have and exercise a casting vote in the case of an equality of votes.

72C. Presidents of governor's legislative councils.—(1) There shall be a president of a governor's legislative Council, who shall, until the ex'piration of a period of four years from the first meeting of the council as constituted under this Act, be a person appointed by the governor, and shall thereafter be a member of the council elected by the council and approved by the governor :

Provided that, if at the expiration of such period of four years the council is in session, the president then in office shall continue in office until the end of the current session, and the first election of a president shall take place at the commencement of the next ensuing session.

(2) There shall be a deputy-president of a governor's legislative council who shall preside at meetings of the council in the absence of the president, and who shall be a member of the council elected by the council and approved by the qovernor.

(3). The appointed president of a council shall hold office until the date of the first election of a president by the council under this section but he may resign office by writing under his hand addressed to the governor, or may be removed from office by order of the governor, and any vacancy occurring before the expiration of the term of office of an appointed president shall be filled by a similar appointment for the remainder of such term.

(4) An elected president and a deputy-president shall cease to hold office on ceasing to be members of the council. They may resign office by writing under their hands addressed to

the governor, and may be removed from office by a vote of the council with the concurrence of the governor.

(5) The president and the deputy president shall receive such salaries as may be determined, in the case of an appointed president, by the governor, and in the case of an elected president or deputy-president, by Act of the local legislature.

72D. Business and procedure in governors' legislative councils.—(1) The provisions contained in this section shall have effect with respect to business and procedure in governor's legislative councils.

(2) The estimated annual expenditure and revenue of the province shall be laid in the form of a statement before the council in each year, and the proposals of the local government for the appropriation of provincial revenues and other moneys in any year shall be submitted to the vote of the council in the form of demands for grants. The councils may assent or refuse its assent, to a demand, or may reduce the amount therein referred to either by a reduction of the whole grant or by the omission or reduction of any of the items of expenditure of which the grant is composed:

Provided that—

- (a) the local government shall have power in relation to any such demand, to act as if it had been assented to, notwithstanding the withholding of such assent or the reduction of the amount therein referred to, if the demand relates to a reserved subject, and the governor certifies that the expenditure provided for by the demand is essential to the discharge of his responsibility for the subject ; and
- (b) the governor shall have power in cases of emergency to authorise such expenditure as may be in his opinion

APPENDIX

necessary for the safety or tranquility of the province, or for the carrying on of any department ; and

(c) no proposal for the appropriation of any such revenues or other moneys for any purpose shall be made except on the recommendation of the governor, communicated to the council.

(3) Nothing in the foregoing sub-section shall require proposals to be submitted to the council relating to the following heads of expenditure :—

- (i) contributions payable by the local government to the Governor-General in Council ; and
- (ii) interests and sinking fund charges on loans ; and
- (iii) expenditure of which the amount is prescribed by or under any law ; and
- (iv) salaries and pensions of persons appointed by or with the approval of His Majesty or by the Secretary of State in Council , and
- (v) salaries of judges of the high court of the province and of the advocate-general.

(4) If any question arises whether any proposed appropriation of moneys does or does not relate to the above heads of expenditure, the decision of the governor shall be final.

(5) Where any Bill has been introduced or is proposed to be introduced or any amendment to a Bill is moved or proposed to be moved, the governor may certify that the Bill or any clause of it or the amendment affects the safety or tranquility of its province or any part of it or of another province, and may direct that no proceedings or no further proceedings shall be taken by the council in relation to the Bill, clause or amendment, and effect shall be given to any such direction.

(6) Provision may be made by rules under this Act for the

purpose of carrying into effect the fore-going provisions of this section and for regulating the course of business in the council, and as to the persons to preside over meetings thereof in the absence of the president and deputy-president, and the preservation of order at meetings ; and the rules may provide for the number of members required to constitute a quorum and for prohibiting or regulating the asking of questions on and the discussion of any subject specified in trules.

(7) Standing orders may be made providing for the conduct of business and the procedure to be followed in the council, in so far as these matters are not provided for by rules made under this Act. The first standing orders shall be made by the governor in council, but may, subject to the assent of the governor, be altered by the local legislatures. Any standing order made as aforesaid, which is repugnant to the provisions of any rules made under this Act, shall, to the extent of that repugnancy but not otherwise be void.

(8) Subject to the rules and standing orders affecting the council, there shall be freedom of speech in the governor's legislative councils. No person shall be liable to any proceedings in any court by reason of his speech or vote in any such council, or by reason of anything contained in any official report of the proceedings of any such council.

72E. Provision for case of failure to pass legislation in governor's legislative councils.—(1) Where a governor's legislative council has refused leave to introduce, or has failed to pass in a form recommended by the governor, any Bill relating to a reserved subject, the governor may certify that the passage of the Bill is essential for the discharge of his responsibility for the subject, and thereupon the Bill shall, notwithstanding that the council have not consented thereto

be deemed to have passed, and shall on signature by the governor become an Act of the local legislature in the form of the Bill as originally introduced or proposed to be introduced in the council or (as the case may be) in the form recommended to the council by the governor.

(2) Every such Act shall be expressed to be made by the governor, and the governor shall forthwith send an authentic copy thereof to the Governor-General, who shall reserve the Act for the signification of His Majesty's pleasure, and upon the signification of such assent by His Majesty in Council and the notification thereof by the Governor-General, the Act shall have the same force and effect as an Act passed by the local legislature and duly assented to.

Provided that where in the opinion of the Governor-General a state of emergency exists which justifies such action, he may, instead of reserving such Act, signify his assent thereto, and thereupon the Act shall have such force and effect as aforesaid, subject however to disallowance by His Majesty in Council.

(3) An Act made under this section shall as soon as practicable after being made be laid before each House of Parliament, and an Act, which is required to be presented for His Majesty's assent shall not be so presented until copies thereof have been laid before each House of Parliament for not less than eight days on which that House has sat.

80A. Powers of Local Legislatures.—(1) The local legislature of any province has power, subject to the provisions of this Act, to make laws for the peace and good government of the territories for the time being constituting that province.

(2) The local legislature of any province may, subject to the provisions of the sub-section next following repeal or alter as to that province any law made either before or after

the commencement of this Act by any authority in British India other than that local legislature.

(3) The local legislature of any province may not, without the previous sanction of the Governor-General, make or take into consideration any law—

- (a) imposing or authorising the imposition of any new tax unless the tax is a tax scheduled as exempted from this provision by rules made under this Act ; or
- (b) affecting the public debt of India, or the customs duties, or any other tax or duty for the time being in force and imposed by the authority of the Governor-General in Council for the general purposes of the government of India, provided that the imposition or alteration of a tax scheduled as aforesaid shall not be deemed to affect any such tax or duty : or
- (c) affecting the discipline or maintenance of any part of His Majesty's naval, military, or air forces ; or
- (d) affecting the relations of the government with foreign princes or states ; or
- (e) regulating any central subject ; or
- (f) regulating any provincial subject which has been declared by rules under this Act to be, either in whole or in part subject to legislation by the Indian legislature, in respect of any matter to which such declaration applies ; or
- (g) affecting any power expressly reserved to the Governor-General in Council by any law for the time being in force ; or
- (h) altering or repealing the provisions of any law which having been made before the commencement of the Government of India Act, 1919, by any authority

in British India other than that local legislature, is declared by rules under this Act to be a law which cannot be repealed or altered by the local legislature without previous sanction ; or

- (i) altering or repealing any provision of an Act of the Indian legislature made after the commencement of the Government of India Act, 1919, which by the provisions of such first-mentioned Act may not be repealed or altered by the local legislature without previous sanction :

Provided that an Act or a provision of an Act made by a local legislature, and subsequently assented to by the Governor-General in pursuance of this Act, shall not be deemed invalid by reason only of its requiring the previous sanction of the Governor-General under this Act.

- (4) The local legislature of any province has not power to make any law affecting any Act of Parliament.

81A. Return and reservation of Bills.—(1) Where a Bill has been passed by a local legislative council, the governor, lieutenant-governor or chief commissioner may, instead of declaring that he assents to or withholds his assent from the Bill, return the Bill to the council for reconsideration, either in whole or in part, together with any amendments which he may recommend, or, in cases prescribed by rules under this Act, may, and if the rules so require, shall, reserve the Bill for the consideration of the Governor-General.

(2) Where a Bill is reserved for the consideration of the Governor-General, the following provision shall apply :—

- (a) The governor, lieutenant-governor or chief Commissioner may, at any time within six months from the date of the reservation of the Bill, with the consent of the Governor-General, return the Bill for

further consideration by the council with a recommendation that the council shall consider amendments thereto.

(b) After any Bill so returned has been further considered by the council, together with any recommendations made by the governor, lieutenant-governor or chief commissioner relating thereto the Bill, if re-affirmed with or without amendment, may be again presented to the governor, lieutenant-governor or chief commissioner:

(c) Any Bill reserved for the consideration of the Governor-General shall, if assented to by the Governor-General within a period of six months from the date of such reservation, become law on due publication of such assent, in the same way as a Bill assented to by the governor, lieutenant-governor or chief commissioner, but if not, assented to by the Governor-General within such period of six months, shall lapse and be of no effect unless before the expiration of that period either,

- (i) the Bill has been returned by the governor, lieutenant-governor or chief commissioner for further consideration by the council ; or
- (ii) in the case of the council not being in session, a notification has been published of an intention so to return the Bill at the commencement of the next session.

(3) The Governor-General may (except where the Bill has been reserved for his consideration), instead of assenting to or withholding his assent from any act passed by a local legislature, declare that he reserves the Act for the signification of His Majesty's pleasure thereon, and in such case the

Act shall not have validity until His Majesty in Council has signified his assent and his assent has been notified by the Governor-General.

PART VIA.

STATUTORY COMMISSION.

84A. Statutory Commission.—(1) At the expiration of ten years after the passing of the Government of India Act, 1919, the Secretary of State with the concurrence of both Houses of Parliament shall submit for the approval of His Majesty the names of persons to act as a commission for the purposes of this section.

(2) The persons whose names are so submitted, if approved by His Majesty, shall be a commission for the purpose of inquiring into the working of the system of government, the growth of education, and the development of representative institutions, in British India, and matters connected therewith, and the commission shall report as to whether and to what extent it is desirable to establish the principle of responsible government, or to extend, modify or restrict the degree of responsible government, then existing therein, including the question whether the establishment of second chambers of the local legislatures is or is not desirable.

(3) The commission shall also inquire into and report on any other matter affecting British India and the provinces which may be referred to the commission by His Majesty.

PART VIIA.

THE CIVIL SERVICES IN INDIA.

96B. The Civil Service in India;—(1) Subject to the provisions of this Act and of rules made thereunder, every per-

son in the civil service of the Crown in India holds office during His Majesry's pleasure, and may be employed in any manner required by a proper authority within the scope of his duty, but no person in that service may be dismissed by any authority subordinate to that by which he was appointed, and the Secretary of State in Council may (except so far as he may provide by rules to the contrary) reinstate any person in that service who has been dismissed.

If any such person appointed by the Secretary of State in Council thinks himself wronged by an order of an official superior in a governor's province, and on due application made to that superior does not receive the redress to which he may consider himself entitled, he may, without prejudice to any other right of redress, complain to the governor of the province in order to obtain justice, and the governor is hereby directed to examine such complaint and requires such action to be taken thereon as may appear to him to be just and equitable.

(2) The Secretary of State in Council may make rules for regulating the classification of the civil services in India, the methods of their recruitment, their conditions of service, pay and allowances, and discipline and conduct. Such rules may, to such extent and in respect of such matters as may be prescribed, delegate the power of making rules to the Governor-General in Council or to local governments, or authorise the Indian legislature or local legislatures to make laws regulating the public services.

96C. Public Service Commission.—(1) There shall be established in India a public service commission, consisting of not more than five members, of whom one shall be chairman, appointed by the Secretary of State in Council. Each member shall hold office for five years, and may be re-appointed.

No member shall be removed before the expiry of his term of office, except by order of the Secretary of State in Council. The qualifications for appointment, and the pay and pension (if any) attaching to the office of chairman and members shall be prescribed by rules made by the Secretary of State in Council.

(2) The public service commission shall discharge in regard to recruitment and control of the public services in India, such functions as may be assigned thereto by rules made by the Secretary of State in Council.

96D. Financial Control. —An auditor-general in India shall be appointed by the Secretary of State in Council, and shall hold office during His Majesty's pleasure. The Secretary of State in Council shall, by rules, make provision for his pay, powers, duties, and conditions of employment, or for the discharge of his duties in the case of a temporary vacancy or absence from duty.

By K. N. Dravid, M.A.,

Professor of Sanskrit, Willingdon College, Sangli,

“Sanskrit Prose Selections”

Prescribed by the Bombay University
for the Intermediate Examination
1925 & 1926. Fully annotated.

Price Rs. 3-0-0.

INDEX.

A

	Page.
<i>Abdul Rahman,</i> ..	.. 384
<i>Ackworth Committee</i> —	
on Railways ..	397-8
<i>Adam—Mr. William</i> —	
on Education in Bengal in in 1835 .. ..	.. 139
<i>Adamson, Sir H.</i> —	
on Separation ex. and judi. functions	450
<i>Aiyar—Sir Shivaswamy</i> —	
on amending the Constitu- tion .. ..	.. 374
on Esher Commission ..	388
“ <i>Arthur Vincent</i> ”—	
on Defence of India ..	380
<i>Auckland—Lord</i> —	
His Foreign Policy ..	76
<i>Aurangzib</i> —	
expels the English from Bengal .. ..	.. 3

B

<i>Basu, Bhupendra N.</i> —	
Member, Lee Commission .	407
<i>Bentick Lord William</i> —	
Policy towards N. States 73-74	
on the position of the ..	
Government of India ..	93
His land Revenue Policy 18-19	
Judicial Reforms ..	127-30

	Page
<i>Other Reforms</i> ..	146-47
<i>Bird—Robert M.</i> —	
His Settlement. in N.-W Pr	
.. .. ..	.. 119
<i>Blackett, Sir Basil</i> —	
On Meston award ..	261
On Deficit in central finance .. ..	.. 391
<i>Bray—Mr. Denys</i> —	
On Frontier Policy ..	386
<i>Briggs—Lt.-Gen. John</i> —	
On the Regulating Act ..	34
On Land Tax in India	116-17
<i>Brunyate, Sir James</i> —	
On relaxation of control	363-64
Or grant of fiscal autonomy to India .. ..	.. 400
<i>Burke</i> —	
On the commercial opera- tions of the E. I. C. ..	30
Commission of inquiry ..	31
On Committees of inquiry. .	42
C	
<i>Canning—Lord</i> —	
Introduces portfolio sys- tem in Ex Council ..	178
<i>Chailley—Joseph</i> —	
On the development of personal law .. ..	.. 132

Page.		Page.	
On the Ex Council of the Viceroy	187	<i>Creagh, Sir O'Moore</i> —	
On the Council Act of 1861	234	On the Executive Council of the G. G. ..	182-87
<i>Chelmsford—Lord</i> —		On the evils of Centralization	207-08
On the meaning of the Announcement of 1917 ..	251	<i>Crewe, Lord</i> —	
His Govt. oppose voting of budget by Assembly	357-58	On the reform of the India Council	170
—oppose Standing Committees	362	His Committee on Home Administration	251
On Indianization	403	,, ..	367
On Local government	421	<i>Cross, Lord</i> —	
<i>Chesney—Sir George</i> —		opposes election to legislative Councils	236
—on the reform of the Council of India ..	171	<i>Cunningham, H. S.</i> —	
<i>Choubal—Sir M.</i> —		Proposes to abolish the Presidencies	211
—Member—Pub. Ser. Com. 233		<i>Curtis—Lionel</i> —	
<i>Clive—Lord</i> —		His scheme of Dyarchy ..	249
—in Anglo French struggle	5	On the Redistribution of Provinces	254
—Revolution in Bengal ..	8-9	On the use of Vernaculars in the Council	295
—His Reforms	10-13	On Self-Determination ..	374
<i>Cornwall Lewis</i> —		<i>Curzon—Lord</i> —	
—On the state of Bengal in 1765-84	29	On the relations between Native States and the English power ..	88-89
—On the failure of direct Parl control	41	His resignation	175
<i>Cornwallis—Lord</i> —		Appoints member to the ex. Council	178
His foreign policy	53-54	And Kitchner	179
—Permanent Settlement	102-05	Forms the U. P.	192
—Judicial Reforms	124-27	Forms the N. W. Fr. Pr... ..	197
<i>Coupland, Prof.</i> —		His Quasi-permanent Settlement	221
Member, Lee Com.	408-10	Reduces strength of the Calcutta Corporation ..	226
<i>Cowell</i> —			
On the drawbacks of the Supreme Court	40		
On the position of the G.G. in legislation	235		

Page.	Pages
On the Council Act of 1892 .. 236	On land revenue policy of
On leave of absence Bill .. 336	John Briggs 117
On India's extension of foreign relations 380	<i>Duke, Sir William</i> —
Frontier Policy .. 385-86	On Parliamentary Commission 371
Educational Policy .. 429-31	<i>Dutt—R. C.</i> —
On the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge. 436	On Pre. British Revenue Administration of Bengal 16
On Technical Education. 442	On the failure of Warren Hastings.. 20
His Resolution on Land Revenue Policy .. 444	On the treaty of Bassein.. 63
<i>Dadabhoi Nowroji</i> —	On the Perm. Settlement of Bengal 104
Agitates for the employment of Indians . 231-32	On the great administrators of the period 1800-32 150
<i>Dalal—Sir D.</i> —	On Permanent Settlement. 444
High Commissioner .. 366	E
<i>Dalhousie—Lord</i> —	<i>Elgin—Lord</i> —
His annexation of Punjab. 80	On official discipline of voting 241-42
—Other annexations .. 82-4	<i>Elphinstone—mountstuart</i> —
—as an administrator 150-54	Land Settlt. of Bombay 110-11
—Proposes change in the ex. Council 177	His Educational Policy .. 138
—differentiates between ex. and legislative council . 233	On Village Communities.. 244
<i>Decentralization Commission</i> —	—His work .. 249-50
On the working of the ex. council 180-81	<i>Esher Committee</i> 388
Control of Central Government over pro. Govts. 206-207	F
Its report 218	<i>Feeham Mr.</i> —
<i>Derby—Lord</i> —	On transfer of Land Revenue 444
On the position of the Council of the S of S .. 161	<i>Firminger</i> —
<i>Dickinson—John</i> —	On Revenue Adm. under Moghuls 15-16
On the Rule of the Board of Control .. 48-52	On Hastings as the founder of Calcutta 19
	On the Regulating Act 31-32

Page.	Page.
On the Supreme Court .. 39	On amendment to the Constitution .. 375
On the conflict between Supreme Court and Sadr. courts .. 40-41	On communal representation in Public Services.. 405
Fox—C. J.—	On the appointment of the Lee Commission .. 407
His India Bill .. 42-43	Hammond—
Frontier—	<i>Electioneering in India</i> .. 288
Its extension .. 72-73	Hardinge, Lord—
G	
George, Mr. Lloyd—	On meetings of the Ex. Council .. 34
His "Steel frame" speech. 40	Makes Settlements permanent .. 221
Gokhale—G. K.—	His Resolution on Local Self Government .. 229
On the position of Collectors .. 210-11	Harris, Lord—
On Bureaucracy .. 216-17	On Leave of Absence Bill . 336
Member, Public Service Commission .. 232	Hastings,—Lord—
On the progressive character of British Govt... 243	His policy of Intervention .. 69-72
His Scheme of Political Reforms .. 249	Hastings—Warren—
Recommends inquiry into Taxation .. 262	His foreign policy.. 14
Favours abolition of India Council .. 367	Land Revenue Policy 18-20
On University reform of 1904 .. 433-34	Judicial Reforms .. 21-23
H	
Hailey—Sir, Wm.—	Difficulties under Regulating Act .. 33-41
On the difference between the Comm. on Public Accounts and Standing Finance Committee .. 353	Horne—
	On the gestation of Reforms .. 248
	Houghton, Bernard—
	On the position of Collectors .. 210
	On the role of Bureaucracy .. 213-14
	Hunter, Sir William—
	On the Joint Stock formation of the E. I. Co. .. 25

INDEX

v

Page.

On the position of the Co. after the Revolution ..	26
On the battle of Chilian-wala	81
On the working of the Ex. Council	179
President, Edn. Com. of 1880	429
Hutton—	
On Wellesley's policy of annexing Oudh ..	66

I

Ibert—Sir Courtney—	
On the position of the Co. after the Revolution ..	27
On the constitutional position of the N. States ..	87
Favours retention of the Council of India ..	367
On the transfer of the salary of the S. of S. ..	369
On the transitional Nature of the Ind. Const. ..	371
On the elasticity of the Act of 1919. ..	376-77
—Bill	451-52

Inchcape Committee—

On reorganization of Departments in Central Government	334
On Military Expenditure	391-92
On Railway Policy	398-99
Industrial Commission—	400
Innes, Sir Ch. A.—	
On Indian Ry. Policy ..	397
On Indian fiscal Policy ..	402

Page.

Islington, Lord—	
Public Service Com.] ..	232

J

Jamnadas Dwarkadas—Mr.	
Moves Resolution on Indian fiscal Policy ..	402
Job Charnock—	
Established Calcutta ..	?
Joint Parliamentary Committee—	
On Provincial redistribu-tion	254
On the allocation of In- come-Tax	261
On Disputable matters of representation ..	279-285
On the franchise Scheme..	288
On female suffrage ..	289
On Presidency of Council ..	293
On Pro. Executive ..	302
On the working of Dyarchy ..	305-06
On allocation of funds ..	310-11
On the use of certification. power	315
Rejects Grand Committee procedure ..	316-17
On the relation of Governor with Ministers	320-22
On the duties of Governor with regard to Services	324-25
On control over provincial expenditure ..	327-28
—Over Pro. Adm. ..	329-31
On responsibility in Central Government ..	332-33

INDEX

Page.	Page.
On the strength of the Ex. C. of the G. G. 335	<i>Lawrence—Henry & John—</i> Land Settlement in Punjab 120
On the Presidency of the L. Assembly 345	<i>Lawrence, Lord—</i> His policy of Masterly In- activity 382
On the powers of the G. G. re-legislation 353	<i>Lee Commission</i> 325
On relaxation of control.. 365	Opposed by Assembly .. 358
Favours retention of Co. of S. of S. 367	Its Report .. 408-20
On Fiscal Policy .. 400-01	
On land revenue policy 445-46	
K	
<i>Kale, Hon. Prof. V. G.—</i> Member, Tariff Board .. 403	<i>Lee-Warner, Sir William—</i> On the policy toward Pun- jab 80
<i>Kaye—John W.</i> On early judicial adm. of the Co. 21	On the Doctrine of Lapse .. 83
On the rule of the Board of Control .. 51-52	On the development of re- lations with N. States.. 84
On finance of the E. I. Co.96-98	On Dalhousie's Policy 153-54
On Public Works of E. I. Co. 99-101	<i>Lucknow Compact</i> .. 279-80
On Mahalwari Settle- ment 109-110	<i>Lyall, Sir Alfred—</i>
On Settlement in U. P. .. 115	On Anglo Dutch Rivalry .. 4
On Bentinck as reformer.. 128	On the causes of the French failure 6
On judicial courts in 1832- 128	On English factories .. 8
On the Regulations of Corn- wallis 135	On the condition of Bengal after the departure of Clive 10
<i>Kimberley Clause</i> 237	On Clive's foreign policy.. 13
L	
<i>Lansdowne, Lord—</i> Frontier Policy 385	On the advantage of the Charter Company .. 24
	On the Reg. Act 35
	On the work of W. Has- tings 38
	On the results of the Reg. Act 42
	On the army of the Co. .. 60
	On the adoption of Western Methods by Marathas 62-63
	On Wellesley's annexations 67

Page.

On the significance of missions to Kabul &c. ..	76
<i>Lytton, Lord</i> (First)— His Frontier Policy ..	384
<i>Lytton, Lord</i> (Second)— His Committee on Indian Education	359

M

Macaulay, Lord—

On the political character of the E. I. Co. ..	27-28
On the reform of Indian law in 1833	131
On codification of law ..	135
First law Member ..	135
Advocates Western Education	137
On the employment of Indians in Pub. Services ..	141
On lack of Parliamentary interest in India ..	159

MacDonald, Ramsay—Mr.

On lack of Parliamentary interest in India ..	164
On Functions of Viceroy ..	175
Member, Pub. Ser. Com. ..	232
On Change in India ..	248

Mahadji Scindia—

His army	59-61
----------------	-------

Malcolm, Sir John—

In Central India ..	70-71
On the value of Native States	86-87
On the Permanent Settlement	105

Page.

<i>Mayo, Lord</i> — Protest against legislative control of S. of S. ..	167
" " ..	173
Financial Settlement ..	203
" " ..	219
On local self Government. ..	223
His Frontier Policy ..	383
<i>M. C. Report</i> — On the position of N. States ..	90-91
On nature of Parliamentary Control ..	163
On lack of Parliamentary interest in India ..	164
On the Supremacy of Parliament ..	167-68
On the political divisions of India	195-97
On Islington Commission. ..	233
On <i>Four. Fourmulae of Devolution</i> ..	252-53
On the constitution of the new Councils	271
On Indian electorates ..	278
On the disadvantages of communal Repr. ..	280-81
On the division of functions	302
On Grand Committees ..	316
On Indian Legislature ..	337-38
On Indianization ..	403-04
<i>Meston, Lord</i> — His Committee on Financial Relations ..	258-61
On Joint vs. Separate Purse	308-09

INDEX

Page.	Page.
On Tendencies in Indian legislature .. 360-61	makes Cal. Un. a teach- ing University. .. 438
<i>Metcalfe, Sir Charles</i> —	<i>Muir, Prof. Ramsay</i> —
↳ On Village communities.. 145	On the policy of annexing Sind .. 79
<i>Meyer, Sir Wm</i> —	On the Reforming Move- ment of 1832 .. 142
↳ First High Commissioner . 366	<i>Munro, Sir Thomas</i> —
<i>Mill, John Stuart</i> —	On Subsidiary Alliances.. 58
His influence on land policy in India 116	Opposes annexations of Native States 86
On land Settlement in Pun- jab 120	His Madras Settlement 107-08
Petition of the E. I. Co. 157-58	His Educational policy .. 139
<i>Minto, Lord</i> (First)—	His work 147-49
His missions 75	
Presses for Perm. Settl. .. 114	
<i>Minto, Lord</i> (Second)—	N
His Reforms .. 238-47	
On the method of represen- tation 243	<i>Nair, Sir Shankaran</i> —
<i>Montagu, Mr. E. S.</i> —	On the advantage of Joint Purse 312
His Announcement .. 250	On land revenue policy 445
On the Principle of Resp. Government 300	<i>Napier, Sir Charles</i> —
On pressure of time in Par- liament 376	His policy of annexing Sind 78-79
“Montford” Report .. 250	
<i>Morley, Lord</i> —	<i>Nehru, Pandit Motilal</i> —
On the Charter Act of 1833 130	On the present consti- tution 371
—Minto Reforms .. 238-47	On amendment of Consti- tution 373
Repudiates Parliamentary Government for India .. 271	<i>Northbrook, Lord</i> —
<i>Muddiman, Sir A.</i> —	Protests against Tariff du- ties imposed by S. of S. 168
Chairman, Reforms Com. 375	“ ” 174
—Committee on Codification 447	His resignation 175
<i>Mukerji, Sir Ashutosh</i> —	Kimberley clause due to him 237
Member, Cal. Un. Com. .. 435	His Frontier Policy .. 383

INDEX

fx

Page.

Page.

O,

O'Donnell Circular— 406

P

Palmerston, Lord—

On the defects of Double Government 159

Paranjpye, Dr. R. P.—

Proportional Representation 285

Member, Committee on Territorial Force .. 390

Compulsory Primary Education in Bombay .. 441

Peel, Lord—

His Reform Despatch .. 372

Purshottamdas Thakurdas, Sir—

Member, Inch. Com. .. 391

.. Acworth Com. .. 397

R

Rahim, Justice Abdur—

Member, Pub. Serv. Com. 233

Rahimatoola, Sir Ibrahim—

President Fiscal Com. .. 401

Raleigh, Sir Thomas—

On Curzon's Military Policy 179

On the effects of higher education 430

President, Uni. Commission of 1902-4 .. 431

Reading Lord—

Inaugural Address to University repr. .. 439

Ripon, Lord—

His financial Settlement.. 220

His local Self-Government Policy 224-25

His Frontier Policy .. 384

Roberts, Prof. P. E.—

On Anglo Dutch Rivalry 2

On the foundation of Calcutta 4

On life in an English factory 7

Rushbrooke Williams, Prof.—

His annual Reports .. 379

On Publication of the O'Donnell Circular .. 406

On Communal spirit in local Self-Govt. .. 426

Sadler, Sir Michael—

President, Calcutta University Com. 435

S

Salisbury, Lord—

Views on the power of the S: of S. 174

Samarth, Mr. N. M.—

Member, Lee Com. .. 408

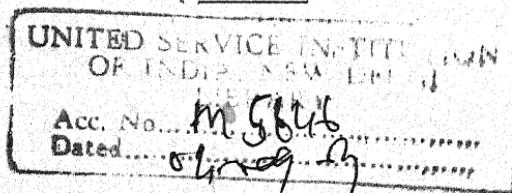
Sapru Sir Tej. B.—

President, Racial Discrimination Committee .. 450

Seton-Karr, Mr.—

On Permanent Settlement of Cornwallis 104

Page.	Page.
<i>Shastri, Rt. Hon. V. S.</i>	
Member, Acworth Com. 397	
On Indian appointments to	
Secretariat 404	
<i>Shore, Sir John—</i>	
On the Bengal famine of	
1770 30	
On Permanent Settlement 103	
—extends it to Benares .. 113	
<i>Sirachey, Sir J.—</i>	
His views on the working	
of the Ex. Council 188-89	
On Financial Centraliza-	
tion 218	
His Settlement .. 219-20	
<i>Swarajist Party—</i>	
Tactics in Council.. .. 315	
Refuses to form Ministry. 321	
Opposes ministers.. .. 322	
" 373	
T	
<i>Thakore, Prof. B. K.—</i>	
On the work of Morley .. 217	
On the Council Act of 1861 235	
<i>Thomason—</i>	
His Directions for Settle-	
ment officers 118	
<i>Torrens—</i>	
On the dangers of subsidia-	
ry alliances 57-58	
On the policy of <i>Nana Fas-</i>	
navis 61	
	V
	<i>Visvasvariyya, Sir M.—</i>
	His <i>Reconstructing India</i> —379
	W
	<i>Wellesley, Marquess—</i>
	His Policy 54-55
	Subsidiary alliances 55-58
	—and the Marathas 59-63
	—and the Peshwa 63-65
	—and other N. Powers 65-67
	—on the training of Co.'s
	Servants 141
	" 143
	<i>Whyte, Sir Alex.—</i>
	President, Legis. Assembly 345
	On the interpretation of
	§ 67 B. 355-56
	<i>Wood, Sir Charles—</i>
	On the Councils of 1853.. 234
	<i>Woodward, Prof.—</i>
	Description of an English
	factory 7
	On the Joint Stock forma-
	tion of the E. I. Co. .. 24





United Service Institution of India

Library

ISSUE SLIP

Class No. 354-54 Book No. SAP

Accession No. m5646

~~Act 5~~

3384



United Service Institution of India
Library

Acc. No. M 5646

Class No. 354.54 Book No. SAP

Author Saboo, B.S.

Title The Growth of Indian Consul
~~ation and Administration~~

USI - Library



M03384



United Service Institution of India
Library

- * Books drawn by a member can be retained for one month and renewed once, provided no other member requires them.
- * New books must be returned within two weeks.
- * Not more than two books may be on loan at the same time.
- * Members are prohibited from transferring books to other members.
- * Members will be required to pay full price with penalty of any book lost or damaged by them.
- * Reference and Rare books are not allowed to be taken out of the Library.
- * Books are liable to be recalled when in special request.